



Gc  
942.0006  
C14p  
New ser.  
no.49  
1713399

M. L

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION



Allen County Public Library



3 1833 00729 1336



Camden Society. London

Publications  
New Series v. 49

THE CLARKE PAPERS.

V. I

SELECTIONS FROM THE PAPERS OF WILLIAM CLARKE.

*Secretary to the Council of the Army, 1647-1649, and to General  
Menck and the Commanders of the Army in Scotland, 1651-1660.*

EDITED BY C. H. FIRTH.

VOLUME I.



PRINTED FOR THE CAMDEN SOCIETY.

M.DCCC.XCI.



1713399



WESTMINSTER:  
PRINTED BY NICHOLS AND SONS,  
25, PARLIAMENT STREET.

20/50  
20

[NEW SERIES XLIX.]



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2014

<https://archive.org/details/publications4911camd>

The COUNCIL of the CAMDEN SOCIETY desire it to be understood that they are not answerable for any opinions or observations that may appear in the Society's publications; the Editors of the several Works being alone responsible for the same.





## PREFACE.

---

THE collection from which the papers printed in this volume are selected was bequeathed to Worcester College, Oxford, in 1736. Their donor, Dr. George Clarke, a great benefactor of that college and of the University, was Judge Advocate-General from 1684 to 1705, and Secretary at War from 1692 to 1704. His father, Sir William Clarke, was the original owner of these papers. Lives of both father and son are given in the *Dictionary of National Biography* (vol. x. pp. 424, 448). An account of the papers themselves is contained in Mr. Coxe's *Catalogue of Manuscripts in the possession of Oxford Halls and Colleges*, 1852, vol. ii. It is strange that no historian has hitherto thought fit to make use of them. My own attention was first called to the collection by the librarian of Worcester College, H. A. Pottinger, Esq., to whom and to the authorities of the college the thanks of the Camden Society are due for their kindness in facilitating the use of these papers, and the permission to publish them. Since the papers were inspected by Mr. Coxe, Mr. Pottinger has discovered some additional volumes, including the most valuable of all, that containing the debates of the Council of the Army in 1647.

William Clarke, who was probably born about 1623, was admitted a student of the Inner Temple in 1645. When the New Model was organised, John Rushworth was appointed Secretary to the General and Council of War, with William Clarke and another assistant as subordinates. Clarke acted as secretary to the commissioners who negotiated the surrender of Oxford in June, 1646, and to those who



tried to arrange terms between the Parliament and the Army in July, 1647 (Sprigge, *Anglia Rediviva*, ed. 1854, p. 258; Rushworth, vi. 606). He seems to have taken part in the invasion of Scotland in July, 1650,<sup>a</sup> and from the autumn of 1651 to the Restoration was Secretary to the Army of Occupation in Scotland. From 1654 that army was under the command of Monck, and Clarke laid the foundation of his subsequent fortunes by gaining the confidence of his commander. Edward Phillips, in the narrative of the Restoration which he added to Baker's Chronicle, describes the attempts of Monck's opponents to win over Clarke.

"He also writ to Mr. Clarke, the General's Secretary, who was an active useful Instrument in his affairs, to seduce him from his Service; the truth is, the greatest part of Clarke's Estate was in England, and he was a man of so civil and ingenious a Conversation that he might have been the better excused in a Neutrality to both Parties, and his Interest did direct him to it. But he was resolved to hazard all his Fortunes in the General's Bottom, and would not by threats or cunning, which were both used by Lilburn to him, be prevailed with to quit his Party. For which his fidelity and constancy, at this time, he was ever after so much esteemed by the General, that he trusted him with his most secret transactions."—Ed. 1670, p. 688.

Not long after the Restoration Clarke was knighted and, on 28th January, 1661, appointed Secretary at War (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1660-1, p. 490). Sir William Coventry described him to Pepys as one of the "sorry instruments" by whom Monck was lucky enough to effect great things (Pepys' Diary, 12th July, 1666). Clarke accompanied Monck to sea in 1666, and was mortally wounded in the battle with the Dutch off Harwich, 2nd June, 1666. He was buried in the chancel of Harwich Church, where an elaborate tablet to his memory was erected by his widow. Monck, in commending her and his child to the favour of the King, wrote

<sup>a</sup> Some of his letters from Scotland are amongst the *Tanner MSS.* in the Bodleian. Cary prints Clarke's accounts of the captures of Stirling and Dundee (*Memorials of the Civil War*, ii. 327, 367). In August, 1651, he asked for the post of Keeper of the Scotch Records (*ibid.* p. 332). Other letters of his are printed in the newspapers. See also *Old Parliamentary History*, xx. 28, 56.



of Clarke that in him he had lost "a faithful and indefatigable servant," and that he could not express "too much kindness to his memory" (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1665-6, p. 471). Clarke had married Dorothy, daughter and coheirress of Thomas Hyliard, of Hampshire, and Elizabeth Kympton.<sup>a</sup> A letter from Sir Thomas Clarges to her on her husband's death is preserved in the British Museum.<sup>b</sup>

"MADAM,

"I am so afflicted for the losse of my deare friend Sir William Clerk that I have more need to receive consolation from others then to give it. But I cannot omitt writinge to your Ladyship to desire and beseech you since this fatall stroke cannot be recalled that your Ladyship will have so much respect to that sweete pledge of both your loves, as for his sake to moderate your grief, that your health be not impaired by it."

The widow took the advice, married again in the same year, and lived till 1695. Her second husband, Samuel Barrow, who had been chief physician to the Army in Scotland, became at the Restoration physician in ordinary to the King, and Advocate-General of the Army.

The special value of the Clarke Papers consists in the light which they throw upon the history of the Army during the period when its political importance was greatest. By their assistance we can follow more closely the history of the quarrel between the Parliament and the Army, and appreciate with more exactness than before the causes of the revolutions of 1647 and 1648. The newsletters reveal the state of feeling in London and in the Army as the

\* By this marriage Clarke became in some way connected with Gilbert Mabbott, another of Rushworth's assistants, whose numerous letters in this correspondence testify to their familiarity. Mabbott's son was named Kympton Mabbott.

<sup>b</sup> *Egerton MS.*, 2618, f. 125. The letter is dated from on board the "Royall Charles," 8th June, 1666. This volume contains other papers belonging to the collections of Sir William Clarke, including the key to a numerical cypher, dated Sept. 1656 (f. 49). Clarke's diary relating to the events of his last service at sea, April 23—June 1, 1666, is also in the British Museum, *Additional MS.*, 14286.



quarrel progressed. The correspondence of the Agitators shows how the revolt in the Army began and by what means it was carried out. The debates of the Council of the Army illustrate in the most striking manner the political views of the soldiers, the dissensions which arose amongst them, and the character of the Army leaders. They elucidate more than one dark passage in Cromwell's political career, and justify the high estimation of Ireton's ability expressed by his contemporaries.

In February and March, 1647, Parliament passed a series of votes for the disbanding of the Army. They also determined that a body of 3,000 horse, 1,200 dragoons, and 8,400 foot, to be drawn from the army of Sir Thomas Fairfax, should be employed for the reconquest of Ireland. An army consisting of 5,400 horse and 1,000 dragoons, together with about 10,000 foot for garrison service, was to be maintained in England. The terms on which the disbanding was to take place were calculated to rouse legitimate discontent. The soldiers were to receive a very small portion of the pay due to them, and they were offered very insufficient securities for their large arrears of pay. They were promised an Act of Indemnity for acts done in pursuance of the orders of their commanders during the war, but that Act when passed was regarded by them as insufficient for their protection. Finally, it was evident that the disbanding would be followed by severe measures for the enforcement of Presbyterian orthodoxy and the punishment of sectaries. As the policy of Holles and the Presbyterian leaders developed itself, protests against it multiplied both from the Army itself and from the Independents outside the Army. But all petitions against that policy were suppressed, and the petitioners sometimes punished (pp. 2, 26, 92).

About March 21, 1647, a petition was circulated amongst the officers setting forth their objections to the proposed scheme for disbanding.

1. "First, whereas the necessity and exigence of the War, hath put us upon many actions, which the Law would not warrant, nor we have acted in a time of settled





peace ; we humbly desire, that before our disbanding, a full and sufficient provision may be made by Ordinance of Parliament (to which the Royall assent may be desired) for our indemnity and security in all such cases.

2. "That Auditors or Commissioners may be speedily appointed and authorised to repaire to the headquarters of this Army, to audite and state our accompts, as well for all former services as for our services in this Army ; and that before the disbanding of the Army, satisfaction may be given to the Petitioners for their arreares, that so the charge, trouble, and loss of time, which we must otherwise necessarily undergoe in attendance for the obtaining of them may be prevented. . . .

3. "That those who have voluntarily served the Parliament in the late Warrs may not hereafter be compelled by press or otherwise to serve as souldiers out of this Kingdome. Nor those who have served as horsemen may be compelled by press to serve on Foot, in any future case.

4. "That such in this Army as have lost their limbs, and the wives and children of such as have been slain in the service, and such officers or scouldiers as have sustained losses, or have been prejudiced in their estates, by adhering to the Parliament ; or in their persons by sickness or imprisonment under the Enemy, may have such allowances and satisfaction, as may be agreeable to Justice and equity.

5. "That till the Army be disbanded as aforesaid, some course may be taken for the supply thereof with moneys, whereby we may be enabled to discharge our quarters, that so we may not for necessary food be beholden to the Parliament's Enemies, burthensome to their friends, or oppressive to the Country, whose preservation we have always endeavoured, and in whose happiness we should still rejoice."

Moderate though these demands were, Fairfax was directed at once to put a stop to any further proceeding in that petition, and to send up Lieutenant-General Hammond, Colonel Robert Hammond, Colonel Lilburn, Colonel Pride, and Lieutenant-Colonel Grime, who were concerned in promoting it, to answer for their conduct at the bar of the House of Commons (pp. 1-4, *Book of Army Declarations*, 1647, pp. 1-5). On March 30, the House of Commons passed a declaration, condemning the petition as tending to put the Army into a distemper and mutiny, and declaring that those who continued to promote it should be proceeded against as enemies to the State and disturbers of the public peace.

On April 15, six parliamentary commissioners were sent to Saffron Walden to confer with Fairfax and his officers on the



engagement of the body of soldiers destined for the service of Ireland. A full narrative of their proceedings is given on pp. 5-15. The result of their mission showed a general unwillingness in both officers and soldiers to engage upon the terms offered. The officers in general maintained a somewhat neutral attitude, declining emphatically to engage themselves, but promising to promote and not to hinder the engagement of their soldiers (p. 7). A few of the higher officers undertook to go in person, but in more than one regiment soldiers refused to follow the example of their commanders, and mutinied when they were drawn out to march (pp. 12-15).

Left to themselves by the indecision of their officers, the soldiers began to act without them. In a paper entitled *An apology of all the private soldiers in Sir Thomas Fairfax his army to their commission officers*, they stated their grievances and called on their officers to stand by them for the redress of these wrongs.

"The Lord put a spirit of courage into your hearts that you may stand fast in your integrity that you have manifested to us your soldiers; and we do declare to you that if any of you shall not, he shall be marked with a brand of infamy for ever, as a traitor to his country and an enemy to this Armie. . . . We have been quiet and peaceable in obeying all orders and commands, yet now we have just cause to tell you, if we be not relieved in these our grievances, wee shall be forced to that, which we pray God to divert, and keep your and our hearts upright."\*

A somewhat similar letter was at the same time addressed to Fairfax, Cromwell, and Skippon, which Skippon, on April 30, delivered to the House of Commons (Rushworth, vi. 474). It was signed by the representatives of eight regiments of horse and presented by three troopers. At the command of the House the three troopers were called in and examined; their answers are printed in Appendix B. on pp. 430, 431. The letter itself is printed, from the copy addressed to Skippon, in Cary's *Memorials*

\* *Book of Army Declarations*, pp. 9-11. Compare the comments on page 15 of these papers.



of the *Civil War*, i. 201, and in the *Lords Journals*, ix. 164; other versions, with slight verbal variations, are to be found in Prynne's *The Hypocrites Unmasking*, 1647, and in the *Book of Army Declarations*, p. 9.

The immediate result of this letter was an order sending Skippon, Cromwell, Ireton, and Fleetwood to Saffron Walden to acquaint the soldiers with the votes of the House respecting their pay and indemnity, and to examine into the origin of the letter from the eight regiments (see pp. 20, 21, 33). A narrative of the proceedings of the commissioners is printed on pp. 27-31, and reports of the debates which took place between them and the officers on May 15, 16, follow on pp. 33-44, 45-78. These reports were probably taken down by William Clarke at the time in shorthand, though apparently his notes were not transcribed at length till 1662 (p. 31). It is obvious that the author was not at the time a very skilful note-taker. There are frequent blanks in the report and it is often very confused. It is also probable that the person who finally transcribed the notes added to the confusion by mistaking the order of some of the pages. Nevertheless, with all its errors, the report gives an extremely valuable and interesting picture of a curious scene. The meetings in the church at Saffron Walden on May 15, 16, were attended by about 200 officers and a certain number of private soldiers, probably representatives sent by different regiments. Skippon presided, and one after another the chief officers gave an account of the temper of their respective regiments and their reception of the votes of Parliament. Each regiment made a return of its grievances, and (by consent of the great majority of the officers) Lambert and others were appointed to collect from these regimental returns a summary of the common grievances of the whole army, to be presented to the commissioners and transmitted to Parliament (pp. 36, 42, 97). Over these returns a number of disputes took place. More than once varying returns were presented by different officers for the same regiment. Lieutenant-Colonel Jackson and Captain White quarrelled violently over the



account presented from Fairfax's own foot regiment (pp. 53, 57). There were disputes also as to the regiments of Colonel Graves and Sir Hardress Waller (pp. 56, 59-62). Colonel Sheffield, as the spokesman of the minority willing to accept the terms offered by Parliament, objected to the presence of private soldiers, and fell foul of Colonel Hammond and Colonel Whalley (pp. 40, 65, 77, 85). Skippon had the greatest difficulty in maintaining order. More than once he urged the officers "to hear one another with sobriety," to "forbear acclamations," to "speak with moderation or else be silent." "God knows it is a very great pressure to my spirit to hear and observe such clashings and jarrings amongst you, I am sure there can no good come of it" (pp. 48, 49, 58, 77).

It was finally proposed that two of the commissioners should go up to London to represent the desires of the Army to Parliament, and remove any misrepresentations which might be made of the action of the officers (p. 76). In accordance with this desire, and in obedience to a similar order from Parliament, Cromwell and Fleetwood were sent up to London with an elaborate report signed by all four commissioners (pp. 94-99). Cromwell presented this report to the House of Commons on May 21, expressing his belief that the soldiers would disband when ordered, but would certainly not engage to go to Ireland (p. 99). The House replied by some minor concessions to the demands of the soldiers, but made no further addition to the eight weeks' pay before promised. On May 25 a series of votes were passed fixing the dates and places at which the different regiments were to be disbanded. Cromwell and Fleetwood remained in London for the rest of the month. Fairfax, whose stay in London had caused injurious comment, was ordered down to the Army (pp. 11, 85, 93, 101). He arrived at Saffron Walden on May 20, and removed his head-quarters to Bury on May 25. Immediately on his arrival he issued a letter to the commanders of the several regiments, informing them that they were to give notice to their soldiers, that the grievances of the Army





had been presented to the House of Commons, and were taken into consideration by them. "I do therefore require the souldiers to forbear any further actings by them selves without their officers in any irregular ways, and all officers are strictly to see to it in their several charges, that there be no more such meetings or consultations of souldiers at Bury or elsewhere" (Rushworth, vi. 495). It was too late, however, for such an order to produce obedience. Already the soldiers had formed an organised council of representatives and agreed on their plan of action.

In their report the four commissioners had stated that in their opinion "the officers thus joyning with the soldiers againe in a regular way to make knowne and give vent to their greivances, hath contributed much to allay precedent distempers, to bring off the souldiers from their late wayes of correspondencie and actings among themselves, and to reduce them again to a right order and regard to their officers in what they do" (p. 99). This view was too sanguine. Concerted action amongst the soldiers seems to have begun towards the end of April, 1647, when representatives of eight regiments of horse drew up the letter to Fairfax, Cromwell, and Skippon. In their examination the three troopers said that the letter "was drawn up first at a rendezvous of several of those regiments, and afterwards they had several meetings about it by agents from each regiment in several places" (Rushworth, vi. 474, *cf.* pp. 21, 33). One consequence of the mission of the four officers to Saffron Walden in May was the introduction of a similar organisation amongst the foot regiments. One or two soldiers were chosen from each troop or company to draw up and present their statements of grievances (pp. 66, 96). "The committee of troopers met at St. Edmundsbury, and the foot, who chose two out of every company, sent them to confer with the troopers, and every foot soldier gave fourpence a piece towards defraying of the charges of that meeting" (Rushworth, vi. 485). Throughout the Agitators of the horse regiments continued to take the lead, sending letters to other regiments, and writing to the Army of the northern association to persuade it to stand



by the new model (pp. 88, 89). The Agitators were in constant communication with London and received news of all the votes of Parliament directly they were passed. A remarkable paper entitled *Advertisements for the managing of the Councells of the Army* (p. 22), possibly from the pen of Sexby, sketches out the line of conduct which they adopted. The news of the votes of May 18 for the disbanding of the Army precipitated open mutiny. "Believe it, my deare fellowes, wee must now be very active to send to all our severall regiments of Horse and Foote and let them knowe that nothing but destruction is threatened. Loving friends, be active, for all lies at stake" (pp. 85, 86). In reply to this exhortation from one of their correspondents in London the Agitators at Bury issued a circular letter urging their regiments to resist disbanding. "Resolve neither to take monie nor march one from another, but lett all your actions be joyn'd. And if any orders should come to your particular regiments to march from the rest of the Army, march not while you have consulted with the rest of the Army" (p. 87). The General was to be petitioned in the name of the soldiers "to have him, in honour, justice, and honestie, to stand by you." Skippon "and all other officers that are not right" were to be told to leave the Army (p. 100). A printing press was to be got into the Army in order to set forth the wrongs of the soldiers and to disabuse the people of their prejudices against them (pp. 22, 86). The counties were to be stirred up to petition for their rights, and to appeal to the Army to assert them (p. 101). The magazine and artillery train at Oxford, which the Parliament intended to remove to London, were to be seized by a party of 1,000 horse (pp. 105, 114). When the commissioners of the Parliament came to pay off the General's regiment of foot, which was to be the first disbanded, they and the £7,000 they brought with them were to be seized on the way (pp. 106, 107).

The question whether this plan of action was inspired by the officers, or to what extent the officers were cognisant of it, is of some interest. The three troopers who brought the letter of the eight



regiments of horse, "being demanded whether any of their officers were engaged in it . . . answered that they thought very few of them knew or took notice of it" (Rushworth, vi., 474). A number of officers were active in framing petitions to Parliament against the proposed terms of disbandment, and some sought to procure the support of the soldiers to these petitions (pp. 2, 25, 45). Now and then one would exhort his soldiers to "stand for their liberties" and refuse to engage for Ireland, but most of them, whilst refusing to engage themselves, made no attempt to prevent their men from enlisting (pp. 7, 56). With the exception of two or three subalterns (such as, perhaps, Lieutenant Chillenden,<sup>a</sup> and certainly Cornet Joyce) none of the officers seem to have been implicated in the bolder schemes for active resistance to disbanding set on foot by Sexby and the Agitators. Sexby was perfectly able to conceive such a scheme unaided, and there were many other men of ability amongst the Agitators. Colonel Wogan attributes great importance to the action of Captain John Reynolds, but confuses the events of May with those of June, and draws liberally on his imagination to supply the defects of his memory (pp. 421-429).

The question of the part played by Cromwell and Ireton with respect to this movement in the Army is of more importance. The theory of Cromwell's opponents is that he first, by his false protestations that the Army should disband whensoever they should be commanded, induced the Parliament to pass the disbanding votes, and then, by means of the Agitators, induced the Army to refuse to disband. This is the theory set forth by Colonel Wogan (pp. 425-427). It is also the theory of Clement Walker, who says, speaking of the disbanding ordinance—

\* "To the passing of this Ordinance, Cromwell's protestations in the House with his hand upon his breast, 'In the presence of almighty God, before whom he stood, that he knew the Army would disband and lay down their arms at their doore, whensoever they should command them,' conduced much: this was maliciously done of Cromwell to set the Army at a greater distance with the Presbyterian party and to bring

<sup>a</sup> Pages 85, 100, 105. References in the letters on pp. 83, 86 seem to show that some officers helped the Agitators with money.



them and the Independent party nearer together. . . . And at the same time when he made these protests in the House he had his Agitators (Spirits of his own and his son Ireton's conjuring up in the Army though since conjured down by them without requital) to animate them against the major part of the House . . . to ingage them against disbanding and going for Ireland . . . and to insist upon many other high demands, some private as souldiers, some publique as statesmen." (*History of Independency*, ed. 1648, pt. i. p. 31.)

A similar theory is embodied in Butler's well-known verses—

"So Cromwell, with deep oaths and vows,  
Swore all the Commons out o' th' house,  
Vowed that the redecoats would disband  
Ay marry would they, at their command;  
And trolled them on, and swore and swore  
Till th' Army turned them out of door."\*

The first votes for disbanding were passed on February 18, 19, 23, 25, 26, and during the first week of March, 1647 (*Commons Journals*). A news letter of February 18, 1647, observes, "Cromwell is dangerously ill with an imposthume in his head, whereby his party is now the weaker in the House," so that he was probably not in the House when the original decision to disband was taken (*Clarendon MS.*, 2,439). His dissatisfaction with the policy of the Presbyterians was notorious, and he openly showed that he would have no hand in forwarding it. "Young Vane and Cromwell," says a news letter, "often forbear coming to the House," and Holles complains that Cromwell and his friends purposely absented themselves from the Committee of both Kingdoms (*Clarendon MS.*, 2,504; *Holles Memoirs*, § 79). He even thought of leaving England and taking service in Germany under the Elector Palatine (Gardener, *Great Civil War*, iii. 36). Twice indeed, once apparently in March, and again on May 21, he did profess his belief that the Army would disband when Parliament ordered them; but to suppose that this was done merely to encourage the policy of which he was the declared opponent requires clear and conclusive evidence. (Lilburn, *Jonah's Cry*, p. 4; *Clarendon MS.*, 2,520). All the evidence points another way.

\* *Hudibras*, pt. ii. canto ii.





These papers show the real origin of the movement which resulted in the election of the Agitators, and explain what Cromwell's attitude really was. He sympathised with the grievances of the soldiers, but urged them to accept the terms offered rather than cause a new war. He pressed the officers "to have a very great care to make the best use" they could of the votes of Parliament, and to employ their own influence with their men "to worke in them a good opinion of that authority that is over both us and them." He bade them remember that, "if that authority falls to nothing, nothing can follow but confusion" (p. 72). Ireton seems to have been equally desirous to mediate between the Army and the Parliament (p. 102). On this point the evidence afforded by these papers is confirmed by the testimony of their supposed accomplices, the Levellers and the Agitators.

"O Cromwell" wrote Lilburn on March 25, 1647, "I am informed this day by an officer out of the Army and by another knowing man yesterday, that came a purpose to me out of the Army, that you and your agents are like to dash in pieces the hopes of our outward preservation, their petition to the House, and will not suffer them to petition till they have laid down their arms, because, forsooth, you have engaged to the House they shall lay down their armes whenever they shall command them." (*Jonah's Cry out of the Whale's Belly*, 1647, p. 4).

In the autumn of 1647, when the Agitators fell out with Cromwell and Ireton, their backwardness at the commencement of the breach was made an argument against them.

"We hope it will be no discouragement unto you," wrote the Agitators to the soldiers, "though your Officers, yea, the greatest Officers, should apostatise from you; Its well known that the great Officers which now oppose, did as much oppose secretly when wee refused to disband according to the Parliament's Order; and at last they confessed the Providence of God was the more wonderfull, because those resolutions to stand for Freedom and justice began among the Souldiers only." (*A copy of a Letter sent by the Agents of Several Regiments*, 1647.)

Still more definite are the statements of John Wildman in the pamphlet against Cromwell and Ireton which he entitles *Putney Projects*.

"I shall not prejudice the singleness of Cromwell's or Ireton's hearts as to public good, in their first associating with the Army at Newmarket, but it's worth the



knowing that they both in private opposed those gallant endeavours of the Army for their country's freedom. Yea, their arguments against them were only prophesies of sad events ; confusion and ruin, said they, will be the portion of the actors in that design, they will never be able to accomplish their desires against such potent enemies. They were as clearly convinced, as if it had been written with a beam of the Sun, that an apostate party in Parliament (viz. Hollis his faction) did subject our laws and liberties to their inordinate wills and lusts, and exercised such tyranny, injustice, arbitrariness, and oppression, as the worst of arbitrary courts could never parallel. But to oppose a party of tyrants so powerful ; *hic labor hoc opus est*, there was a lion and a bear in the way. And lest mere suspicion of their compliance with the Army in any attempt to affront those insulting tyrants should be turned to their prejudice, they were willing, at least by their creatures, to suppress the soldiers first most innocent and modest petition. C. Rich sent several orders to some of his officers to prevent subscription of that petition. And the constant importunity and solicitation of many friends could not prevail with Cromwell to appear, until the danger of imprisonment forced him to fly to the Army (the day after their first rendezvous) for shelter. And then both he and Ireton joining with the Army, and assuming offices to themselves (acting without commissions and being outed by the self-denying Ordinance of Parliament, and the General having no power to make general officers) they were engaged in respect to their own safety to crush and overturn Hollis his domineering, tyrannical faction. And to that end their invasion of the people's freedom, their injustice and oppression, was painted in the most lively colours to the people's eyes, and petitions to the General against those obstructors of justice in parliament, drawn by Cromwell himself, were sent to some counties to subscribe, and then the most mellifluous enamouring promises were passed to petitioners of clearing and securing their rights and liberties, then the General engaged himself to them that what he wanted in expression of his devotion to their service should be supplied in action : and hereby their names were engraven in the peoples hearts for gallant patriots, and the most noble heroes of our age."

But though the officers might at first hold back the time came when they were forced to decide. When they undertook to collect, to summarise, and to represent to Parliament the grievances of the soldiers, they practically made their cause their own. Parliament strove to separate the privates from their officers, but in vain (pp. 84, 87). The Agitators summoned the soldiers to stick by their officers as their officers had stuck by them. "Stand with your officers, and one with another you need not fear. If you divide you destroy all" (p. 87).

When the Council of War met at St. Edmundsbury on May 29,



the Agitators of ten regiments of horse and six regiments of foot presented a petition to the General, begging him "to appoint a rendezvous speedily for the Army, and also to use your utmost endeavour it be not disbanded before our sad and pressing grievances be heard and fully redressed" (*Book of Army Declarations*, p. 16). By 84 votes to 7, the Council resolved that a general rendezvous should take place, and by 82 to 4 passed the remonstrance against disbanding which a small committee had drawn up (pp. 108-111). See *The Opinion and Humble Advice of the Councill of Warre convened at Bury St. Edmunds, 29 May, 1647. In relation to the Votes of Parliament communicated to us by your Excellency, and the desires of our advice thereon.* (*Book of Army Declarations*, p. 12.)

"The officers," writes an observer; "now owne the Souldiers and all that's done, and doe beginne to bestirre themselves. . . . It is incredible the Unitie of Officers and Souldiers" (p. 113).

The friends of Sir Thomas Fairfax urged him to leave the Army in case it decided to oppose the Parliament's commands (pp. 104, 122). He chose to adhere to the votes of the Council of War, and wrote to the Committee at Derby House to announce that he could not undertake to draw out the regiments under his command to be disbanded at the time appointed (p. 116). At the same time he sent the Parliament the resolutions of the Council of War, and entreated them that there might be "ways of love and composure thought upon." "I shall do my endeavours," he added, "though I am forced to yield something out of order, to keep the Army from disorder or worse inconveniences" (May 30; *Book of Army Declarations*, p. 12; Rushworth, vi. 497-499).

Whatever Fairfax might desire, the Army was fast passing beyond control. His own regiment of foot, which was to have been disbanded on June 1, was, as the Agitators had designed, the first to break out into open revolt (pp. 100, 106, 113).

The commissioners came to Chelmsford on the evening of Monday, May 31, escorted by three troops of horse to guard the money. When they arrived they found that about two hours before they



came the regiment had marched away towards Raine, on the way to the general rendezvous at Newmarket. Major Gooday, one of those officers of the regiment who remained faithful to the Parliament, had met his company on the march, and "demanding of them by what order they removed their quarters, they answered the horse caused them to remove; further expressing that they received orders from the Agitators" (Cary, *Memorials of the Civil War*, i. 220). Lieutenant-Colonel Jackson and Major Gooday reported that they had used their utmost endeavours to dispose the soldiers for the service of Ireland, and complained that some of their officers had refused to read the votes and declarations of Parliament to their companies (*Tanner MSS.*, lviii. p. 127). Next day Jackson and Gooday were sent after their men to endeavour to induce them to return.

The commissioners give the following account of the result:

"This day we sent Lieutenant-Colonel Jackson, Major Goodday, and Captain Heifeild to Raine, where we were informed that the souldiers of the Generall's foote Regiment had appointed a Rendezvous. There mett about a thousand. At the approach of the officers we sent thither, the souldyers cryed out, There comes our Enimies. When they were acquainted with the votes, declaracions, and ordinaunces of Parlement, they asked the officers, what doe you bringing your two-penny pamphlets to us? And afterwards they seized upon the wagons with what ammunicion was in them and the chirurgeons chests, and have carryed them away towards Halstead and Heueningham, where they quarter this night. To morrow they are to be at Sudberry and Lavenham; which is the quarter that is appointed them, by Gravenor, the quarter master Generall. By the way some of the souldiers have comitted very great outrages. At Braintry they broke open a man's house, and tooke away fiftie pounds. Upon complaint to the Lievtenant, they were apprehended, but those into whose enstodie they were put gave them their libertie againe. Some part of the money was restored, but they conveyd away at least foure and twentie pounds. There is one Captain White who is the most active man in this buisines, and issues out orders as if he were the Lievtenant Colonel. There went away with this Pegiment, as we are enformed, two Captains, and a Captain Lievtenant. Many of the souldyers having beene dealt withall, profess that money is the onely thing that they insist upon. And that 4 moneths pay would have given satisfaccion; but for the present, are carryed away together, as in a torrent. Some officers of thes Regiments, as we feare, have fully recruited their companies, under pretence, for the service of Ireland, but being listed, doe indispose them all they can





as by experience is evident. We now conceive our being here is altogether unprofitable in order to the service we are commanded downe upon. And therefore offer it to your Lordships, &c. consideration, whether it may not be convenient to require our returns.<sup>a</sup>

Of the objects of the Agitators three had now been gained. Fairfax and the officers had cast in their lot with the soldiers, a general rendezvous of the Army had been ordered to take place on June 5, and the disbanding of Fairfax's regiment had been prevented. It remained to secure the artillery train which had been left at Oxford on the surrender of that place in 1646. On May 31 the Derby House Committee had ordered the removal of the train and the magazine from Oxford to London (pp. 114, 117). Oxford was garrisoned by Colonel Richard Ingoldsby's regiment, which, though not represented amongst the Agitators who had signed the petition of May 29, was politically one of the most radical in the Army. The regiment was to have been disbanded at Woodstock on June 14, and money was sent down to pay them off. When too late the money was ordered back, but the soldiers mutinied and stopped the wagons which carried it. They were encouraged by the near neighbourhood of Colonel Rainborow's regiment, which, though ordered into Hampshire, and designed for the reduction of Jersey, had left its quarters, expelled its officers, and turned back to assist in the seizure of the magazine. Rainborow found his regiment on May 30 quartered about Abingdon, having thrown off any semblance of obedience.

"When I came," he writes, "I found most of my officers come up to the general quarters of the regiment, who all the time till then had not dared so much as to appear amongst them; but they had not been long in their quarters, ere the Major-serjeant was almost killed by his own soldiers; and his ensign, if he had not exceedingly well defended himself against another company, he had been cut all to pieces; but in defending himself he hath wounded divers of them, two whereof, I am confident, cannot possibly scape with life." (Cary, *Memorials of the Civil War*, i. 221.)

---

<sup>a</sup> *Tanner MSS.*, Iviii. f. 129. The Earl of Warwick, Sir Gilbert Gerard, and Sir Harbottle Grimston to the Derby House Committee, June 1, 1647.



To assist in the seizure of the magazine a body of 500 or possibly 1,000 troopers from different cavalry regiments, under the command of Cornet Joyce of Fairfax's regiment of horse, had been collected by the Agitators and despatched to Oxford (p. 106). After making all safe at Oxford, Joyce with some 500 men started north to Holdenby, in Northamptonshire, where the King was in keeping. The King's guards consisted of portions of the regiments of Colonel Graves and Sir Robert Pye, and a few dragoons, all under the command of Colonel Graves. Whilst their commanders supported the Parliament, the soldiers themselves were completely in sympathy with the rest of the Army (pp. 44, 59-62, 113). The Parliamentary leaders were well aware of the disaffection of the King's guard, and there had been rumours a month earlier that some of the foot regiments would "go for Holdenby" and fetch the King. Of the importance of retaining the custody of the King Holles and his friends were well aware, but they seem to have been anxious to come to an agreement with Charles first, and whilst they deliberated and negotiated the soldiers acted. They were discussing the removal of the King, and negotiating for the aid of a Scotch army, when the news came that Joyce, on the morning of June 3, had seized Holdenby and secured the King.

A despatch from Bellièvre to Mazarin,  $\frac{3}{13}$  June, 1647, gives the following account of the situation:

"Suyvant l'ancien usage d'Angleterre depuis dix jours nous deliberons sans rien conclure, cherchans les moyens d'empescher que le Roy de la Grande Bretagne tombe entre les mains de l'armée, puisqu'il n'a point d'assurance qu' elle veuille faire aucune chose à son advantage. D'une douzaine de propositions dont la moins bonne eust mieux valu que de ne rien faire il n'a pas esté possible de obliger ceux du Parlement qui estoient dans ce dessein à en executer aucune, et cependant nous apprenons par un homme qui vient d'arriver de la part des Commissionaires qui sont a Humby, à la verité sans avoir de leurs lettres, que la maison est investie par un party destaché de l'armée qui demande le dit Roy, et quoyque celui qui le garde resmoigne ne le vouloir pas remettre entre leurs mains, sans en avoir l'ordre du Parlement, il est à croire qu'il l'aura rendu, s'il est vrai qu'il soit pressé, n'estant pas en estat de resister aux forces qui environnent cette maison qui n'a pas ny fossez ny murailles qui la ferment."



On the plans of the Presbyterian leaders, Dr. Denton, a London physician, often very well informed on political movements, writes thus to Sir Ralph Verney, June 14, 1647:

"I have gathered many scraps and looked as far into the clouds as I can, and the result I make to myself is this (but I have only several collections for my grounds and those not very authentic) that the Scots and a Presbyterian party there of some members, not without the counsel of the Queen or some French party, had a design of carrying the King into Scotland, and to set him in the head of an army there, and to bring him up to London, and so to quell the Independent party; but, if I rightly guess, a false Presbyterian father betrayed them to his Independent son; and so the army to prevent them seized the King. Dunfermline is gone into France, sent it is thought to get the Prince into Scotland, and so to play the game the better by that means."<sup>a</sup>

In the fourth article of the charge of the Army against the Eleven Members it was asserted that Holles and others had invited the Scots to march into England, and had sent to the Queen in France, "advising her speedily to send the Prince into Scotland to march into this kingdom at the head of an Army."

The knowledge of these designs, and the desire to prevent their execution, decided Cromwell to cast in his lot with the Army. The possibility of the introduction of a foreign force to maintain the Presbyterian leaders in power, and restore the King to his throne without adequate security for religious or political liberties, demanded immediate action. Abandoning his vain attempt at mediation, he joined Fairfax and the Army in their opposition to the Parliament.

A letter written by a soldier in London, June 1, says:

"The greatest and newest newes is, our general hath declared his resolution to owne the Armie in this their just action, and hath sent for Lieut.-Gen. Cromwell downe to him. I heare he is going out of towne this day. The certainty of this I cannot averre but 'tis not very unlikely. I think before I can take another oppor-

---

<sup>a</sup> *Verney MSS.* This passage and the extract from Bellière were kindly communicated to me by Mr. Gardiner.



tunity I shall have matter of great moment to write to you. The Lord smile upon the Saints, and that will prove sufficient to astonish their enemies. The King's person is secured by o<sup>r</sup> armie or by some for it; this is not altogether unprobable tho' I doe a little question whether it be yet done. Very grent are the expectations of this daye's business."<sup>a</sup>

Cromwell seems to have left London on June 3, and to have joined Fairfax at Kenford, near Bury, on Friday, June 4, or more probably, on Saturday, June 5. On the 4th, Fairfax had received news of the seizure of the King by Joyce, and on Saturday morning he was informed that the King had been carried from Holdenby and was on his way to Newmarket.

The question to what extent Cromwell was responsible for the seizure of the King has been often discussed. John Harris, in a tract published in December, 1647, entitled *The Grand Designe*, definitely asserts that he was directly responsible:

"It was by some persons at L.-Gen. Cromwell's, he himself being present, upon Monday at night before Whitsunday 1647 [May 31] resolved, that for as much as it was probable that the said Hollis and his party had a determination privately to remove the King to some place of strength or else to set him in the head of another army; that therefore Cornet George Joyce should with as much speed and secrecy as might be repair to Oxford, to give instructions for the securing the garrison, magazine and traines therein, from the said party then endeavouring to get the same, and then forthwith to gather such a party of Horse as he could conveniently get to his assistance, and either secure the person of the King from being removed by any other, or, if occasion were, to remove him to some place of better security, for the prevention of the designe of the aforesaid pretended traiterous party: which was accordingly done, both with the knowledge and approbation of L.-G. Cromwell, although he afterward (like a subtle Fox) would not be pleased to take notice of it."

Lilburn, in his *Impeachment of High Treason against Cromwell and Ireton*, 1649, adds these additional details, that the order was delivered to Joyce "in Cromwell's own garden in Drury Lane,

<sup>a</sup> *Tanner MSS.*, lviii. f. 123, signed W. R. This letter was read in the House of Commons June 3, and may have had something to do with Cromwell's leaving London. He seems to have left in the company of Hugh Peter.





Parliament; or else Colonel Graves, by the advice of the Commissioners, would have carried him to London, throwing themselves upon the favour of the Parliament for that service."

Since Cromwell approved Joyce's preventing the removal of the King from Holdenby, his objection must have been to the second part of the story published by Harris.

Harris asserted that Cromwell gave orders not merely "to secure the person of the King there from being removed by any other," but also, "if occasion were, to remove him to some place of better security."

Cromwell constantly denied that he had sanctioned the removal of the King from Holdenby.

The account of the interview of the officers with the King on June 7 (p. 125) states plainly that all the officers, amongst whom were Cromwell and Ireton, told the King that he had been removed from Holdenby "without their privity, knowledge, or consent" (*cf. Memoirs of Sir P. Warwick*, p. 299).

Fairfax writes in the same strain to Lenthall on June 7: "I can clearly profess (as in the presence of God) for myself, and dare be confident of the same for all the officers about me, and the body of the Army, that the remove of his Majesty from Holdenby was without any design, knowledge, or privity thereof on our part" (*Old Parliamentary History*, xv. 410). As Fairfax had two days before heard the statements of Cromwell and Ireton which Huntington reports, it is clear that he drew a sharp distinction between the King's removal from Holdenby and what the commissioners term "the changing of the King's guards." Ireton's answer defines Cromwell's position. Cromwell, like Ireton, had authorised "securing the King there, not taking him thence." If that be so, Joyce was not telling the truth when he said that Cromwell authorised both the seizure and the removal of the King, and Harris was misinformed when he repeated Joyce's statement. The earlier statements of Joyce are of considerable importance. The narrative printed by Rushworth, and attributed by Masson



on good internal evidence to Joyce himself, affords conclusive proof that the removal of the King from Holdenby was an after-thought, and not part of Joyce's original plan. Joyce states that he seized Holdenby early on the morning of Thursday, June 3, occupied the house, set his guards, and dismissed the troopers to their quarters.

"All this being done it grew towards noon . . . . All was quiet in the said present security of his Majesty till tidings came that Graves was gone quite away . . . . None could tell what was become of him, and some of his damning blades did say and swear they would fetch a party, which party could not be from the Army, but must be from some other place. And therefore to prevent disturbance and blood and for the peace sake of the Kingdom, all declared unanimously, that they thought it most convenient to secure the King in another place from such persons as could cunningly or desperately take him away contrary to order." (*Rushworth*, vi. 514.)

About ten o'clock the same night the soldiers sent Cornet Joyce to the King, and Joyce saw the King in bed and announced his intended removal to him. Early next morning, Friday the fourth of June, they set out for Newmarket.<sup>a</sup>

Two other pieces of evidence confirm the view that the removal of the King was not at first intended. The Declaration delivered by Joyce to the commissioners in charge of the King speaks only of preventing a design to take away the King. Moreover Joyce was uncertain whither to take the King, and suggested first Oxford, then Cambridge. Newmarket was proposed by the King himself. If the removal of the King had been pre-determined his destination would also have been pre-arranged (*Old Parliamentary History*, xv. 394; *Rushworth*, vi. 516). So the story originally told by Joyce is both consistent and probable. If it be true that the removal of the King was not part of Joyce's original design, is it

<sup>a</sup> The statement that the removal of the King was first determined on in the interview on the evening of June 3 is confirmed by the letters of Lord Montagu of June 3 and 4, and his narrative of June 8. (*Old Parliamentary History*, xv. 393, 396.)



probable that it was part of his original instructions? Joyce's later statement that he removed the King from Holdenby in pursuance of instructions received from Cromwell is inconsistent with his earlier statement that the removal was forced upon him by the demands of his soldiers.

As soon as Joyce had seized Holdenby and secured the King he wrote a letter announcing his success. Holles gives the following account of it in his *Memoirs* :

"Joyce, after seizing and carrying away the King, immediately sends up a letter to certify what he had done, with directions that it should be delivered to Cromwell, and, if he is absent, to Sir Arthur Haslerig or to Colonel Fleetwood; which letter was given to Colonel Fleetwood, as one Lieutenant Markham informed the House, saying that the messenger that brought it told him so; nor did Sir Arthur Haslerig make a clear answer, when he was asked concerning it in the House: Colonel Fleetwood being at that time gone to the Army so that he could not be examined." (*Memoirs*, § 96.)

The story as told by Holles was written several months later, and the note entered by Lawrence Whitacre in his diary on June 8 is probably more accurate.

"The House was informed by Mr. Holles of a letter was come to his hands written from Holmby by Cornet Joyce with directions that it should be delivered to Lieut.-Gen. Cromwell, or in his absence to Sir Arthur Haslerig or Col. Fleetwood; whereby Mr. Holles would have inferred that those three gentlemen held correspondence with that Cornet, and so had intelligence of that party's carrying away the King and the Commissioners from Holmby; but Sir Arthur Haslerig denied any knowledge he had thereof, and the names of none of those gentlemen did appear upon the superscription of that letter, so that there was no further proceeding upon it at that time."

The letter printed on p. 118 is probably the letter thus referred to by Holles and Whitacre. There is no superscription, but it was evidently written to some superior officer who was largely responsible for what Joyce had done. He practically says, 'I have carried out your instructions, send me fresh instructions at once.' Its contents substantially correspond to the orders which



may be supposed to have been given by Cromwell to Joyce. 'I have secured the King. I have not arrested Colonel Graves because he has escaped. I shall attend to the directions of the parliamentary commissioners within certain limits, but on other points obey no orders but those of the General.' Nothing is said of the removal of the King from Holdenby to Newmarket, or to any other place. If the conclusion that the letter was addressed to Cromwell be accepted, it confirms the view of his relations to Joyce which has been stated in the last few pages.

Fairfax, in his *Short Memorials*, states that he "called for a Council of War to proceed against Joyce, but the officers, whether for fear of the distempered soldiers, or rather (as I suspected) a secret allowance of what was done, made all my endeavours in this ineffectual" (Maseres, *Select Tracts*, i. 448). Some inquiry there probably was into the conduct of Joyce, and it is probable that it was in connection with that inquiry that Clarke obtained copies of the two letters from Joyce here printed (pp. 118-120). The officers in general certainly held that Joyce had done good service to the Army, and he was not only pardoned but promised promotion.

On September 4, 1647, the "Committee of General Officers" passed a resolution "that Commissary-Generall Ireton and Colonel Rainborow bee desired to move the Generall that Cornett Joyce may have the troope of Captain Layton, latelie deceased, in Colonel Fleetwood's regiment, the Generall having engaged to give him the first that falls." (*Clarke MSS.*, vol. lxvi.)

On the treatment of the King whilst he was in the custody of the Army there are several papers in this volume. After Whalley had delivered him from the hands of Joyce he refused to go back to Holdenby, and insisted on continuing his journey to Newmarket (pp. 122, 123). A news letter from the latter place describes his first interview with Fairfax and the officers (p. 124). Fairfax ordered special precautions to be taken by Whalley for the security of the King's person, fearing a rising in Norfolk (p. 130). The King requested Fairfax to allow the Duke of Richmond and two





favourite chaplains to attend him ; but Fairfax was unwilling directly to sanction their admission, as it was contrary to the orders of Parliament (p. 137). He was also afraid of some "intention to surprise the King to London," and warned Whalley to be on his guard against it (p. 139). "Be careful of the King's securing," wrote Cromwell and Hewson to Colonel Whalley ; but at the same time they urged him to be "exact only in faithfulness to his trust," and in other things to consult the King's wishes as far as possible (p. 140). Hoping for a speedy accommodation with the Royalist party, they freely allowed the Royalists to come to see the King. "When the Army was in their greatest glory, and the enemy under their foot, yet we were ever humane and Christian to them, and now, being so near a reconciliation, we should not shew any aversion or indisposition" (p. 216).

The mutiny in the New Model, crowned by Joyce's seizure of the King, was followed by similar acts of insubordination amongst the military forces in the rest of the kingdom.

Skippon's regiment at Newcastle sympathised with the regiments stationed in the south (p. 125). The Army of the Northern Association, a separate organisation under the command of General Poyntz, resolved, in spite of the efforts of its commander, to associate itself with the demands of Fairfax's forces. In May the Agitators of the eight regiments of horse had sent a declaration to the Northern Army, explaining the cause of their proceedings, and had also despatched three of their number to arrange joint action (pp. 90, 92, 121).<sup>a</sup> Vainly Poyntz issued orders prohibiting meetings amongst the soldiers, and requiring the arrest of these incendiaries (p. 142). On July 8 he was arrested in his own quarters, and carried prisoner to Pontefract (p. 163). The three Agitators wrote

<sup>a</sup> A similar manifesto from the Agitators to the soldiers in Wales was issued later (p. 159). In several counties a large party seems to have sided with the Army against the Parliament (pp. 130, 138, 222).



to Fairfax giving an account of what they had done, and forwarding a series of charges against Poyntz, signed by representatives of every regiment in the Northern Army (pp. 163-170).

One result of the division in the Army was naturally a change in the officers of many regiments. Fairfax was on July 19 appointed commander-in-chief of all the land forces in the pay of the Parliament (*Lords' Journals*, vii. 339); but even before that date he had commenced appointing new officers in the regiments immediately under his control to take the place of those who had seceded. Barkstead became colonel of Fortescue's regiment, Pride of Harley's, Overton of Herbert's, Harrison of Sheffield's, Horton of Butler's, Thomlinson of Pye's; Scroope succeeded Greaves, and Twisleton, Rossiter. Many officers of lower rank either left the Army, or were even in some cases expelled by their soldiers (see pp. 139, 428).<sup>a</sup>

To restore or to maintain any semblance of order amongst soldiers who had thus shaken off the bonds of discipline was a task of very great difficulty. Equally difficult was the task of uniting these

<sup>a</sup> It would not be difficult to estimate the number and fix the names of the officers who separated themselves from the Army at this period. The list given in Sprigge supplies a list of the officers of the New Model in 1646. The engagement of various officers on March 22, 1647, supplemented by the report of the parliamentary commissioners on April 27, gives the names of those who expressed themselves satisfied with the concessions of Parliament, and undertook to serve in Ireland. (*Lords' Journals*, vii. 114, 152, 220, 245; *Rushworth*, vi. 465). In Fortescue's, Lilburn's, Herbert's, and some other regiments, a considerable number of soldiers engaged for Ireland. On the rupture with Parliament in the beginning of June several officers succeeded in bringing off part of their soldiers; for instance Colonel Greaves (*Lords' Journals*, vii. 243, 267), Sir Robert Pye (*Lords' Journals*, vii. 243), Lieut.-Colonel Jackson (*Lords' Journals*, vii. 243), Captain Farmer (*Lords' Journals*, vii. 258). Part of Fairfax's lifeguard left him (*Lords' Journals*, vii. 264, 282). On the other side the names of those who adhered to Fairfax may be gathered from the signatures to the Petition presented April 27 (*Rushworth*, vi. 471), and from the lists of attendances at various councils of war given in the book of Army declarations published in 1647.



armed politicians for common political action. In the rendezvous at Newmarket on June 4 and 5, a common statement of the grievances of the Army was agreed to and subscribed by the officers and soldiers. On the second of these dates "a Solemn Engagement of the Army" was read, assented to, and subscribed, which forms a sort of military version of the "Solemn League and Covenant." It began by a recital of the causes which led them first to elect Agitators to represent their grievances, and now to refuse to disband. It concluded by an assertion of their willingness to disband when their just demands were satisfied; and a refusal to disband, divide, or suffer themselves to be disbanded or divided, until their demands were satisfied and security given against future wrongs. What satisfaction and security should be regarded as sufficient was to be decided by a council,

"to consist of those general officers of the Army (who have concurred with the Army in the premises) with two commission officers, and two souldiers to be chosen for each Regiment, who have concurred and shall concur with us in the premises, and in this agreement; and by the major part of such of them, who shall meet in Council for that purpose, when they shall be thereunto called by the General." (Rushworth, vi. 505-512.)

The idea of reinforcing the slackened bond of discipline by this Act of Association for common political ends may have occurred to many: its actual form was pretty certainly due to Ireton. To Ireton also was due the Declaration of the Army of June 14, in which they went beyond the statement of their grievances as soldiers, and proceeded to propound their desires "for the settling and securing of our own and the kingdom's common Right, Freedom, Peace, and Safety." (Rushworth, vi. 564-570.)

That Declaration contains in it the demands afterwards embodied in the "Heads of the Proposals of the Army," which are developed in the latter into a number of definite articles offered for the consideration of Parliament and people.



Here, as in the letter of the officers from Royston, the soldiers demand a voice in the settlement of the kingdom on the ground

"that we are not a meer mercenary Army hired to serve any Arbitrary power of a State, but called forth and conjured by the severall Declarations of Parliament to the defence of our owne and the people's just Rights and Liberties; and so we took up Armes in judgement and conscience to those ends, and have so continued in them, and are resolved according to your first just desires in your Declarations, and such principles as we have received from your frequent informations, and our own common sense concerning those our fundamental rights and liberties, to assert and vindicate the just power and rights of this Kingdome in Parliament for those common ends premised against all arbitrary power, violence, and oppression, and against all particular parties or interests whats.ever."

It contains also a memorable vindication of the right of the Army to resist the authority of Parliament in defence of their just rights and liberties, which is frequently appealed to in the debates of the following October (pp. 260, 268).

Ireton bases the right of resistance on the "Law of Nature and of Nations," citing the example of the Scots, the Dutch, and the Portuguese.

"Such also," he continues, "were the proceedings of our ancestors of famous memory to the purchasing of such Rights and Liberties, as they have enjoyed through the price of their blond, and we (both by that and the later blond of our deare friends and fellow soldiers) with the hazard of our own, do now lay claim unto."

Whilst thus asserting the theoretical right of the Army to resist under certain conditions the authority of Parliament, Ireton is careful at the same time to fix a limit to the practical exercise of this right.

The first aim of the Army is declared to be to have Parliaments "rightly constituted, that is, freely, equally, and successively chosen." Parliament is to be purged of delinquents, corruptions, and members unduly elected. The duration of this and of future Parliaments is to be legally fixed; new Parliaments are to be summoned at definite intervals, and to continue sitting for a





definite time. When these reforms are effected, the Army will willingly submit to the authority of Parliament.

"Thus a firm foundation being laid in the authority and constitution of Parliaments for the hopes, at least, of common and equall right and freedom to ourselves and to all the freeborn people of this land; we shall for our parts freely and cheerfully commit our stock or share of interest in this kingdome into this common bottome of Parliaments, and though it may (for our particulars) go ill with us in one Voyage, yet we shall thus hope (if right be with us) to fare better in another."<sup>a</sup>

Just as the Army promises to submit to the authority of Parliament, provided certain reforms in its constitution are granted, so it also professes that it seeks neither "to overthrow Presbytery or hinder the settlement thereof," provided that some toleration for "tender consciences" be guaranteed. They demand

"that such who, upon conscientious grounds, may differ from the established formes may not for that be debarred from the common Rights, Liberties, or Benefits belonging equally to all as men and members of the Commonwealth, while they live soberly, honestly, and inoffensively towards others, and peacefully and truthfully towards the State."

This promise to accept the establishment of Presbyterianism, if freedom of conscience were provided for, is more than once repeated. It is stated with equal clearness in the letter of Fairfax and his officers to the City of London (June 10), which Carlyle on good grounds supposes to have been written by Cromwell.

Again on September 9, in a discussion in the Council of War at Putney, Cromwell

"expressed himself to this effect. That whereas it hath been suggested to this Kingdom that hee hath a desire to cast down the Foundation of Presbytery, and to

---

<sup>a</sup> Rushworth's text of this Declaration, vol. vi. pp. 564-570, differs in some phrases from that printed in the *Book of Army Declarations*, 1647, pp. 36-46, and the version in the *Old Parliamentary History*, said to be reprinted from the original Declarations printed at Cambridge, gives two very important paragraphs not contained in either of the others (xv. 466).



advance and set up Independency, hee declares, that hee desires nothing more then to see this poore tottered nation established in Truth and Peace, and this languishing Commonwealth restored to their just rights and liberties." (Two Declarations from his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, etc., 1647.)

There was, however, one point in which the Army would be satisfied with nothing short of complete surrender. They demanded that "those persons who in the late unjust and high proceedings against the Army appeared to have the will, the confidence, credit and power, to abuse the Parliament and Army and endanger the Kingdome," should "not continue in the same power," but "be made incapable thereof for the future." This was emphasised by the impeachment of Holles and ten other Presbyterian leaders. Permanent exclusion from political power was a thing to which Holles and his friends would not submit without a struggle. They would have appealed to arms as soon as the news came that the Army had refused to disband, if only the City had been ready to back them (p. 117). A news letter amongst Clarendon's papers, says:

"on the 3rd [of June] the Mayor of London called a Common Council to consider of the present affaires of the City, wherein it was resolved by one unanimous consent that they would have noe more war. Concerning how the Parliament took this I have noe more, but that at the first there were some that were pleased to show their mettle in very high expressions, but at last without taking any resolution they rose in very great distraction, being now informed of the resolution of the City whereon they built their chiefest hope." (*Clarendon MS.*, 2527.)

Incitements to the citizens to fight were not wanting, but produced no effect.

Another news letter, of June 7, adds: "Yesterday Col. Massey, as he passed through the streets in his coach, exhorting the cittizens to defend themselves against the madd men in the Army, who if they should prevaile would demand the heads of the best citizens,



and of the chief men of the Parliament as well as his head" (*ibid.* 2528).

On the news that the Army was marching on London, and was come as far as St. Albans, a more warlike spirit prevailed, and the trained bands were called out (June 11-12); but the next day a conciliatory answer was sent to the letter of the officers of the Army, and the idea of resistance abandoned (pp. 132-135). More than once there were riots caused by the disbanded soldiers and officers of the old armies of Essex and Waller, who clamoured for their pay at the doors of the House of Commons, and threatened the lives of unpopular members (pp. 136, 141). The Presbyterian clergy openly denounced Fairfax and his soldiers in their sermons (p. 150). Whilst the commissioners of the Army and the commissioners of the Parliament were negotiating, news that soldiers were being enlisted in London reached head-quarters (p. 152).

In May, 1647, an ordinance appointing a new committee for the control of the London militia had been passed, by which a number of aldermen and officers belonging to the Independent party, who had done good service during the war, were put out of the committee and their places filled up by Presbyterians (*Rushworth*, vi. 472, 478). The Presbyterian commissioners now proceeded to purge the London trained bands by expelling officers who were accused of being Independents or suspected of supporting the Army, and the officers thus expelled applied to the Army for redress (pp. 152-156).

On July 16 the Agitators laid before the General Council of the Army (or "the General Council of War" as it is here termed) a paper in which they demanded an immediate march on London, in order to obtain the restoration of the militia to the hands of the old commissioners, the release of all prisoners illegally committed, a declaration against the entrance of any foreign forces into England, and the placing of all military forces in the country under the command of Fairfax (pp. 170-175). A great debate



took place in the Council of the Army on the question of marching up to London. Over 100 officers and Agitators were present, and the discussion lasted till twelve at night (p. 214). Cromwell and Ireton vehemently opposed a march on London, and succeeded in persuading the Council to be content to send a summary of their demands to Parliament, and require an answer within four days. Cromwell was especially anxious to arrive at a settlement of the differences between the Army and Parliament by means of the treaty which was still being negotiated.

"It will be for our honour and honesty to do what we can to accomplish this work by way of a treaty. . . . Whatsoever we get by a treaty will be firm and durable, it will be conveyed over to posterity. We shall avoid the great objection that lies against us that we have got things of the Parliament by force, and we know what it is to have that stain lie upon us" (p. 185).

At the same time he held that certain preliminary demands necessary for the present security of the Army during the treaty, and certain grievances whose redress admitted of no delay, might be properly obtained by an ultimatum requiring an answer within a certain specified time (p. 191). Force was not to be used except in the last resort, "except we cannot get what is for the good of the kingdom without force" (p. 202). At the same time he urged that the friends of the Army in the House of Commons were steadily gaining ground; that any appeal to force would alienate the middle party in the House who were neither Presbyterian nor Independent, and stop the mouths of their friends; he reminded his hearers of their old hopes of obtaining their ends through Parliament, and begged them not to abandon those hopes.

"It hath been in most of our thoughts that this Parliament might be a reformed and purged Parliament, that we might see there men looking at public and common interests only. . . . This is the principle we did march upon when we were at Uxbridge and when we were at St. Alban's, and surely the thing was wise and honourable and just. . . . If we wish to see a purged Parliament let me persuade every man that he would be a little apt to hope the best" (p. 192).

Ireton opposed the march on London for reasons very similar to





those put forward by Cromwell. He expected less from the treaty, deemed the question of the London militia of less importance, and urged that there was no sufficient ground for the proposed movement (pp. 194-199). Above all, however, he was anxious that before any new quarrel with the Parliament took place the Army should vindicate the integrity of its intentions by declaring publicly to the kingdom what its political objects were, and how it meant to secure the liberties of the people (p. 179). He had been charged by the General and the rest of the commissioners of the Army appointed to treat with Parliament to draw up a series of proposals for the settlement of the kingdom. With a single assistant, apparently Lambert, he had sketched out the first draft of the document afterwards known as the "Heads of the Proposals of the Army." In it he hoped "to set down something that may be a rule to lay a foundation for the common rights and liberties of the people and for an established peace in the nation" (*cf.* pp. 343-349).

The scheme thus drawn up was to be tendered to the parliamentary commissioners, and to be transmitted by them to Parliament as the basis of a settlement. It would serve also as a manifesto from the Army to the nation, and for that reason Ireton was eager to get it adopted and published before a new breach took place between the Parliament and the Army. On July 17, the day after the debate on the question of marching to London, the draft of the proposals was submitted to the Council. Unfortunately Clarke's report of the discussion ends abruptly, but a few references to the debates are to be found in his reports of the October meetings of Council (pp. 181, 189, 197, 211). The result was that the draft propositions were referred to a committee of twelve officers and twelve Agitators (p. 216).

Parliament yielded to the peremptory demands of the Army, and passed an ordinance replacing the London militia in the hands of the old commissioners (Rushworth, vi. 626, 629, 632-5). At once counter-petitions were set on foot in the City; tumults began, and on July 26 the two Houses were forced by mob-violence to



recall their votes. The riots of July 26, the flight of Lenthall to the Army, and the entry of the Army into London are the subject of letters printed on pp. 217-223. Before the Army entered London the "Propositions" had been finally revised, and they were published on August 2 with a declaration to the Parliament and the nation. In the fortnight which had elapsed since the draft was laid before the Council the propositions had undergone some modification in the hope that they would obtain the King's concurrence. Sir John Berkeley describes Ireton as permitting him to examine the draft of the proposals and to make certain alterations in them. "He permitted me to alter two of the articles and that in most material points; and I would have done a third, which was the excluding seven persons from pardon and the not admitting of our party to sit in the next parliament" (*Memoirs of Sir J. Berkeley*, Maseres, p. 363).

When the proposals were privately submitted to the King he objected to the two points mentioned by Berkeley, and still more to the fact that though there was nothing against the Church government established, yet there was nothing done to assert it. The latter reason had great weight with the King in his final rejection of the Army terms (*ibid.*, pp. 367, 368). Major Huntington confirms the account of the private submission of the "Proposals" to the King, which probably took place about July 21 (*Reasons for laying down his Commission*, Maseres, p. 401). He states that Ireton, Rainborow, Hammond, and Rich "attended the King at Woburn, for three hours together, debating the whole business with the King upon the Proposals; upon which debate many of the most material things which the King disliked were afterwards struck out, and many other things were much abated by promises." The precise nature of these changes is thus stated by Wildman in his *Putney Projects*, 1647, p. 14.

"When the Proposals were first composed, there was a small restriction of the King's negative voice: it was agreed to be proposed, that whatsoever bill should be



propounded by two immediate succeeding Parliaments, should stand in full force and effect as any other law, though the King should refuse to consent. . . . This was expunged."

(2.) "In that rough draft it was proposed, that all who have been in hostility against the Parliament, be incapable of bearing office of power, or publique trust for ten years, without consent of Parliament. But in further favour of the King's interest, these ten years of excluding delinquents from power or trust, were changed to five years."

(3.) "It was further added, after this intercourse with the King, that the Councell of State should have power to admit such Delinquents to any office of power or trust before those five yeares were expired . . ."

(4.) "In the composure of the proposalls it was desired that an Act for the extirpation of Bishops might be passed by the King. . . . This Proposall was so moderated that the office and function of Bishops might be continued; and it is now only proposed that the coercive power and jurisdiction of Bishops extending to any Civill penalties upon any be abolished."

(5.) "After this Treaty with the King, the proposall for passing an Act to confirm the sale of Bishops lands was wholly obliterated; and though the Army afterward desired the Parliament to proceed in the sale and alienation of those Lands, yet that was none of their proposalls in order to a peace with the King, but according to their proposalls for a settled peace, the King was first to be established in his throne with his usurped power of a negative voyce to all lawes or determinations of Parliament, and then they knew that the King might be at his choyce, whether he would permit an alienation of these lands."

One of this committee of four who discussed the "Propositions" with the King, viz. Colonel Rainborow, gave John Lilburn "a full account of that business," and of Ireton's "base juggling and underhand dealings" (Lilburn's *Impeachment of High Treason against Oliver Cromwell and Henry Ireton*, 1649, p. 55). It was doubtless Lilburn who supplied Wildman with the information he embodies in his tract.

A detailed criticism of these Heads of Proposals is given by Mr. Gardiner in the preface to his *Constitutional Documents of the Puritan Revolution* (pp. xlviii.-l.). "It contained," he concludes, "too much that was new, too much in advance of the general intelligence of the times to obtain that popular support without which the best constitutions are but castles in the air; and even if this could have been got over, there was the fatal objection that it



proceeded from an army." Even after the occupation of London had taken place, Parliament, instead of taking up the Heads of the Proposals as the basis of a settlement of the kingdom, "sent to the King a revised edition of the propositions of Newcastle, differing mainly in this, that it proposed a limited toleration for dissentient Puritans, whilst forbidding all use of the book of Common Prayer." In his reply to their propositions, the King, on September 14, expressed a preference for the Proposals of the Army, as more conducive "to the satisfaction of all interests and a fitter foundation for a lasting peace (*Rushworth* vii. 810). Major Huntington's letter (p. 225) shows that the King expected the leaders of the Army to stand by him in procuring an offer of better terms from the parliament. The question of a new treaty was discussed in the House of Commons on September 22 and 23, 1647. Marten and his party were eager for the passing of a vote to make no further addresses to the King. Cromwell and Ireton on the other hand opposed Marten's motion, and the House finally resolved on September 23 that they would once again make application to the King.

This decision led to much discontent amongst the Levelling party in the Army as also outside of it, and "the credit and reputation" of both Cromwell and Ireton was much blasted thereby (p. 228). They were accused of falsely representing it to be the desire and sense of the Army that this new application should be made to the King. The charge is thus stated by Wildman in his *Putney Projects* (p. 43) :

"When the answer of the King's was voted by the Parliament to be a denial of the Propositions, a question was stated whether any more addresses should be made to the King, and the determination was very dubious: but then a Cabinet Councell of the Grandees was called, Sir John Eveling, Mr. William Perpoint, and Mr. Fines, Sir Henry Vane, and Cromwell, and Ireton, *cum paucis aliis*: and O how was the quintessence of their braines extracted, in plausible arguments for a new addresse to the King! how were the imaginary mischiefs, and dangerous consequences of a refusal presented in most lively emblems! and I conclude from the event, that in such a Cabinet Conneell the question was first concluded in the affirmative, and then





the debate of the question was managed in the House with much seeming solemnity; but when the potency of reason, and justice, against any further addresses, began to triumph over their feminine reasons, a Member (no question one of the same confederacy) produced a reason like Goliath's sword, with this inscription, there's none like this, its (saith he) the sense of the Army that a further addresse be made to the King: this led every reason captive, and so the debate ended. . . . . Com. Gen. Ireton without a prolix sometime averred as much in effect in the House, 'You must (saith he) looke for opposition, whenever you shall cease your addresses to the King, and then your case would be sad, if you should have no strength adhere unto you, and if you now cease, I cannot promise you the Armies assistance.'"

When this charge was made against Cromwell by Sexby in the debate in the Council of the Army on October 28, he replied that what he had spoken in Parliament he had spoken as his own sense, and not in the name of the Army.<sup>a</sup> Ireton's answer was, that he did believe it to be the sense of the Army that a second address should be made to the King (pp. 228-232).

Whilst the public utterances of Ireton and Cromwell were thus misinterpreted by the Levellers, their private conferences with the King and their apparent intimacy with his agents Berkeley and Ashburnham gave rise to still greater suspicions. After the King came to Hampton Court,

"Mr. Ashburnham had daily some message or another from the King, to Cromwell and Ireton, who had enough to do both in the Parliament and Council of the Army, the one abounding with Presbyterians, the other with Levellers, and both really jealous that Cromwell and Ireton had made a private compact and bargain with the King; Lilburn printing books weekly to that effect, and Sir Lewis Dives afterwards acknowledged to me, that being his fellow prisoner he had daily endeavoured to possess him with that opinion; of which, although he were not persuaded himself, yet he judged it for the King's service to divide Cromwell and the Army. On the other hand the Presbyterians were no less confident of their surmise, and amongst them, Cromwell told me that my Lady Carlisle affirmed, that I had said to her Ladyship, that he was to be Earl of Essex and Captain of the King's guards. . . . . These and the like discourses made great impression on the Army; to which Mr. Ashburnham's secret and long conferences contributed not a

\* Other accounts of Cromwell's speech are given in the note on p. 230. Mr. Gardiner points out that the speech which Cromwell defends must have been made on September 22nd, as he arrived too late for the debate of the 23rd.



little ; insomuch that the Adjutators, who were wont to complain that Cromwell went too slow towards the King, began now to suspect that he had gone too fast and left them behind him." (*Memoirs of Sir John Berkeley*, Maseres' Select Tracts, i. 368-372).

A pamphlet complains that the officers make an "idoll of the King."

"Why are they so familiar with Ashburnhame and others, his chief agents? Why permit they so many of his deceitful clergy to continue about him? Why doe themselves kneele, and kisse, and fawne upon him? Why have they received favours from him, and sent their wives or daughters to visit him, or to kiss his hand, or to be kissed of him? Oh shame of men! Oh sin against God! What, to doe thus to a man of blood, over head and eares in the blood of your dearest friends and fellow commoners?" (*A Call to all the Souldiers of the Army by the Free People of England*, 1647, p. 5.)

Another charge was that the engagement of June 5, referring the political government of the Army to the elected General Council of the Army, had not been kept, and that its authority had been gradually superseded by the Council of War, and by other committees of officers.

Lilburn wrote to Cromwell on July 1:

"You have robbed, by your unjust subtlety and shifting tricks, the honest and gallant Agitators of all their power and authority, and solely placed it in a thing called a councill of war, or rather a Cabinet junto of seven or eight proud self-ended fellows, that so you may without control make up your own ends." (*Jonah's Cry*, p. 9).

Sir John Berkeley observes:

"Out of my discourses and inquiries, I collected these observations: First, that the Army was governed partly by a Council of War, and partly by a Council of the Army, or Agitators, wherein the General had but a single voice; that Fairfax, the General, had little power in either; that Cromwell, and his son Ireton, with their Friends and Partisans, governed the Council of War absolutely, but not that of the Army, which was the most powerful, though they had a strong party there also; but the major part of the Adjutators carried it. Amongst these Adjutators there were many ill-wishers of Cromwell, looking on him as one who would always make his advantages out of the Army." (*Memoirs of Sir John Berkeley*, Maseres' Tracts, i. 364.)



Later the complaint of the Levellers became :

"that the General Councils (which according to their engagements ought to have consisted only of two select commission officers, and two private souldiers, chosen by every regiment, with such generall officers as assented to the engagement, and no other) were nevertheless overgrown with Collonels, Lieut.-Collonels, Majors and others not chosen, and many of them dissenters from the said engagement." (*England's New Chains Discovered*, pt. 2, p. 3, 1649. See also *The Hunting of the Foxes from Newmarket and Triploe Heath to Whitehall*, Somers' Tracts, vi. 45.)

The blame of these concessions to the King and the burden of the other charges was laid upon Ireton and Cromwell both, but most on Ireton. Wildman appeals to "my once much honoured Cromwell," as if hoping that his pen "could possibly awaken Cromwell's conscience from the dead" (*Putney Projects*, p. 37). Sometimes it is suggested that Ireton was the tempter.

"Before it be too late deal plainly with Ireton, by whose cowardly or ambitious policy Cromwell is betrayed into these mischievous practices . . . And if Cromwell instantly repent not, and alter his course, let him know also, that ye loved and honoured just, honest, sincere and valiant Cromwell, that loved his country, and the liberties of the people above his life, yea, and hated the King as a man of blood, but that Cromwell ceasing to be such, he ceaseth to be the object of your love."

Sometimes it was suggested that they were accomplices, and that their occasional differences were but the clearer proof of their secret alliance.

"One of the surest tokens of confederates in evill, is not only when one of his fellowes is vehement, fiery or hot in any of their pursuits, to be patient, cold or moderate to pacify his partner, and like deceitfull Lawyers before their clients to qualify matters; but sometimes seeme to discord or fall out and quarrell in Councils, reasonings and debates; and yet nevertheless in the end to agree in evill; which they doe purposely, to hold upright men in a charitable (though doubtfull) opinion, that if such and such a man be not godly and upright they know not whom in the world to trust." (*A Call to all the Souldiers of the Armie by the Free People of England*, etc., 1647, pp. 4, 6.)

The dissatisfaction and suspicion roused by all these different causes found expression in renewed disturbance in the Army and amongst



the Levelling party in general. Meetings took place amongst the soldiers, and several regiments elected new representatives under the pretext that the officers had broken their engagements (pp. 349, 367). A declaration published in November, 1647, by Colonel Whalley's troop, attacks the Agitators elected in June, saying :

"That upon several informations that those formerly employed by us did more consult their own advancement than the public settlement, we were induced, about the 19th of October last, to make choice of two new Agitators for a regiment."

The authority given these new Agitators

"was only to act according to our first engaged principles with the consent and advice of the General, the Council of War, and the Agitators first elected, to clear those things that seemed dubious to us, to prevent misinformations," etc. (Reprinted by Maseres, *Select Tracts*, i. lxx.)

These new representatives usually styled themselves "Agents," but are often described as "Agitators," both by themselves and others (pp. 259, 264, 279). It is convenient to use the term "Agents" in order to distinguish the new Agitators from the old. Five regiments of horse took the lead in this movement, those of Cromwell, Ireton, Fleetwood, Whalley, and Rich; and their representatives signed the "Case of the Army," which is dated October 9, 1647. By the beginning of November four other regiments of horse and seven of foot had also elected Agents, and associated themselves with the demands of the original five (Rushworth, vii. 859).

A certain number of persons, claiming to represent the Levellers of London and other districts, made common cause with the protesting soldiers (pp. 235, 251; *cf.* Rushworth, vii. 876-8). The most prominent of these was John Wildman, a follower of Lilburn's, who was adopted by the Agents as their mouthpiece, and was probably the author of the "Case of the Army," and some other tracts published in their name (pp. 269, 352, 356).

The new Agents commenced operations by the presentation of a





manifesto, entitled "The Case of the Army stated," which was presented to the General on October 18. It is well summarised by Godwin, *History of the Commonwealth*, ii. 445; and was accompanied by a letter which is printed *in extenso* by Rushworth (vii. 485; see also these debates, pp. 227, 229, 241, 293, 304, 346, 354, 356, 360, 373). The General Council of the Army, at its meeting on October 22, appointed a committee to sit the next day for the consideration of the papers thus presented. On the 28th the Agents presented a further paper, clearing themselves from the charge of seeking to divide the Army. The summary of their political demands, entitled "The Agreement of the People," though not published till a few days later, seems to have been presented at the same time (p. 236; Rushworth, vii. 849, 850, 859; Godwin, ii. 449).

The debates to which the presentation of these papers gave rise extended from October 28 to November 11 (pp. 226-418). The reports now printed were probably taken down in shorthand by William Clarke himself.

At the General Council which met at Putney on October 28 the presenters of the "Case of the Army" were represented by two soldiers and two outsiders, and also by three of the original Agitators (p. 226). One of the latter, Sexby, opened the proceedings by a statement of the causes of the present discontents in the Army. Their leaders, he complained, had laboured too much to satisfy the King and to support the Parliament, instead of simply seeking to carry out the engagements of the Army and taking a direct course to settle the kingdom. He concluded by a personal attack upon Cromwell and Ireton for advocating a further application to the King in the parliamentary debates of September 22 and 23 (pp. 227-232).

The discussion then turned on the "Agreement of the People," and Cromwell, after some remarks on the importance of the constitutional changes demanded in it, replied, "Before we take this paper into consideration, it is fit for us to consider how far we are obliged, and how far we are free." The engagements of the Army



as set forth in their public declarations must first be considered. When that was done they would know how far they were free to adopt the proposals of the Agents (pp. 236-240).

Ireton took the same line, whilst Wildman and Colonel Rainborow argued that the consideration of the justice of the demands now put forward should precede the consideration of earlier engagements (240-247). Cromwell proposed the appointment of a committee to consider the engagements in question, and Colonel Goffe suggested a prayer meeting (pp. 250-255). Both these propositions were finally accepted, but not till a long and excited discussion had taken place between Ireton and Wildman on the nature of obligations in general, and the question when they were binding and when they might be broken (pp. 257-279).

On the morning of October 29 the prayer meeting took place at the Quartermaster-General's quarters at Mr. Chamberlain's house (pp. 257, 259, 280-285). It was followed by a fresh discussion in the Council on the question of the engagements of the Army, in the course of which both Cromwell and Ireton emphatically disavowed any private and personal engagements whatever (pp. 293, 294). In an eloquent speech the latter declared that he desired the consideration of engagements not so much for the sake of the engagements themselves as for the sake of the reputation and good name of the Army.

"I would not have this Army . . . to incur the scandal of neglecting engagements, and laying aside all consideration of engagements, and juggling, and deceiving, and deluding the world, making them believe things in times of extremity which they never meant" (p. 297).

The "Agreement of the People" was next read, and a general debate took place over the first article, which claimed manhood suffrage (p. 299). On this point the discussion was long and passionate (pp. 299-345). Ireton, while professing his willingness to support a reasonable extension of the franchise, opposed manhood suffrage as dangerous in itself, and still more dangerous from the



principles upon which it was claimed (pp. 322, 333, 340). Cromwell and Colonel Rich supported Ireton (pp. 309, 315, 332). The former again proposed the appointment of a committee to agree upon a reasonable compromise (p. 328). The proposal was backed by Lieutenant Chillenden, Captain Rolfe, and others, and was finally accepted (pp. 337, 338). A fresh debate then arose on the question of the statements made in the "Case of the Army," and Ireton passionately vindicated the officers from the charge of dividing the Army, and retorted the charge on the new Agents (pp. 346-348). He went on to compare the "Heads of the Proposals of the Army" with the "Agreement," in order to show that the main demands of the latter were substantially contained in the "Proposals" (p. 349). Wildman in answer criticised the "Proposals" in detail, in order to show that by the authority they reserved to the King and the House of Lords "the foundation of slavery was rivetted more strongly than before" (p. 353). Ireton defended the proposals, and charged Wildman with being the author of the "Case of the Army" (pp. 356-361).

On October 30 the Committee of Officers and Agitators appointed to prepare "somewhat to be insisted upon and adhered unto for settling the kingdom," held a meeting, and agreed to a number of articles relative to the constitution of future Parliaments (pp. 363-367). With the exception of the article on the suffrage, these propositions were substantially the same as those contained in the "Heads of the Proposals."

The result of the deliberations of the Committee was a clause desiring the extension of the franchise "to all freeborn Englishmen or persons made free denizens of England, who have served the Parliament in the late war for the liberties of the kingdom . . . or voluntarily assisted the Parliament in the said war with money, arms, etc." (p. 367). Though this guaranteed the rights of the soldiers, it did not go as far as the Agitators desired, and they seem finally to have obtained a vote in favour of manhood suffrage of the General Council.



In a letter from the Agents to the regiments which they represented, dated November 11, they say that the first article of the agreement having been long debated "it was concluded by vote in the Affirmative; viz. that all souldiers and others, if they be not servants or beggars, ought to have voices in electing those that shall represent them in Parliament, although they have not fortie shillings a year by freehold land. And there were but three voyces against this your native freedome." Cromwell and Ireton continued to oppose this further extension, the former saying that it "did tend very much to anarchy" (p. 411; cf. p. 309).

In the later constitutions and the suggested constitutions of the period the question of the suffrage was variously treated. The "Agreement of the People," presented to Parliament January 15, 1649, embodies the view finally adopted by the governing party in the Army. It proposed:

"That the electors in every division shall be natives or denizens of England, not persons receiving alms, but such as are assessed ordinarily towards the relief of the poor; not servants to and receiving wages from any particular person. And in all elections except for the Universities they shall be men of 21 years of age or upwards, and housekeepers dwelling within the division for which the election is."

The restrictions are those suggested in these debates of October, 1647 (pp. 313, 335, 341, 342).

Ireton, who in the "Heads of the Proposals of the Army" had first suggested the redistribution of seats according to the rates borne by the respective counties in the burdens of the kingdom, was probably also the author of this proposal for basing the franchise on the payment of rates for the relief of the poor. It does not appear in the scheme of the Levellers or in the Instrument of Government. The views of the former are contained in the "Agreement of the Free People of England," put forth by Lilburn and his friends, May 1, 1649. It gives the franchise "according to natural right" to "all men of the age of 21 years and upwards not being servants or receiving alms." The Instrument of Government, on the other hand, reproducing the scheme which the Long Parliament was





engaged in passing when Cromwell expelled it, restricted the franchise in the counties to persons possessing real or personal estate to the value of £200, and left the right of voting in the boroughs unaltered.

The debates of the Council on November 1 turned mainly on the subject of the King and the House of Lords. Wildman argued that by the fundamental constitution of the kingdom neither King nor Lords had any right to a negative voice in legislation, and that they ought to be expressly deprived of the right which they had usurped (pp. 367, 385-387). Ireton had no great difficulty in refuting the proof of these statements which Wildman attempted to derive from the coronation oath (pp. 386, 387, 399), but his own opinion and the general sense of the Army were both strongly in favour of limiting the power of the Lords. The Committee appointed by the Council of Officers had originally decided that the Lords should possess a suspensive veto only (p. 396). For this a more elaborate scheme suggested by Ireton was finally substituted, stipulating that laws passed by the House of Commons should be binding for the people even without the consent of the Lords (pp. 394, 397, 407). But the Lords would not be so bound "for their own persons and estates as the Commons are" unless they expressly consented to it (pp. 391, 394, 397, 405). Lords who happened to be officers of state were to be liable to the judgment of the Commons; those who were not were to be tried and judged only by their peers (p. 409). The suggestion that Lords and Commons should sit together as one House appears to have been considered and rejected (p. 395). The Act of March 19, 1649, which abolished the Upper House as useless and dangerous, declared that such Lords, as had "demeaned themselves with honour, courage, and fidelity to the Commonwealth," should be capable of sitting in Parliament, "if they shall be thcrunto elected." Ireton seems to have proposed a similar provision at this time, but the precise text of his proposal is missing (p. 395).

The articles brought forward by the Committee treated the King's negative voice in the same fashion as the legislative power of the



Lords. The first draft of the "Hheads of the Proposals" had given the King a suspensive veto. In their final form, however, nothing at all was said about the King's negative voice; it was simply passed over in silence (*cf.* p. 357). In place of that, the Army demanded the King's assent to certain stipulated concessions which were held essential to the peace and safety of the kingdom, and proposed that when these things were provided for he should be restored to his throne without diminution to his personal rights, and without further limitation to the exercise of his regal power (Art. xiv., *cf.* pp. 358-9) Wildman and his party insisted that this involved the restoration of the King with an unlimited negative voice, and that he could not safely be allowed any share whatever in legislation (pp. 362, 385). In reply Ireton pointed out that matters essential to safety were already provided for; that the King by confirming the ordinances made by Parliament would practically admit the right of the Parliament to make laws without his consent where the safety of the nation was concerned; and that the article proposed by the committee gave the House of Commons power to enact laws binding on all commoners.

"Itt takes away the negative voice of the Lords and of the Kinge too, as to what concernes the people; for itt says that the Commons of England shall bee bound by what judgement and above what orders, ordinances, or lawes shall bee made for that purpose by them; and all that followes for the Kinge or Lords is this, that the Lords or Kinge are not bound by that law they pass for their own persons or estates as the Commoners are, unlesse they consent to it" (pp. 389-391, 407).

The debates of November 3 are very briefly reported, and the reports of those which took place on the four following days are missing altogether. An attempt is made to supply some account of them in Appendix E. On November 5 the extreme party succeeded in obtaining a vote for a general rendezvous of the Army, and procured from the Council a letter to Parliament intimating that the Army was opposed to any further applications to the King. On November 8, however, Cromwell, who had long been sensible of the dangers of division and anarchy caused by these



disputes in the Council, carried a vote recommending the General to order the representative Officers and Agitators to return to their regiments until the intended rendezvous had taken place (p. 412). On the following day the Council was adjourned for a fortnight; but before it separated a declaration was drawn up, explaining that the letter of November 5 was not intended to mean that the Council opposed Parliament's sending any further propositions to the King, "our intentions being only to assert the freedom of Parliament" (p. 416). It was also decided that instead of the one general rendezvous of the Army, which had been previously settled, there should be three separate reviews, to take place at different places on successive days.

The first rendezvous took place on November 15 near Ware. The Levellers attempted to convert it into the general rendezvous which they so much desired. The regiments of Harrison and Robert Lilburn broke loose from the control of their officers, and came to the field of the review intending to make it an armed demonstration in favour of the "Agreement of the People." Cromwell's action was again decisive, and the incipient mutiny was quelled by the execution of a single mutineer.<sup>a</sup> A remonstrance drawn up in the name of the General was read at the head of every regiment. Like the engagement of June 5, which it supplements and completes, it was evidently the composition of Ireton (v. p. 348). Fairfax declares that he and the other commanders have done their best to carry out the ends of the Newmarket engagement, and complains of the discontents and divisions which the Agents have caused in the Army. He announces that without redress of these abuses and disorders he will not continue in command, but professes his willingness "to adhere to, and to

<sup>a</sup> The best account of the rendezvous is given in a letter of William Clarke's, contained in a pamphlet entitled *A Full Relation of the Proceedings at the Rendezvous at Corkbush Field in Hartford Parish on Monday last, 1647*. It is reprinted by Maseres, *Select Tracts*, i. lv.



conduct, and live and die with the Army in the lawful prosecution" of certain specified aims. Those aims are the obtaining of six demands which concern the Army as soldiers, and the attainment of the following political objects for the kingdom at large.

"A period to be set for this present Parliament, to end so soon as may be with safety; and provision thereunto to be made for future Parliaments, for the certainty of their meeting, sitting, and ending, and for the freedom and equality of elections thereto; to render the House of Commons, as near as may be, an equal representative of the people that are to elect. And, according to the Representation of the Army of June 14, to leave other things to, and acquiesce in, the determinations of the Parliament; but to remind the Parliament of, and mediate with them for, redress of the common grievances of the people, and all other things that the Army have declared their desire for."

He concluded by exacting from the officers and soldiers of every regiment the subscription of a definite promise to be bound by the decision of the General Council of the Army as to the prosecution of the objects thus enumerated. On the other hand, "for the matter of ordering conduct and government of the Army," they were to be "observant and subject to the General, the Council of War, and their officers." (*Old Parliamentary History*, xvi. 340-345.)

By this new compact between Fairfax and his soldiers the political aims of the Army were clearly defined and its action was restricted to certain definite objects. The acceptance of the engagement was followed by the restoration of good relations between officers and men and by the revival of discipline. Some few of the discontented party continued to plot mutiny, but they were either reduced to submission or promptly expelled from the Army. A few weeks later the "General Council of the Army" itself ceased to exist, and the system of representation, established by the engagement of June 4, was never revived. A constitutional experiment so remarkable is worth tracing to its close.

The vote of November 8 had simply dismissed the Agitators and the representative officers to their several regiments, "there to reside until the said rendezvous be over, and until his Excellency





shall see fit to call them together again according to the Engagement" (p. 412). The Council met again, on November 25, in the town hall at Windsor, and continued to meet throughout December and during the first week of January, 1648. There is little doubt that the Agitators continued to take part in its debates, privates as well as officers. Parliamentary Commissioners came to Windsor to arrange with the Council of the Army the question of pay and the disbanding of supernumeraries. A letter from Windsor, dated December 31, says:

"The Parliament's Commissioners have been at the headquarters with us now this three days, and had divers meetings with our councils, and joined with us in prayer, and other things tending to the good of the kingdom and the army, and have had full satisfaction in all things upon the votes of the Houses, to their hearts desire and content. And the officers came to them and assured them the spirit of the army was, that since God hath put an opportunity into their hands of purpose to settle the kingdom, if God should honour the army to be further helping to them, the army would live and die with them and for them willingly. Whereby they were much joyed, and received their expressions with abundance of thanks. . . . The Agreement was sweet and comfortable, the whole matter of the kingdom being left with the Parliament." (Rushworth, vii. 928, 935, 951.)

The most important subject treated with the Parliamentary Commissioners was the reorganisation of the Army and the disbanding and payment of those soldiers who were not to be included in the new establishment. With the concurrence of Fairfax and the Council, this was effected by a series of Parliamentary resolutions, in accordance with which a standing army of about 23,000 men was to be kept up (Rushworth, vii. 935, 992, 995). Supernumeraries, soldiers enlisted since the Newmarket engagement, and superfluous local levies were disbanded in large numbers (*ibid.*, 921, 929, 946, 953, 997, 1007, 1011, 1042). A number of rules were established for the billeting and quartering of the soldiers to be still maintained (*ibid.*, 956). Above all, a considerable reduction in the pay of the Army was agreed upon, though it was stipulated by the soldiers that the said reduction should hold good for time of peace merely, and that in case of a new war their pay and allowances should be again



increased (*ibid.*, pp. 995, 996; see also an imperfect letter of Fairfax's amongst Clarke's MSS.) One of the last acts of the Council was to vote an addition to the number of Army chaplains.

"The Councell of the Army having information of the willingnesse and readinesse of divers Godlye men of the ministrie to bestowe theyr paynes to preach the ghospell of Christ in the Armys, it was resolved by the Councell that some of them whose hearts God should most incline to that worke, should be desired to come to the Army for that purpose and be assured from the Councell of all encouragement thereto and good acceptance of theyr paynes therein." (Clarke MS. Jan. 9, 1647.)

In pursuance of this vote John Canne became chaplain of Robert Lilburn's regiment, and a number of other divines became attached to the Army.

Whilst the headquarters were at Windsor the Council of War frequently met to condemn persons implicated in the recent disturbances. Captain-Lieutenant Bray, Major Cobbet, and several privates were tried and condemned, but the proceedings closed with a general reconciliation and remission of punishments (Rushworth vii., 922, 937, 940, 942, 943). The meeting of December 21 is thus described in a letter which Rushworth reprints from the *Perfect Diurnal*.

"The General Council of the Army met in the Castle at Windsor; the greatest part of that day was spent in several declarations made by divers officers concerning the present juncture of affairs; many exhortations to unity and affinity, and motions made for passing by offences that had, through weakness, come from brethren.

"Major White laid hold of this opportunity, made an acknowledgement that he had spoken some words rashly at Putney, for which he was censured by that Council; desired that he might be looked upon as one that desired the good of the Army; and, that being restored into favour he should readily submit to the discipline of the Army. This was unanimously approved of, and the major accordingly readmitted into the General Council.

"Wednesday, December 22. was, according to appointment, kept as a solemn fast by the general and officers; the duties of the day were performed by divers of the officers, amongst whom there was a sweet harmony: the Lieutenant-General, Commissary General Ireton, Col. Tichburne, Col. Hewson, Mr. Peters, and other



officers prayed very fervently and pathetically; this continued from nine in the morning till seven at night. In the evening a motion was made that whereas Col. Rainsborough had acted some things which gave offence, that in regard of his present acknowledgment, his former service might not be forgotten; but that the Council would move the General to write to the House, that he might be made Vice-admiral; which was assented to by all, and a letter written to Mr. Speaker accordingly.

"Thursday, December 23, the General Council of the Army again met. . . . This day also the Council of War sat about the trial of Captain-Lieutenant Bray, Mr. Crosmán, Mr. Allen, and others; but upon their acknowledgment of their rash and irregular proceedings, and promise to submit to the discipline of the Army for the time to come, they were dismissed and sent to their several regiments."<sup>a</sup>

The last meeting of the Council took place on January 8, 1648. "This Saturday the General Council of the Army met at the Castle at Windsor, where the appearance was great, and they were very unanimous in debate." Without a single opposing voice they agreed upon the Declaration presented to Parliament on January 11, announcing their satisfaction with the recent vote for no further addresses to the King, and promising to support the Parliament in settling the kingdom without him (Rushworth, vii. 959, 961).

"To-morrow," continues the letter, "all the council that met this day are to dine with the General in Windsor Castle, to congratulate the unity of the Army and to take their leaves each of other before they be dispersed into the several garrisons and great towns, which the Army will punctually perform against the 15th of January."

---

<sup>a</sup> Insubordination, however, was not yet entirely at an end. On February 23 some of the Lifeguard of Fairfax presented a petition to their General, protesting against the terms on which they were to be disbanded, and backed it by a mutinous demonstration, for which several were tried by a court-martial (Rushworth, vii. 1006, 1009, 1010). A certain William Clarke was condemned to death, but pardoned. Harrison's regiment mutinied when ordered into the west, for which Henry Gethings, an Agitator, and two soldiers were sentenced to death, but also pardoned. Another leading Leveller Corporal Thompson, who had escaped from custody, was arrested by Cromwell himself at the door of the House of Commons, and tried about the same time. (*The Kingdom's Weekly Post*, March 2-9, 1648; *A Vindication of Lieut.-Gen. Cromwell, etc., against a libell signed by one Tompson*, by A. C., March 7, 1648.)



So ended the assembly instituted in pursuance of the Engagement of June 5—the most thoroughly representative of all the different councils which successively spoke in the name of the Army. Subsequent councils contained no representatives of the common soldiers. The assembly which met at St Albans on November 7, 1648, though often spoken of as the General Council of the Army, was in reality composed solely of officers, and styled itself “the General Council of Officers of the Army” (Rushworth, vii. 1320, 1330, 1366. *Old Parliamentary History*, xviii. 160, 266, 458, 516).

In May, 1649, Colonel Scroope's regiment and portions of several others mutinied, demanding the re-establishment of the General Council of the Army according to the Engagement of June 5, 1647, which they accused their officers of having broken. The rising was suppressed by Cromwell at Burford, and one of the leaders, Cornet Henry Denne, published a pamphlet entitled the “Levellers Designe Discovered,” in which he explained the aims of the mutineers, and retracted the opinions which he had held in common with them. On the question of the General Council and the reasons which led to its dissolution he speaks as follows:

“I shall declare what satisfaction I have received that so I may give the same satisfaction unto others. . . . Such a councill indeed the ingagement required. And such a councill was constituted in the Army, acting, and transacting of matters pertaining to the discipline of the Army. And so long was this councill continued, untill the inconvenience thereof was so far manifest; that most of the Regiments of horse and foot did petition his Excellency to send back the severall agitators to their respective regiments untill he should be pleased to resummon them; professing a willingness in themselves to submit unto his Excellency with his Council of War, according to the pristine discipline of the Army. His Excellency having received these petitions did not immediately send back the Agitators (as requested). But having first summoned a councill, and communicated the petitions unto them; it was by them concluded that according to the petitions of the severall regiments the Council of Agitators should be dissolved, untill his Excellency should see cause to resummon them. Now this being so: his Excellency cannot be charged with violation of that ingagement, neither doth there remain any obligation on his





Excellency to have continued or revived any such counsell." (*The Levellers Designe Discovered*, p. 4, 1649.)

Unfortunately the debates of the Council during the final meetings at Windsor are not recorded by Clarke, or at least have not survived. In some of these gatherings business of great importance was treated, but most of them seem to have been devoted to military rather than political affairs. The peculiar value of the reports of the debates on the Agreement of the people lies in the fact that in them the fundamental principles of politics were discussed. In the course of the argument the political theories of the two parties in the army, and the characters of their leaders, are clearly defined and exhibited. Both these points deserve and require a more detailed consideration.

The views of the extreme party amongst the sectaries are set forth in the pamphlets of Lilburn, Overton, and others, and are well summarised by Thomas Edwards in his *Gangraena*. In the third part of that work, published in 1646, he enumerates the erroneous opinions held by the "sectaries" in political as well as in religious matters. He complains that just as they neglected authority in religion so they rejected it in politics.

"As they do in matters of religion and conscience fly from the scriptures, and from supernaturall truths revealed there, that a man may not be questioned for going against them, but only for errors against the light of nature and right reason; so they do also in civill government and things of this world, they go from the lawes and constitutions of kingdoms, and will be governed by rules according to nature and right reason: and though the lawes and customes of a kingdome be never so plain and cleer against their wayes, yet they will not submit, but cry out for naturall rights derived from Adam and right reason" (*Gangraena*, pt. iii. p. 20).

Accordingly in these debates we hear much of the laws of nature and of natural rights. It was held that every man born in England, every "free born Englishman," possessed certain rights which were termed his "birthright." The phrase "birthright" was not altogether new in English political discussions, but had usually been employed



in a more limited signification. "Subjects," said Sir Robert Berkeley during Hampden's trial, "have a birthright in the laws of this kingdom." The word is used in a similar fashion in the Act of Settlement. Ireton employs it with the same meaning in one of his speeches.

"If you call that your birthright, which is the most fundamental part of your constitution, then let him perish that goes about to hinder you of the least part of your birthright" (p. 325).

The Levellers sometimes used the term to denote certain inherited constitutional rights. They believed that the English commons had possessed these rights under the Saxons, and were unjustly deprived of them by the Norman Conquest (*cf.* pp. 318, 368). "To purchase our inheritances that have been lost," "to recover our birthrights and privileges as Englishmen," were alleged by them to be the cause for which they had taken up arms (pp. 235, 322).

The negative voice of the King, and the power of the House of Lords, they asserted to be a part of the bondage imposed on England by the Norman Conquest (pp. 401, 402). According to some of their pamphleteers the law and the constitution alike were part of the Norman yoke.

"The greatest mischief of all and the oppressing bondage of England ever since the Norman yoke," says Lilburn, "is a law called the common law. The laws of this nation," he adds, "are unworthy a free people, and deserve from first to last to be considered, and seriously debated, and reduced to an agreement with common equity and right reason, which ought to be the form and life of every government. Magna Charta itself being but a beggarly thing, containing many marks of intolerable bondage, and the laws that have been made since by Parliaments have in very many particulars made our government much more oppressive and intolerable" (Lilburn, *Just Man's Justification*, pp. 11-15; Edwards, *Gangraena*, iii. 194).

Park, in his edition of the *Harleian Miscellany*, reprints three pamphlets by John Hare, setting forth this theory of the consequences of the Norman Conquest, viz. (1.) *St. Edward's Ghost, or Anti-Normanism; being a patheticall Complaint and Motion, in the behalf of our English Nation against her grand yet neglected*



*Grievance, Normanism*, 1647 (vol. viii. p. 94); (2). *Plain English to our wilful bearers with Normanism*, 1647 (vol. ix. p. 90); (3). *England's proper and only Way to an Establishment in Honour, Freedom, Peace, and Happiness; or the Norman Yoke once more uncased; and the Necessity, Justice, and present Seasonableness of breaking it in pieces demonstrated*, 1648 (vol. vi. p. 36).

The theory which the Levellers thus put forward found eager acceptance in the Army. In attempting to find an historical basis for the rights which they claimed the soldiers were but following the example of the lawyers. When they represented the liberties they demanded as an inheritance from the past, fictitious though the pedigree might be, they adopted the conventional method of English political controversy. But in fact they rested their claims far more on abstract justice and pure reason, and demanded their rights, not merely as the lawful inheritance of Englishmen, but as the natural rights of all men. Their argument is well summed up by Edwards.

"That, seeing all men are by nature the Sons of Adam, and from him have legitimately derived a naturall propriety, right, and freedom, Therefore England and all other Nations, and all particular persons in every Nation, notwithstanding the difference of Lawes and Governments, rancks and degrees, ought to be alike free and estated in their naturall Liberties, and to enjoy the just Rights and Prerogative of mankind, whereunto they are Heirs apparent; and thus the Commoners by right are equall with the Lords. For by naturall birth all men are equally and alike born to like propriety, liberty, and freedom; and as we are delivered of God by the hand of nature into this world, every one with a naturall innate freedom, and propriety, even so are we to live, every one equally and alike to enjoy his birth-right and priviledge." (*Gangraena*, pt. iii., p. 16.)

First and most important of these rights was the right to a voice in the election of Members of Parliament. The only legitimate foundation of a government was the consent of the governed.

"I thinke its cleare," says Rainborow, "that every man that is to live under a government ought first by his own consent to putt himself under that government; and I dee thinke that the poorest man in England is not at all bound in a strict



sense to that government that he hath not had a voice to putt himself under" (p. 301).

"Every man born in England cannot, ought nott; neither by the law of God nor the law of nature, to bee exempted from the choice of those who are to make lawes, for him to live under, and for him, for ought I know to die under" (p. 305).

Wildman lays down the same principle.

"That's the undeniable maxim of government; that all government is in the free consent of the govern'd. If so then upon that account there is noe person that is under a just government or hath justly his own unlesse hee by his owne free consent be putt under that government" (p. 318).

We judge that all inhabitants that have not lost their birthright should have an equal voice in elections" (p. 300).

As Ireton points out, the argument for universal suffrage was based on an absolute natural right, paramount to existing laws or constitution (pp. 301, 307, 325, 327). The law of nature was invoked against the law of the land.

These natural rights were held to be inherent, inalienable rights, which no positive law or constitution could take away. As the crown lawyers had asserted that some powers were so inseparable from the King's person, that Acts of Parliament to deprive him of them were void, so now the spokesmen of the soldiers denied that any law or custom could deprive the people of their rights. Edwards thus states their contention:

"That whatever the Fundamentall Constitutions of Kingdomes and Commonwealths have been by forefathers, whatever agreements, compacts have been of subjection and obedience of such a people for themselves and posterities to one, as under kingly government, or to more, yet the men of the present age, following many hundred years after, ought to be absolutely free from what their forefathers yielded unto, and freed from all kinds of exorbitancies, molestations, without exception or limitation, either in respect of persons, officers, degrees, or things, and estated in their naturall and just Liberties agreeable to right reason." (*Gangraena*, pt. iii.)

Throughout the debates these principles are assumed by the supporters of the Agreement. "If there is a constitution that the people are not free, that should be annulled," says Mr. Pettus (p. 336). If the engagements of the Army had given away any-





thing that was the people's right, they were unjust and therefore void (p. 251). If a thing were just and the people's due, no engagement to the contrary was binding (pp. 261, 301). In accordance with these principles the spokesmen of the soldiers demanded the abolition of the law which restricted the franchise to forty-shilling freeholders. "I think," said Rainborow, "that the law of the land in that thing is the most tyrannical law under heaven" (p. 311). They demanded on the same grounds the abolition of the power of the King and the House of Lords, and especially the taking away of their share in legislation.

"To give the King a legislative power," argued Wildman, "is contrary to his own oath at his coronation, and it is the like to give a power to the King by his negative voice to deny all laws. And for the Lords, seeing the foundation of all justice is the election of the people it is unjust they should have that power" (p. 386).

"Both the power of the King and Lords," argued another, "was ever a branch of tyranny, and if ever a people shall free themselves from tyranny certainly it is after seven yeares' warre and fighting for their liberty" (p. 352).

"It will never satisfie the godly people in the Kingdome unlesse that all government be in the Commons and that freely" (p. 398).

Already on May 20, 1647, a petition had been addressed to the House of Commons as "the supreme authority of this nation," and had been ordered by them to be burnt as a high breach of privilege.

To what extent the articles drawn up by the committee of the General Council limited the powers of the King and Lords, and how far the demand for universal suffrage was successful has already been shown (pp. l.-liii.). There were, however, other rights which were to be secured by a different process.

In the articles drawn up by the Committee of the Council of the Army the represented announce that they reserve to themselves certain fundamental rights which their representatives are not empowered to abrogate or give away (pp. 407, 409). No man is to be impressed; no man compelled to any form of religion; no man disquieted for acts done during the war. The idea of inserting these reservations and the substance of the reservations



themselves are both taken from the first Agreement of the People, presented to the Council of the Army in Oct. 1647. The four reserves contained in that document ran thus :

"1. That matters of Religion, and the wayes of God's Worship, are not at all intrusted by us to any humane power, because therein we cannot remit or exceed a tittle of what our consciences dictate to be the mind of God, without wilfull sin: nevertheless the publike way of instructing the nation (so it be not compulsive) is referred to their discretion.

"2. That the matter of impresting and constraining any of us to serve in the wars is against our freedom; and therefore we do not allow it in our Representatives; the rather because, money (the sinews of war) being alwayes at their disposall, they can never want numbers of men apt enough to engage in any just cause.

"3. That after the dissolution of the present Parliament no person be at any time questioned for anything said or done, in reference to the late publike differences, otherwise then in execution of the judgements of the present Representatives or House of Commons.

"4. That in all Lawes made or to be made, every person may be bound alike, and that no Tenure, Estate, Charter, Degree, Birth, or Place, do confer any exemption from the ordinary course of legall proceedings whereunto others are subjected."

These reservations were practically a "Declaration of the Rights of Man" expressed by means of negatives and restrictions. Similar reservations, six in number, besides an elaborate article concerning the limits of religious freedom, are embodied in the second Agreement of the People, presented to Parliament from the Army in January 1649 (Gardiner, *Constitutional Documents*, p. 279).

In the desire to limit the powers of the government, and guarantee the rights of the individual, the Levellers went still further, and the third Agreement of the People, published by Lilburn and his friends in May, 1649, contains no less than eighteen provisions restricting the power of future Parliaments. To limit the power of Parliament was in fact the chief aim of these and similar stipulations.

The events of the spring of 1647 had sowed in the minds of the soldiers a deeply-rooted distrust of parliamentary assemblies, and a well grounded objection to their omnipotence. The exercise



of an unlimited or arbitrary power by such as have been trusted with supreme and subordinate authority, and the prevalence of corrupt interests powerfully inclining most men once entrusted with authority to pervert the same for their own domination, are the chief reasons given for Lilburn's Agreement and for the reservations contained in it. Though these reservations disappear in the Instrument of Government, the imposition of a written constitution, the provisions it contains for the securing of religious liberty, the clause nullifying bills contrary to the tenor of the "Instrument," the absence of any provision for its amendment, and the opposition to all proposals for its alteration, are manifestations of the same feeling. Cromwell never more truly represented the views of the Army than when he forbade his first Parliament to alter the Instrument, and the distinction which he drew between fundamentals which must be accepted, and circumstantialia which might be altered, is but an echo of the tenth article of the Agreement of January, 1649.

In any discussion of the political principles set forth in these debates one other point requires special notice. Speakers on both sides refer to society and government as resting on a contract. "The King," says Cromwell, "is King by contract;" referring no doubt to the fundamental contract between King and people which James II. was voted to have broken (p. 366).

"We are under a contract," says Ireton, and he proceeds to argue that on this contract or covenant between man and man private property both in land and goods is founded (p. 263).

Mr. Pettus goes further and states the origin and purpose of the contract.

"Every man is naturally free . . . when men were in so great numbers that every man could not give his voice . . . men agreed to come unto some form of government that they who were chosen might preserve propertie" (p. 312).

As these debates explain the political views of the soldiers, so they elucidate the character and position of their leaders. Fairfax

The first of these is the fact that the  
 of the world is not a uniform one. It is  
 a world of many different peoples and  
 of many different customs and habits.  
 The second is the fact that the world  
 is not a static one. It is a world of  
 constant change and of constant  
 progress. The third is the fact that the  
 world is not a perfect one. It is a world  
 of many different problems and of many  
 different difficulties. The fourth is the  
 fact that the world is not a simple one.  
 It is a world of many different  
 things and of many different people.  
 The fifth is the fact that the world is  
 not a single one. It is a world of many  
 different parts and of many different  
 people. The sixth is the fact that the  
 world is not a uniform one. It is a  
 world of many different peoples and  
 of many different customs and habits.  
 The seventh is the fact that the world  
 is not a static one. It is a world of  
 constant change and of constant  
 progress. The eighth is the fact that  
 the world is not a perfect one. It is a  
 world of many different problems and  
 of many different difficulties. The ninth  
 is the fact that the world is not a  
 simple one. It is a world of many  
 different things and of many different  
 people. The tenth is the fact that the  
 world is not a single one. It is a world  
 of many different parts and of many  
 different people.

The world is a very different place  
 from what it was in the past. It is a  
 world of many different peoples and  
 of many different customs and habits.  
 The world is a very different place  
 from what it was in the past. It is a  
 world of many different peoples and  
 of many different customs and habits.

himself was absent from the most important debates on account of illness (p. 226). When he was present he contented himself with presiding in silence, and left Ireton and Cromwell to expound his views. "He was of few words in discourse or council," observes Whitelock, and according to Sprigge he suffered at times from an impediment in his speech (*Anglia Rediviva*, ed. 1854, p. 325).

Ireton is a statesman to whose influence and ability historians have hardly done justice. To his military talents, he added great business capacity and indefatigable industry. Ludlow attributes his death to his "immoderate labours," and another of his associates in Ireland describes him as "seldom thinking it time to eat till he had done the work of the day at nine or ten at night, and then will sit up as long as any man hath business with him" (Cooke, *Monarchy no creature of God's making*, 1652). Bred a lawyer, he possessed a larger stock of political and constitutional knowledge than his fellow officers. Clarendon terms him "a scholar conversant in the law, and in all that learning which had expressed the greatest animosity and malice against regal government" (*Rebellion*, xiii., 175). He had also what Whitelock styles "a working and laborious brain and fancy" (*Memorials*, ii., 163). He was fertile in formulas, ingenious in devising constitutional expedients, and skilled in putting the political ideas of himself or others into legal shape. As no one amongst the superior officers possessed these varied qualifications to the same extent he naturally became the penman of the Army. Imperfect though the records of these debates are, they show that Ireton was also an excellent and sometimes an eloquent speaker. Above all he was a ready debater, expressing himself clearly and forcibly, swift to seize an argumentative advantage, to press home the consequences of a principle, or to point out the importance of a precedent. Confident, however, of the soundness of his own logic, he did not always fairly appreciate the strong points of an opponent's case. His defect was that he was too positive and dogmatic, and sometimes his brother officers lost their tempers and declined to be dictated to. Less sym-





pathetic than Cromwell, he roused more opposition, and was eager to convince when Cromwell was anxious only to unite. Over Cromwell Ireton exercised great influence—the influence which a man of definite views exercises over a friend whose mind is not yet made up about everything.

Ireton's own political position has been much misunderstood. Clarendon represents him as "so radically averse from monarchy and so fixed to a republican government, that if he had lived he would either by his counsel and credit have prevented" Cromwell's assumption of the protectorate, or "publicly opposed and declared against it" (*Rebellion*, xiii., 175). "Ireton," says Burnet, "had the principles and the temper of a Cassius in him. He stuck at nothing that might have turned England to a commonwealth" (*Own Time*, 1833, ed. i., 85).

As a matter of fact, so long as monarchy could be maintained, Ireton sought to maintain it. Throughout 1647 and 1648, he was the leader and spokesman of the moderate party in the Council of the Army. The constitution was always in his mouth; he was anxious to change as little of it as necessary and to preserve as much of it as possible. His declarations on this point are clear and frequent.

"I doe not seeke, nor would not seeke, nor will joyne with them that doe seeke the destruction of Parliament or Kinge. Neither will I consent with those, or concurre with them who will not attempt all the wayes that are possible to preserve both, and to make good use, and the best use that can be of both for the kingedome (p. 233). Where I see thinges would not do reall mischief I would hold to positive constitution. . . . soe long as I can with safetie continue a constitution I will doe it (p. 350). Rather then I will make a disturbance to a good constitution of a kingedome wherein I may live in godlinesse, and peace, and quietnesse, I will parte with a great deale of my birthright" (p. 324).

Hence the vigour with which he opposed manhood suffrage.

"To me, if there were nothing but this, that there is a constitution, and that constitution which if you take away you leave nothing of constitution, and consequently nothing of right or property [it would be enough] I would not goe to alter



that, though a man could propound that which might in some respects bee better. unlesse it could be demonstrated to me that this were unlawful or that this were destructive" (p. 340).

Manhood suffrage, he maintained, would destroy property. Men might be elected who had no stake in the country, and they might vote down all property (pp. 303, 314). It would endanger liberty itself.

"If there be anything at all that is a foundation of liberty itt is this, that those who shall chuse the lawmakers shall be men freed from dependance upon others. . . . I think if wee from imagination and conceits will go about to hazard the peace of the kingdom to alter the constitution in such a point, wee shall see that libertie that we see much talke of and contend for shall bee nothing by this our contending for it, by putting it into the hands of those that will give it away when they have itt" (p. 341).

Ireton's objections to the principles on which the demand was based were still stronger than his objection to the demand itself. He denied altogether that any man had by birthright any claim to a voice in the government of his country. He denied with equal bluntness the theory that no man was bound to obedience to any government, unless he had by his own free consent put himself under that government (pp. 302, 319). Arguments about abstract justice he abhorred and dreaded:

"When I do hear men speake of laying aside all engagements to [consider only] that wild or vast notion of what in every man's conception is just or unjust, I am afraid and do tremble att the boundlesse and endlesse consequences of itt" (p. 264).

Equally keen was his perception of the danger of appeals to natural rights and the law of nature.

"I wish wee may all consider of what right you challenge that all the people should have right to Elections. Is itt by the right of nature? If you will hold forth that as your ground, then I thinke you must deny all property too. . . . By that same right of nature, whatever it bee that you pretend, by which you can say one man hath an equall right with another to the chusing of him that shall governe him, by the same right of nature hee hath an equall right in any goods he sees,



meate, drinke, clothes, to take and use them for his sustenance. . . . If upon these grounds you doe paramount to all constitutions hold uppe this law of nature, I would faine have any man shew me where you will end" (p. 307 ; cf. pp. 303, 310, 314, 336).

In the heat of his opposition to these theories of abstract right which he heard put forward, Ireton denied all political rights to persons not freeholders possessing a permanent interest in the country (pp. 302, 307, 314). He answered the Levellers of 1647 very much as Lord Braxfield answered the Reformers of 1794.

" 'A government in every country,' said Braxfield, 'should be just like a corporation, and in this country it is made up of the landed interest, which alone has a right to be represented. As for the rabble, who have nothing but personal property, what hold has the nation of them ? They may pack up their property on their backs and leave the country in the twinkling of an eye, but landed property cannot be removed.' " (*State Trials*, xxiii. 231.)

In practice, however, Ireton was not prepared to push his opposition to the extremes to which his logic might have carried him. Throughout he announced his willingness to support a reasonable extension of the franchise, providing it was limited "to the fix't and settled people of this nation," to "men who are like to be freemen and not given up to the wills of others" (pp. 313, 314). At the same time no one was more eager for parliamentary reform of other kinds:

"I will not arrogate that I was the first man that putt the Army upon the thought either of successive Parliaments or more equall Parliaments ; yet there are some heere that know who they were putt us upon that foundation of libertie of putting a period to this Parliament, that wee might have successive Parliaments, and that there might bee a more equall distribution of elections" (p. 333).

According to Wildman and Sexby the soldiers had engaged for their own freedom and for the recovery of their lost liberties (pp. 318, 322). They demanded securities for their personal rights, and a voice in the making of the laws they had to live under (pp. 318, 354). Securities for the rights of parliaments would not satisfy



them, for they feared the parliament's privileges as much as the King's prerogative.

In Ireton's view the war had been originally undertaken "for the liberty of Parliaments," that the law of the Kingdom might be determined by its representatives in Parliament, and "that the will of one man should not be a law" (pp. 327, 333). Circumstances had led him to demand now not only securities for the liberty of parliament, but guarantees as to its composition. "The rectification of the supreme authority of the Kingdom," "the reduction of the supreme authority to that constitution which is due to the people of this Kingdom," he declared to be the necessary condition of the Army's submission to parliament, and a condition which it was justified in using force to obtain (pp. 267, 268). Further than this Ireton was not prepared to go. The devices by which he sought to reconcile the real sovereignty of the House of Commons with the concession of a nominal share in legislation to the House of Lords, and a strictly limited veto to the Crown, are significant illustrations of his statesmanship. He thought to effect a political revolution by a change in the machinery of the constitution without any alteration in its outward form, and without a corresponding change in the spirit of the nation.

Equally conservative in temper, Cromwell set less value on constitutional forms and had less faith in political machinery. He was not, as he expresses it, "wedded and glued to forms of government" (p. 277). His criticisms of the "Agreement of the People" deal not so much with the justice or even the expediency of the particular things proposed as with the general danger of change:

"This paper doth contain in it very great alterations of the very government of this kingdom, alterations from that government it hath been under, I believe I may almost say since it was a nation, and what the consequences of such an alteration as this would be, if there were nothing else to be considered but the very weight and nature of the things contained in this paper, wise men and godly men ought to consider" (p. 237).

Other parties might be formed and put forth other schemes for





new constitutions equally plausible and seek to impose them on the country:

“And if so what do you think the consequence of that would be? Would it not be confusion? Would it not be utter confusion? Would it not make England like Switzerland, one county against another as one canton of the Swiss is against another? And if so what would that produce but an absolute desolation—an absolute desolation to the nation” (p. 237).

He proceeds to lay down the principle that, in proposing a change of such importance, the first thing to consider is “whether, according to reason and judgement, the spirits and temper of the people of this nation are prepared to receive and to go along with it” (p. 237). “In the government of nations that which is to be looked after is the affections of the people, and that I find which satisfies my conscience in the present thing” (p. 369). Compared with the question of its acceptance by the people, the question of the particular form of the government was unimportant. This he illustrates by the case of the Jews, governed successively by patriarchs, judges and kings. Under all these governments they were happy and contented. Moreover, there were other things more important than the form of the government. Even if you change the government to the best possible form of government “it is but a moral thing.” “It is but as Paul says, ‘dross and dung’ in comparison of Christ.” Why should they contest so much for merely temporal things? If every man in the kingdom were so bent on realising his ideal of government that he was willing to fight to establish it, the state would come to desolation (p. 370). His conclusion was that the question what government were fittest for the kingdom should be left to Parliament to determine. The Army should content itself with insisting that parliaments should be fairly elected, regularly summoned, and dissolved at regular intervals (*ibid*). Though willing to use force against the Parliament when he regarded it as necessary, he was anxious to limit the use of force to cases in which its employment was absolutely indispensable. “I do not know that force is to be used except we



cannot get what is for the good of the kingdom without force" (p. 202, *cf.* p. 185). The good of the people he declares to be the principle by which his actions are guided.

"That's in all our hearts to profess above anything that's worldly the public good of the people, and if that be in our hearts truly and nakedly I am confident it is a principle that will stand" (p. 259). "If that be not the supreme aim of us under God our principles fall" (p. 277).

This does not mean that the wishes of the people are to be implicitly followed. "That's the question, what's for their good, not what pleases them" (p. 209). In these words there is already a foreshadowing of the Protectorate.

Many other illustrations of Cromwell's character are to be found in these speeches. The good sense with which he checks the exaggerated religious enthusiasm of some of his friends is specially notable. Accused of want of faith when he mentions the difficulties in the way of establishing the new constitution proposed by the Agitators, he replies:

"I know a man may answer all difficulties with faith, and faith will answer all difficulties really where it is, but we are very apt all of us to call that faith which perhaps may be but carnal imagination" (p. 238).

His dignified vindication of himself from the charge of being affrighted by difficulties is admirable (pp. 247, 289). Equally good is his criticism of the claims of those who assert themselves to have received special revelations or "particular dictates from God" (pp. 375, 379).

Other characteristic passages are his description of his own eager and sanguine temperament (p. 191), and his blunt answer to the charge of seeking his own ends (p. 179).

The speeches of Goffe and Rainborow are valuable to all who care to understand the temper of the Puritan soldier. Goffe was one of the mystical enthusiasts whom every revolution produces. As he was an Englishman of the 17th century his enthusiasm took



a religious rather than a political turn. He rejoiced to belong to that "company of saints" who were "chosen, and called, and faithful," whose desire was to "follow Christ wheresoever he goes" (p. 283). Cromwell in difficulties generally moved for a Committee; Goffe invariably proposed a prayer-meeting. Always "seeking the Lord," he fancied that he heard the voice of God answering his prayers, inspiring his resolves, and dictating his actions (pp. 253, 283, 374). In the revolutions which he witnessed he saw God "throwing down the glory of all flesh," the kingdom of Antichrist falling, the "latter days" beginning, and the personal reign of Christ at hand (p. 282). Three-quarters a Fifth Monarchy man, he differed from most of that sect in one very important particular. They were eager to realise their visions by force and at once, and believed that the day of their triumph had come. Their feeling is well expressed in the hymn of one of their preachers:

"The Lord begins to honour us,  
The Saints are marching on;  
The sword is sharp, the arrows swift,  
To destroy Babylon."

Goffe on the other hand possessed a certain patience; a willingness, as he said, to wait upon the Lord till his own season. "It may be there is a better opportunity that the Lord will give us" (p. 284).

Rainborow was much more like a modern radical. His enthusiasm was more secular and more national. He, too, talks of "God's people," but it is merely as an occasional synonym for "the honest men of England" (pp. 246, 273). He had fought for no vision of a heavenly kingdom, but for his own freedom and "for the liberties of the people of England" (pp. 272, 273). By the people of England he meant neither an oligarchy of country gentlemen, nor a limited number of freeholders, but "every man born in England," "the poor man," "the meanest man in the kingdom" (pp. 304, 305, 309). If rich men alone were to have votes,



"One part would make hewers of wood and drawers of water of the other five, and so the greatest part of the nation be enslaved" (p. 320). If there were to be no extension of the franchise "what shall become of those many men that have laid themselves out for the Parliament of England in this present war, that have ruined themselves by fighting, by hazarding all they had? They are Englishmen. They have now nothing to say for themselves" (p. 320).

Political difficulties might beset the attempt of the Army to secure the liberties of the nation, but they must be faced and vanquished as at Marston or Naseby.

"Let difficulties be round about you, have you death before you, the sea on each side of you and behind you, are you convinced the thing is just, I think you are bound in conscience to carry it on; and I think at the last day it can never be answered to God that you did not do it. For I think it is a poor service to God and the Kingdom to take their pay and to decline their work" (p. 246).

How long Cromwell and Ireton would be able to hold back men like Goffe and Rainborow, and how far they would be able to control them, depended mainly on the turn which events took. More than once during these debates, voices had been heard demanding the punishment of the King. "Is it just or reasonable," asked Wildman, "to punish with death those that according to his command do make war . . . and then to say that there is a way left for mercy for him . . . who was the great contriver of all" (p. 384). At present, however, only one of the higher officers seems to have backed this demand. On November 11, Colonel Harrison "made a narration concerning some things that lay upon his spirit," denounced the King as a man of blood, and demanded his prosecution. Cromwell and Ireton answered him, the one putting several cases in which murder was not to be punished, the other urging that the Army ought not to take unlawful ways even to bring a delinquent to justice. Cromwell and Fairfax added that the question of the King's future treatment ought to be left to the determination of Parliament (pp. 417, 418). But whether in the end the Army would be content to leave the question to parliament did not depend entirely upon the wishes of its leaders.





It remains to add a few words on the editing of the papers printed in this volume. William Clarke appears to have taken copies of letters received at the head quarters of the Army, and to have kept draughts or copies of most of those sent out. These were transcribed into books at a later period. In the case of those now printed, this transcription took place in 1662. In some instances these original copies and draughts have survived, but they were generally destroyed when the second copy was made. In the same way the rough notes of the debates taken in shorthand in 1647 were not written out till 1662. The result of this system is seen in the large number of clerical errors which the letters contain. Where both copies have survived a comparison of the text of the two sometimes supplied a correction. At other times, in order to complete the sense, it was necessary to supply the words which are printed between square brackets. Some verbal slips were also corrected, and the punctuation frequently amended.

In the debates, errors of all kinds were still more frequent, though fortunately the most important speeches are also the best reported. In some cases the meaning of the speakers was obscured by inversions in the order of words, clauses, and even sentences. Sentences were often mixed together, and the tail of one sometimes inserted in the middle of the next. Where possible these mistakes of the reporter, or the transcriber of his notes, have been corrected, and the alterations made pointed out in the foot notes. Other obscure passages have been elucidated by supplying words between square brackets, or suggesting paraphrases below. The text has been also amended by omitting useless repetitions, and inserting stops. A certain amount of emendation of this kind was absolutely necessary in order to make the debates intelligible, but as few changes as possible have been made.

The Index will be contained in the second volume.

---



## THE CLARKE PAPERS.

---

[*Letters from a correspondent in London to a friend in the Army.*]

London, 28th March, 1647.

I pray tell the Comptroller,<sup>a</sup> that it is the opinion of freinds heere that the Generall doe send to the severall Regiments the order of the House of Commons<sup>b</sup> to hinder the promoting of the Petition, and also the Copie of the Petition, but in noe kind to expresse any thing in that order which may anger the Souldiers,<sup>c</sup> and only to desire the officers to observe the order of the House of Commons and to be carefull in the same.

It is likewise the opinion of freinds heere that all our freinds doe not say any thing to hinder the Souldiers to goe with the 17 undertakers, for they doe but watch to gett advantage of any in our Army that shall give out speaches to hinder the Souldiers for going. But yet they doe all thinke this, that it may be told them, that most of those 17 undertakers doe not meane to goe to Ireland but only to drawe their men upp to the sea side and never

<sup>a</sup> Captain Richard Deane, Comptroller of the Ordnance. Peacock, *Army Lists*, ed. 2, p. 101.

<sup>b</sup> March 27. *Commons' Journals*, v., 127.

<sup>c</sup> The petition is given in the *Old Parliamentary History*, xv., 342, and in *The Journals of the House of Lords*, ix., 114. According to Waller the petition was drawn up about March 22, and then presented to the Convention of officers. *Vindication*, p. 51. The same day an engagement was drawn up and signed by 29 officers nudertaking to serve in Ireland. They are probably the 'undertakers' referred to.



meane to goe, as Colonell Fortescue, Colonell Harvey, Colonell Sheffield, Sir Robert Pye, Lievtennant Colonell Jackson.

All our freinds heere doe thinke these 17 undertakers will prove very knaves in their designs and therefore that wee doe lett them goe on quietly. Thursday is the day to name the Generall that shall goe for Ireland. Bee carefull to whome you speake, for Fincher<sup>a</sup> is there but for a Spie.

London, 30 March, 1647.

I have write to the Generall, that the Lords have voted to send for him to the Parliament<sup>b</sup> (I thinke the Lords are all madd). Lett every man fitt himselfe with patience, for hee shall have a tryall to the purpose. Tell Mr. Saltmarsh<sup>c</sup> now is the tyme of tryall; since these warrs began there was never such a tryall of Men.

London, 30 March, 1647.

Yesterday the House satt very late in the night about the Army. They have voted all those that had any hand in the Petition to be proceeded against as Enemies to the State, and have sent for Commissary Generall Ireton, Colonell Hammond, Lieutennant Collonell Hammond, Collonell Lilborne, and Lieutennant Colonel Pride to appeare before the House.<sup>d</sup> They have likewise sent for Major Generall Skippon privately to come with all speed to the

<sup>a</sup> Quarter-Master-General of the Horse; v. Waller's *Vindication*, p. 51, and Sprigge, *Anglia Rediviva*, ed. 1851, pp. 60, 218.

<sup>b</sup> *Lords' Journals*, ix., iii.

<sup>c</sup> John Saltmarsh, a leading Independent preacher; see Fuller's *Worthies*, ed. 1811, ii., 519; Hanbury, *Historical Memorials*, iii., 74, 167; Rushworth, vii., 944.

<sup>d</sup> The letters which led to this vote are printed in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 115; the declaration against the petitioners was drawn up by Holles: see Ludlow's *Memoirs*, ed. 1751, p. 71, and Waller's *Vindication*, p. 62. This Declaration, passed March 29, was erased by vote of June 3, 1647. *Commons' Journals*, v., 129, 197. It is printed in the *Old Parliamentary History*, xv., 344.



Army.<sup>a</sup> They have likewise ordered that those foote that are to bee transported shall have one moneths pay of their Arreares and a fortnights advance when they are on shippboard, and the Horse to have a moneths pay when they are over, and this to be performed, but when, they must not question.<sup>b</sup> There is likewise orders to be givē immediately for the seperatting of the Forces intended for Ireland from those that are intended to be disbanded some miles distance, for feare those that intend not for that service should pollute the other, and all this bussinesse ariseth from an information that one of the Army gave to Colonell Harley which the House will not divulge.

London, 30 March, 1647.

Much adoe there was on Satturday last at the House about your Army. The Cittizens grumble vilely and will be satisfied with nothing but that you be presently disbanded, and they say nor will they trust you to goe for Ireland with your own Commanders unlesse first the Army be purg'd of Sectaries as they call them. A great stirr is made about the Petition<sup>c</sup> (term'd Independant) to which hands were getting in London, and some were committed about it, but Major<sup>d</sup> is againe discharged upon Baile, nor will the Petition I understand be thus stifled; but (tis said) the Petitioners or a great company of them will attend the House dayly to have their Petition restored, and that they may be allowed the libertie as others to make knowne their grievances, or

<sup>a</sup> Skippon was summoned from Newcastle on March 29, and voted by the Commons to command the forces destined for Ireland, with the title of Field-Marshal (April 2). This vote was agreed to by the Lords on April 6. *Commons' Journals*, v., 133; *Lords' Journals*, ix., 122. He accepted the command with considerable reluctance, and resigned it on July 21, 1647. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 138, 153, 348; *Commons' Journals*, 129, 156, 176.

<sup>b</sup> 27 March, 1647, when Clotworthy delivered the report of the Commissioners sent to the Army. *Commons' Journals*, v., 127.

<sup>c</sup> This petition is printed in the *Lords' Journals*, ix. 82; see also Godwin, *Commonwealth*, ii. 277.

<sup>d</sup> Major Tulidah: see Lilburne's *Rash Oaths unwarrantable*, 1647, p. 35.





otherwise they will appeale to the Kingdome in Generall. The Petition of your Army is likewise much talked of, some for it, and others against it. Some have been suspended in London for preaching being not ordained, yet they preach notwithstanding, as Mr. Knowles,<sup>a</sup> &c. One thing more much talked of in London, both new and strange newes, Mr. William Sedgwick, brother to Obediah, is lately come to London from the Isle of Ely, and prophesies that the World will be at an end within foureteene dayes, Christ then coming to Judgment, and that Christ appeared to him in his study the last weeke at Ely and told him soe much. Severall Ministers went to discourse with him the Last Lords day but he refused to enter into argumentation with any of them further then this, that it was reveal'd unto him the World would be at an end within few dayes: thus much is talked of in London generally, but withall they say hee is distempered in minde, and say others, for soe much as he discourses he talkes very sencibly.

Since the writing of the former I understand that the Commons satt all the day yesterday and untill tenn at night in further debate of your Army; and it was strongly aimed at, to say noe further, to have the whole Army presently disbanded, and upon the result of it was voted that your Army both the Horse and foot should be disbanded, excepting only three Regiments of Horse,<sup>b</sup> vizt. Collonell-Gen. Pointz, Collonell Bethells, and Collonell Copley's. You may see by this how the tyde turnes, and how soone all the soe lately much admired services of your Army are forgotten. Nay the Cittizens or many of them have raised a new aspersion against you, that you are all at this present in armes and stands upon your guard at the Head Quarters at Walden, and this is the great talke at this present and soe confidently reported. I did not my selfe

<sup>a</sup> Hanserd Knollys.

<sup>b</sup> *Commons' Journals*, v., 128; Godwin's *Commonwealth*, ii., 285. The vote was that these three regiments should be part of the 5,400 horse to be still maintained.



knowe what to thinke of it, as conceiving in truth you had just cause soe to doe; but I went to the Secretary<sup>a</sup> and hee assured mee the contrary, and I have not been backward to tell some of the cheife Ringleaders their errors in reporting it.

A NARRATIVE OF THE PROCEEDINGS AT SAFFRON-WALDEN  
SINCE THE COMMISSIONERS OF PARLIAMENT CAME  
THITHER CONCERNING THE SENDING OF PART OF THIS  
ARMY INTO IRELAND.

Fryday the 9th of April 1647. The Committee at Derby house wrote unto the Generall, that the Houses had designed part of the Army for Ireland and that they had referr'd it to a Committee, to conferre with his Excellencie and the Officers how they might be sent over, and to drawe out such as shall ingage for Ireland from the rest of the Army into a body, desireing the Generall to give them the best assistance hee can for the effectuall transaction of that service. This Letter came to the Generall's hands April 13.

And the same day came another Letter to the Generall's hands from the Committee at Derby house dated Aprill 12th, expresseing that they had appointed a Committee to come to conferre with the Generall and Officers to drawe out such of his Forces as were willing to engage in the service of Ireland according to the Votes of both Houses, desireing him to have his Officers ready at the head Quarters at that time that the buisnesse may be effected with speed.

The same day the Generall yssued forth his Orders to the severall Regiments in the Army, that all the feild Officers in every Regiment and the Captaines and Lieutennants of every Troope of Horse

<sup>a</sup> The Secretary was John Rushworth, Secretary to the General. This letter I take to be written by Gilbert Mabbott, once Rushworth's servant, one of the persons who regularly supplied news-letters to the army, and a familiar acquaintance of William Clarke's. He was most likely the writer of the three previous letters also.



and Company of Foote should be in person at the head Quarters that were employed about in relation to the service of Ireland.

Thursday Aprill 15th. The Commissioners<sup>a</sup> came downe to the Generall's Quarters, and after they had dined with him spake with him in private and in his chamber communicated unto him the Votes of both Houses and their Instructions, and withall declared that they were informed there was some speaches cast abroad in the Army to disaffect the People from the service of Ireland to the much retarding of that bussinesse, which they thought fitt to acquaint the Generall withall to the end it might be prevented. And for the better prevention thereof offered to the Generall the draught of a Declaration which they brought with them ready written to be published in the Army.<sup>b</sup> The Generall told them that if soe bee they could make it appeare there were any such in this Army that did goe about to hinder others that were willing to goe in this service he desired they might be made knowne, and hee would proceed against them and see them punnished; and for publishing a Declaration to his Army, as if in his opinion they were guiltie of giving such obstructions, hee thought it might not be convenient unlesse hee had prooffe of it, however he would when all the Officers did attend the Commissioners declare his intention in furtherance of that service, and give them it in charge to promote it though they should not be disposed to goe themselves; and besides there were expressions in the said Declaration to this purpose, that some persons did endeavour a retardment of that service by secrett objections and discouragments, and doth thereby require the Officers and Souldiers of the Army to discover such person as shall offend in the premises that he may be imprizoned and further punnished &c. For the Generall soe farr forth to adjudge his Army guilty before any prooffe made that there were any that

<sup>a</sup> The report of the Commissioners is printed in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 152. Sir William Waller gives a detailed account of their mission in his *Vindication*, pp. 77-93. See also Rushworth, vi., 457, 460, 463.

<sup>b</sup> Waller, p. 89.



did retard the service hee thought was very hard to have it put upon them, especially considering he offered the Commissioners soe freely to punnish any of the Army they could informe against.

Whilst the Generall and Commissioners were thus conferring together, the Officers were adviseing among themselves in the Church by way of preparation what to answere to the Commissioners at the meeting, and accordingly chose a certaine number of Officers to speake for all the rest, who afterwards coming downe to the Generall's Quarters (being nere 200 Officers) by command from him at the Commissioners desire, the Commissioners came downe to them and acquainted them with the Votes of both Houses and the substance of what they had in Commission to say in pursuance thereof.<sup>a</sup> Whereupon the Officers desired to knowe what satisfaction they could give to these particulars following which formerly were propounded at their first meeting vizt.

1. To represent their desires to knowe what was done in referrence to the last Propositions sent unto the Parliament by way of Quærie.

2. To represent, that all those who in their owne person did not ingage for Ireland would be ready to promote the service.

3. That if the same conduct they have had, under which God hath soe exceedingly blest this Army and Kingdome, might be continued also as to the service of Ireland, it would conduce much to their encouragement and personall engagement.

It is to be observed that as these Officers were speaking for the rest propounding to receive satisfaction in the conduct &c. it being said by some of the Commissioners they spake only their owne sence, the Officers cryed out, All, All,—Declareing thereby their unanimity in those desires. Neverthelesse by the mouthes of those that were intrusted by the Officers to speake in their names, they freely offered their service in promoting that service severall times though they did not engage themselves in their persons. Whereupon the Commissioners declareing that it was not needfull for any

<sup>a</sup> Waller, p. 82.







that did not intend the service in their owne persons to attend any longer, most of the Officers departed to their severall charges, and the Towne (before very full) was of a suddaine emptied.

It may not be omitted to observe what the Generall said at that meeting in the presence of the Commissioners and all the Officers, both at the first meeting and afterwards, Expressing how necessary the worke was, and that who ever did not intend it in their owne persons should lay their hands to it, and use many other arguments to incourage that worke. And it is also observed what Representation was made thereof from the Commissioners here to the committee at Derby House, as by the Letter from the committee at Derby House of the 17th of Aprill appears: vizt. That the Generall did publish amongst the Officers his oppinion of the honour and importance of that service and also of his dislike of any practice that might disrepute the same, and did also command that however any of their owne Resolutions might stand disposed, they should neverthesse not prejudice but rather promote in reference to others; which care of the Generall to remove all impedements in a worke wherein this Kingdome is soe neerely concerned the Committee were very senceible of, and did returne him thanks, and further desire him to proceed to declare the same as hee shall see occasion (which indeed hee did to every Officer that came to him afterwards that was not present at that meeting). And further the Letter saith, If you please to publish the same, it may be the better knowne to the Officers and Souldiers, and wee conceive it may the better produce the effect intended in it.

Upon this intimation from the Committee at Derby House, of publishing something in writeing, though they left him at libertie whether he would publish any thing or not, the Generall was pleased to drawe a letter to be written to the Colonell or Cheife Officers resideing with each Regiment in the Army, to publish to their Officers and Souldiers how much his desire was to promote that service, and that if they were not disposed themselves yett they should make the votes knowne, and his desires for the incourage-



ment of itt, and imediatelie issued out to Sir Hardresse Waller's and other Regiments copies of that Letter, and the Votes of both Houses inclosed, to bee published by reading the same att the Head of every Regiment as by the Letter heerafter mencioned appeareth.<sup>a</sup> And withall, after such time as some copies were delivered out, sent a copy of the letter to the Commissioners that they might bee pleased to take notice of itt, and to give itt to such officers as had subscribed to goe for Ireland to make use of for the furtherance of that service if they thought fitt.

The next morning after these Letters were issued out Mr. Jessop, Secretary to the Earle of Warrwick and the Commissioners, wrote a Letter to Mr. Rushworth letting him knowe that he had it in command from the Earle of Warwick and the rest of the Commissioners, to desire him to move his Excellencie to forbear issuing forth any more of these Letters to the Collonells whereof the copie was delivered last night, untill they had represented to his Excellencie their sence thereupon, as by the Letter appears. Hereupon the Generall was made acquainted therewith, and a stopp made of yssuing out any more of those Letters, till towards evening there came a Letter from the Commissioners here present letting the Generall knowe that they were not satisfied with the coppie of that Letter he had sent them; they conceiv'd that an intimation from them, that such discouragments were scattered in the Army, was a sufficient ground for his Excellencie to take notice that there were obstructions of that nature, and to incert the same in his Letter to the Regiments, and to expresse a strict and peremptory injunction, they conceiving the word desire [not] to be sufficiently vigorous to effect their desires thereupon to his Officers &c., as by the Letter of the 19th of Aprill appears; and in pursuance of this advice and intimation they sent a draught of a letter to the Generall, in such expressions as they thought it was fitt for the Generall to publish, wherein they would have the Generall to declare unto the Army,

<sup>a</sup> The letter is printed in Rushworth, vi., 461; for the comments of the Commissioners, see Waller, p. 85.



that hee was informed of some discouraging arguments had been cast among the Souldiers, which if really soe hee cannot but interpret it a fruit of disaffection to the welfare of this Kingdome and Ireland. At this passage the Generall was not satisfied,<sup>a</sup> having not received any information of Weight in the least kinde of any persons in the Army discouraging the service, or any thing that would beare that construction. Whereupon Mr. Jessop, who came with the Letter, told the Generall hee had in command to acquaint him for his satisfaction, that Captaine Audley had said in the presence of the Generall, that those that were now soe forward for the service of Ireland were not worthy to come neere to his horse tayle.

Upon this Letter the Generall did contrive an answeare in writing to this purpose,<sup>a</sup> that hee was ready to comply with them in what may conduce to the furthering of the service of Ireland and effect their desires, and that though the word 'require' was not expressed in it, it being his constant course to use the word 'desire' to his Officers, hee doubted not but it would find a ready obedience; and acquainted them further, that he had sent for Captaine Audley, whome they had informed against for speaking words in his presence to the prejudice of the Irish service, to give their Lordshipps satisfaction in what hee said; and withall desired their Lordshipps to informe him of any person in the Army that did any thing to the obstruction of the Irish service, and hee would proceed against him and see him punished. To this answeare of the Generall's there was never any reply made, but (as wee are informed) a post sent to the Committee at Derby House.

Lords Day: Aprill 18th. There came 16 private souldiers of Collonell Lilburne's Regiment, (all of his own company), and acquainted the Generall that their Lieutenant Colonell<sup>b</sup> had commanded them to march the next morning earely towards Cheshire, that the speech was they were to goe for Ireland, and that their

<sup>a</sup> Waller, pp. 85, 86.

<sup>b</sup> Nicholas Kempson.



Colonell's Capitaine Lieutenant<sup>a</sup> told his Company that they should not have any pay till they had advanc'd their Quarters further from the Army, never acquainting them they were to goe for Ireland. Whereupon the Generall went to the Commissioners, and acquainted them with the occasion of the coming of the Souldiers, and that he desired there might be all faire dealing used by such Officers as did intend for the service of Ireland, which they desired to further; and he did conceive it would much contribute to the furtherance of that worke, that the Officers did drawe their Regiments to a Rendezvous and declare publicly to the Souldiers the votes of both Houses for their encouragement to goe; and that such as would goe might be drawne a part, and according to the order given by the Commissioners immediatly to march to those Quarters they had appointed them. Whereupon the Commissioners said that they thought the course was very faire, and that just as his Excellencie came in they had given that order, but the Souldiers came to complaine an houre before, declareing their ignorance of any such intention, which indeed occasioned that Order.

Munday: Aprill 19th, the Generall received a letter (early in the morning) from the Committee at Darby House to stay his journey to London,<sup>b</sup> whether hee had purposed that day to have gone to fall into a course of phisick for the recovery of his health, being brought very lowe by neglecting it; in which Letter the Committee doe expresse that the bussinesse of sending forces for Ireland did goe on very vigerously, and that it hath been very much promoted by the Generall's care and countenance, and doubted not but in a very few dayes to compleat the number designed, especially if the Generall continue there.

Upon this, the rather (though the Generall before it came had determined not to goe because hee did conceive the Commissioners here would take it as an obstruction to the service) but because it is mentioned in this Letter with such confidence that the worke

<sup>a</sup> Robert Fish. See *Lords' Journals*, ix., 154.

<sup>b</sup> See Waller, pp. 90, 91.







goes on prosperously, that the number designed will be compleated in few dayes. It is conceived the occasion of their mistake might arise by the subscription of the Life Guard and most of the Officers of Colonell Lilburne's Regiment.

That those Officers in whom they did first of all relie for the great encouragement in this service doe now withdrawe themselves from their former personall engagement in it, as namely; Colonell Harley, Colonell Fortescue, Colonell Butler, Lieutennant Colonell Jackson, Major Fincher, Major Alford, Major Duckett, Major Gooday, Captaine Robotham,<sup>a</sup> and divers others who subscribed to that paper delivered to the House of Commons, for which thanks was returned unto them, and upon confidence of these men's engagements and interests in the Army the House might reasonably conceive the number designed might have been procured.

It is to be observed That of all the Horse Officers in the Army from Captaines upwards not above six Captaines, Majors or Colonells have subscribed to goe in person: vizt. Colonell Sheffield, the Lord Calfeild, Captaine Howard, (and Sir Robert Pye if hee yet goe) and two others, and not one Captaine in all Colonell Butler's Regiment nor in Colonell Sheffield's doe ingage in person, of both which Regiments, by reason of their Colonell's engagement, the House had the greatest confidence; and besides Captaine Pennyfather and Captaine Burgis of Colonell Butler's Regiment had their names sett in the paper without their privity, which was presented to the House.<sup>b</sup>

For the Foote Officers that have subscribed the Commissioners knowe their names best because they have the list, but as wee are informed Colonell Herbert and Lieutennant Colonell Kempson are the two only Field Officers; the rest are Captaines and they

<sup>a</sup> A list of these officers is given in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 114, viz. Edward Harley, Richard Fortescue, John Butler, Richard Fincher, John Alford, Charles Duckett, Sampson Gooday, Robert Robotham, and others, thirty in all.

<sup>b</sup> Thomas Pennyfather and Benjamin Burges. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 114.



but a few, and some inferiour Officers under them. For Colonell Herbert, before hee went to the Commissioners, hee declared<sup>a</sup> to Mr. Rushworth and others, that it was in vain for him to goe and delude the Commissioners by telling them his Regiment would goe, when he knewe their full purpose was against it, except one Officer that had some few men, that would goe with him; and besides hee declared, that upon the first intention to send that Regiment into Ireland, the Officers and Souldiers did unanimously declare they would not stirr unlesse they had their full arrears; which was true, for he wrote soe in a letter unto the Generall under his owne hand ready to be produc'd. But after his coming to the Commissioners they engaged him, and presently gave him an order to march away with his Regiment towards Chester. Only Captaine Shorte<sup>b</sup> who had formerly a longing desire after Ireland, subscribed to goe with him and a Lieutennant or two, and accordingly the Generall gave the said Colonell an Order to Rendezvouz his Regiment upon Fryday the 23rd of Aprill at Hitching in Hertfordshire, where he hath power to draw away what men he could gett; Hee tooke his leive of the Generall and said hee must now serve his Lords and Masters.

For Lieutennant Colonell Kempson, hee and the rest of the Officers of Colonell Lilburne's Regiment<sup>c</sup> most greivously abused the Commissioners by telling them that hee had the consent of the whole Regiment to goe intire, which as conceived was a maine ground that the Commissioners did write to Derby House that the worke went on soe prosperously. For when some of his Officers came to drawe forth five of the Companies of Ireland, they were very much incenst against their Officers, holding jointly together not to goe, teareing the staffe and collours from Captaine Peckham,<sup>d</sup> who, as was supposed, had the greatest influence of any Officer in the Regiment, who hath been to make his complaint to the Com-

<sup>a</sup> See Rushworth, vi., 468.

<sup>c</sup> Rushworth, vi., 460, 463, 467.

<sup>b</sup> Nathaniel Shorte.

<sup>d</sup> Christopher Peckham.



missioners and would insinuate as if the Colonell (who is most innocent) had occasioned itt.

It is likewise remarkable the carriage of this Lieutennant Collonell<sup>a</sup> who Aprill the 20th when the Regiment was drawne to a Randezvous to see who would goe for Ireland, and whoe not; hee, whilst Colonell Lilburne was reading the Generall's Letter and Parliament votes to five companies, carried away fower companies with their collours without ever acquainting them with the Votes of the Parliament; and his misdemeanour was the greater in that he kept the Souldiers pay and would not give them a penny, and therefore the Souldiers seeing their Officers goe, the colours and the money goe, though they had noe minde to goe themselves, yet followed. But it hath produced this effect that Aprill 21st Captaine Weldon's<sup>b</sup> company (one of the fower) is returned back to the Regiment and say all the rest will followe; soe this man's carriage brings a disrepute upon their proceedings this way and by consequence a great disservice to the Parliament, and deserves blame. For those five companies where Colonell Lilburne was, after the Votes were read all those that would goe for Ireland were drawne out, who were in number threescore and one more. For Captaine Peckham's company they mutinnied, beat their Captaine, and would not come to the Randezvouz.

And whilst they were at the Randezvouz Lieutennant Generall Massey<sup>c</sup> came and told them for their incouragment, that Colonel Herbert<sup>d</sup> was already marching with his Regiment towards Cheshire, Captaine Orpin,<sup>e</sup> who was sent as one to beare witnesse of Colonell Lilburne's carriage, being of Colonell Herbert's Regiment, had much a doe to forbear to tell the Lieutennant Generall hee was mistaken, and Mr. Woolsey who came with him upon that occasion knewe the contrary.

<sup>a</sup> Nicholas Kempson.

<sup>b</sup> George Weldon.

<sup>c</sup> On Massey's unpopularity see Waller, *Vindication*, p. 84.

<sup>d</sup> William Herbert.

<sup>e</sup> Edward Orpin.



The Officers of Colonell Fleetwood's Regiment are returned and bring this accompt, that the Regiment was drawne to a Rendezvous, Captaine Howard made knowne his desires, but the conditions was mightily slighted; though as to his owne person the Regiment was civill, hee could not gett, with all the interest he had in his owne troopes nor in the Regiment, more than a Quarter Master and five men: which soe much troubled him as he is gone to London in discontent, and speakes hardly of the Commissioners for putting him upon such a fruitlesse bussinesse.<sup>a</sup>

[*News-letter from London.*]

Queenstreete, 24 Aprill, 1647.

Yesterday was a great day in the House. Severall particulars were in debate, butt amongst the rest Mr. Hollis brought in an Apology which was pretended to bee from the Souldiers in the Army to their Commission Officers, the same that was brought to Colonel Whalley's Regiment; which though itt is soe weake and impertinent that few or none of the Army (especially if they have one dram of sence or reason) will owne, yett hee indeavoured to make itt the sence of the whole Army, and soe lanch't forth into high expressions against itt.<sup>b</sup> Some tooke him uppe nimble and handsomely. Tuesday is assigned for the great day for the disbanding of the Army, when, how, and on what consideracion, nothing being done yesterday about itt, though some thinke six weekes pay enough, as much as Massies men had, and say, They deserv'd as much as this Army.<sup>c</sup> The Spiritts of the Godly heere

<sup>a</sup> Howard was a captain in Fleetwood's regiment, who offered to serve in Ireland, and was appointed by Parliament Colonel of a regiment of horse to be raised for that service. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 135, 137; Rushworth, vi., 459, 463. A list of officers who volunteered for Ireland, with their respective regiments, is given by Rushworth, vi., 460—464, and in the report of the Commissioners before referred to.

<sup>b</sup> *Commons' Journals*, v. 153-4; for the Apology itself see the *Book of Army Declarations*, p. 9.

<sup>c</sup> On the disbanding of Massey's brigade see Sprigge, *Anglia Rediviva*, ed. 1854, p. 314, and Hollis, *Memoirs*, ed. 1699, p. 81.







are very much carried out in expectation and hopes of great things from the Army, and are farre from our too cold and remisse posture. I feare wee shall sadden their hearts by being too fearfull of Man.

[*News-letters from Saffron-Walden.*]

Walden, 25 Apr. 1647.

Captain Rolphe with some others of Colonel Hamond's Regiment came this morning to Colonel Lambert and the rest of them which are appointed by the Generall for the affaires of the Army, with this account: that Captain Stratton hath drawne of their Regiment 36 men, Captain Ohara most of his Company, and another Lieutenant half his Captaine's Company; by this way of dealing with all their Souldiers, making of them drunke, and then gett them to sett their hands, which when they have done, they make them believe they have power to force them.<sup>a</sup> Which way cannott bee good, as I conceive, for when they come to understand that itt is left to their owne pleasure, and can noe way bee forced by the Officers, they will fall away from their Officers as Colonel Lilburne's doe, there being almost two of those Companies which were marched away so strangelic from the Rendezvouze by the Officers returned, and may fall from them every day. All Colonel Fortescue's 6 Companies march away compleate and Adjutant Gray Colonell over them. None of Colonel Hewson's can be perswaded to goe for the service upon those termes tendred. Horse they can gett none as I heare, the Parliament must thinke of some better termes for this Army, if they intend any should goe for that service. I suppose you have an account of Captain Dormer's<sup>b</sup> expressions to his Souldiers att the Generall's Quarters, how that the intention of

<sup>a</sup> On Hammond's regiment see Rushworth, vi., 466; the officers mentioned were Edmund Rolphe, William Stratton, and Charles O'Hara. On Stratton see also *Lords' Journals*, ix., 141.

<sup>b</sup> On the conduct of Captain (or Major) Francis Dormer see his own letter, *Lords' Journals*, ix., 153, where a full account of the disturbances in Colonel Robert Lilburne's regiment is given.



their drawing out was nott to promote the Irish service butt to goe against an independant Armie that was gathering together in the Kingedome, and many other wicked expressions, telling his Souldiers that hee would only desire them to tarry with him untill they saw what the Independents did, and then hee would give them passes to goe home, promising them their Arreares.<sup>a</sup>

Walden, 26 Apr. 1647.

On Thursday last Colonel Howard drew forth Colonel Fleetwood's Regiment and propounded the service of Ireland to them, butt nott one man offered himself. Colonel Fleetwood's owne Troope made a short Narration of what they intended, which was they were sorry they could nott give that answer the Colonell expected as to engage for Ireland, which they could nott till they were secured for acts done heere as Souldiers, their arreares satisfied, and to know their Cheif Conductor, and what way they should subsist there. Colonel Sheffeld's Regiment was drawne forth on Friday, and they gave the like answer; one of their answers is inclosed.

Wee, the Souldiers in Captain Evelyn's<sup>b</sup> Troope, desire,  
First,

Before any man of us list our names for Ireland, wee desire satisfaction for our arreares heere in England according to the Parliament's manifold Declarations and Remonstrances.

Wee desire a satisfactory answer to our Officers Request given in to their Commissioners when they first came downe to treat with the Army about going for Ireland; and before such time as these are answered, wee shall desire, neither to list, nor provide ourselves for that service. Though wee are perswaded that that Kingdome stands in neede of helpe, yett wee conceive that wee are nott soe to helpe them as wholly to deprive our selves of our just rights and liberties, and of receiving satisfaction for former services.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> James Gray, Adjutant-General of the Foot.

<sup>b</sup> Captain Arthur Evelyn.

<sup>c</sup> See Rushworth, vi. 465



*[List of the Strength of the Army in Officers and Men.]*

## Horse.

Generalls Regiment . . . .	70 . .	519
Lt. Generall's . . . .	66 . .	514
Com <sup>ary</sup> Gen <sup>l</sup> . . . .	68 . .	496
Fleetwood's . . . .	70 . .	584
Whalley's . . . .	65 . .	517
Riche's . . . .	68 . .	590
Pye's . . . .	65 . .	529
Sheffield's . . . .	64 . .	504
Grave's . . . .	70 . .	560
Butler's . . . .	64 . .	467
Life Guard . . . .	11 . .	100
	<hr/> 681	<hr/> 5380

Dragoones . . . .	115 . .	0803
	<hr/>	<hr/>

## Foote.

Generall's Reg <sup>t</sup> . . . .	126 . .	1220
Major Generall's . . . .	125 . .	1284
Hamond's . . . .	126 . .	894
Rainsborough's . . . .	124 . .	1181
Pickering's . . . .	125 . .	1073
Ingoldsbye's . . . .	126 . .	945
Lambert's . . . .	126 . .	1089
Welden's . . . .	124 . .	1060
Harley's . . . .	125 . .	1064
Waller . . . .	126 . .	1074
Herbert . . . .	124 . .	1177
Fortescue's (estimated) . . . .	125 . .	0750
	<hr/> 1502	<hr/> 12811



Horse . . . . .	0681 . . .	5380
Footc . . . . .	1502 . . .	12811
Dragooners . . . . .	115 . . .	00803
Two Comp <sup>s</sup> firelockes and train . . . . .	22 . . .	166
	<hr/>	
	2320	191160
		<hr/>
		2320
		<hr/>
		21480 <sup>a</sup>

THE PROCEEDINGS OF THE ARMY UNDER THE COMMAND  
OF HIS EXCELLENCIE SIR THOMAS FAIRFAX, COM-  
MENCING MAY 1ST, 1647.

[*A circular Letter to the Commanders of the different Regiments.*]

Major Saunders,<sup>b</sup>

The Generall was pleased during his absence, or untill the Major Generall<sup>c</sup> came, to give Colonell Hammond, Colonell Rich, Major Watson,<sup>d</sup> and us whose names are hereunder written, or any three of us, full power and authority to give orders upon all usuall occasions to the Army, as also for the calling of the severall Regiments of

<sup>a</sup> The regiments in Yorkshire and the North are not included, as this list refers merely to the New Model Army under the command of Fairfax.

<sup>b</sup> Major of Colonel Robert Hammond's regiment; probably the Thomas Saunders mentioned in the *Life of Colonel Hutchinson*, ii., 134.

<sup>c</sup> Skippon, arrived in London about April 27, took his seat in the Commons on April 29, and was sent down to the Army by order of April 30. Rushworth, vi., 463, 472, 474.

<sup>d</sup> Robert Hammond, Nathaniel Rich, and Leonard Watson.





Horse and Foote to a Rendezvouz, to the end that such Officers and Souldiers as intend for the service of Ireland may be drawne out of the severall Regiments and Companies; and for their better encouragement according to our Instructions wee have here sent you inclosed the Generall's Letter<sup>a</sup> and Votes of both Houses, desireing that you will cause them to be read to the Officers and Souldiers in your Regiment at their Rendezvouz; and if any of your Companies shall march intire for that service wee thinke fitt to certifie you, that it is the Generall's pleasure and order that they march with their Collours; but if only some few shall dispose themselves for the service, then that the Colours remaine still with the Company. If you please to encourage all who incline thereto, wee shall certifie your good service therein to the Generall who will very well resent it, and wee shall rest

Your etc.

Walden, May 3, 1647.

*Letter sent to the Collonells or cheife officers of the respective  
Regiments.*

Sir,

Wee desire you upon receipt hereof forthwith to repaire hither your selfe, with some Commission Officer of every Troope in your Regiment, to give unto us the best accompt you can concerning the present temper and disposition of the Regiment, in relation to some late discontents reported to have been amongst the Souldiers; and to receive from us an accompt of such things as wee are appointed by the honourable House of Commons to impart to the Army, concerning the care of that House for their Indempnity and Arrears; you are with the said Officers to be here with as much

<sup>a</sup> The letter of April 18. Rushworth, vi., 461.



speed as possibly you may, but at farthest faile not to be here on Thursday next.<sup>a</sup>

We remaine

Your assured freinds

P. SKIPPON.

OLIVER CROMWELL.

H. IRETON.

Walden, May 3<sup>d</sup>, 1647.

[*News-letter from Saffron Walden.*]

Walden, 3 May, 1647.<sup>b</sup>

Yesterday the Major Generall, Lieutennant Generall, and Commissary Generall came to Walden, and about halfe an houre after the afternoone sermon was ended there came Lievtennant Colonell Tubbs<sup>c</sup> to my Quarters, and informed mee that there was Intelligence given to him that morning that there was private orders sent by Collonell Middleton, Collonell of the Auxillaries to the severall

<sup>a</sup> Compare the letter of May 3, addressed by these three officers to the Speaker. Cary, *Memorials of the Civil Wars*, i. 205. On April 30, Skippon communicated to the Commons a letter addressed to himself, Fairfax, and Cromwell by the agents of eight regiments of Horse. Rushworth, vi., 474; Hollis, *Memoirs*, p. 89. The letter is printed in Cary's *Memorials of the Civil War*, i., 201, and in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 164. Skippon, Cromwell, Ireton, and Fleetwood were ordered forthwith to go down to their charges in the army and employ their endeavours to quiet all disturbances in the Army, *Commons' Journals*, v., 158.

<sup>b</sup> In the MS., the date assigned to this letter is April 3. The references to Skippon and the mention of the meeting of the officers render this date impossible, and a second news-letter written the same day supplies the correct date.

<sup>c</sup> Should be Jubbes. John Jubbes entered the Army in April 1643, and after serving in Manchester's Army, became a member of the New Model. He was now Lieutenant-Colonel of Hewson's regiment. He left the army in April, 1648, for reasons stated at length in his *Apology touching his proceeding in a paper called Proposals for Peace and Freedom*, 1648.



Captaines that commanded under his command for the being in a posture ready to rise against the Army, which he was informed should be that night; whereupon he raised his Regiment for their better securitie, and drew them to a *Randevvouz*; but after hee had spoke with the Major Generall, Lievtennant Generall, and Commissary Generall and informed them of the buisnesse, they came together to the Major Generall's Quarters, and satt very late about it. In the meane time Captaine Reynolds<sup>a</sup> came in and informed them that the horse kept guards, fearing they should be surpriz'd; the Souldiers in the Towne were much nettled at the news of Collonell Hewson's Regiment,<sup>b</sup> and every man provided powder and bullett and kept guards with their swords drawne at the street corners, and durst not be knowne what was the reason they stood there; the other promised not to goe to bed that night, but this day all is very still and quiett. The examination of the Souldiers concerning this buisnesse was taken this day by Mr. Margetts,<sup>c</sup> who I knowe hath given you a full accompt. Orders are sent out for the Officers to meete here at Walden on Thursday next.

Walden, May 4<sup>o</sup> 1647.

*Advertisements for the managing of the Councells of the Army.*<sup>d</sup>

1. Appoint a Councell for the ordering the undertakings of the Army.

2. Keepe a partie of able penn men at Oxford and the Army,

<sup>a</sup> Captain John Reynolds, of Cromwell's own regiment of horse, knighted by Cromwell, June 11, 1655. See his life in *Noble's House of Cromwell*, ed. 1787, ii., 418.

<sup>b</sup> Rushworth, vi., 480.

<sup>c</sup> Thomas Margetts, a clerk of the Judge-Advocate of the New Model, Dr. John Mills. For a sketch of his life see *Calendar of State Papers, Domestic*, 1658-9, p. 378.

<sup>d</sup> No indication is given of the authorship of this paper. It was probably however the work of Edward Sexby, for it closely resembles his subsequent letters in the policy it advocates.



where their presses be employed to satisfie and undeceive the people.

3. Hold correspondence with the Soldiers and well affected freinds in the severall Counties of the Kingdome, for prevention of uproars, interposition of parties, for disarming the disaffected, and secureing the persons of projecting partes, namely Presbiterians.

4. Doe all things upon publique grounds for the good of the People, and with expedition to avoid devisions and for the prevention of Blood-shed.

5. Bee vigilant to keepe yourselves from supplanting, secrett, open, or undermining Enemies, especially prevent the removall or surprizall of the King's person.

6. Present the generall Officers with the heads of your demaunds in writing, and subscribed, and soe agreed to by your appointed trustees in behalfe of yourselves and other Souldiers.

7. Desire redresse of all arbitrary and exorbitant proceedings throughout the Kingdome, and, according to the Covenant, call for publique justice and due punnishment to be inflicted upon all offenders whomesoever.

8. Crave [give?] some reasons for desireing Reformation in civill justice, and query how the pretended and respective ends of our taking up Armes hath been performed or comported with, according to the mutuall provocations and Declarations of Parliament put forth to engage us in bloud, and for ought wee yett find to entangle us in stronger chains, and to clapp upon our necks heavier yoakes or servitude.

9. Permitt not the Army to be long delayed, or tampered with too much. least Resolution languish and courage grow cold.

10. Persuade the Generall Officers not to depart from the Army untill these stormes be overblowne, the Subiects libertie confirmed, the Kingdome settled, delinquents detected and punished, the Souldiers and Sufferers satisfied and rewarded; in all which respects their conduct was never of more consequence, nor their interest in





the Army more usefull, the present Employment being most important, tending to the consummation of all our cares, and the good concluding by the Establishment (in peace and truth) of the worke of the whole Warre.

11. That according to the premisses wee may bee speedily and respectively performed with, after which the Army may be reduced and [to ?] such a number of Horsemen as is not inconsistent with the Kingdome's safety; the rest, being justly dealt with in point of due and deserved pay, with honourable rewards for their severall services, may be disbanded, after an Act of Indemnity be made, and satisfaction be given as aforesaid not only to this Army, but to all the well-affected souldiers and subjects throughout this Kingdome.

*Letter from<sup>a</sup>*

I pray you tell Lievtenant Generall Cromwell that all our freinds doe hope the Army will be well united by this meeting (Horse and Foote), and for this time lett them demaund nothing but what is relating to them as Souldiers. It is much wondred that my Lord Pembroke<sup>b</sup> should see rayle against the Army at a Common Councell the other day that 4,000 Cavaleers were in it (it is noe time to disband us) the King and all his party did wholly rely upon the Army; and spoke to the Citty as if it had been true the Army had sent to the King<sup>c</sup>. Be carefull to whome you speake, but doe what you can to unite the Officers to the Army in demanding things just and honourable relateing to them as Souldiers; if wee fall [on too] softly I perceive wee shall loose by it.

London, May 5th, 1647.

<sup>a</sup> No name is given, but simply an unintelligible cypher. It is probably by the author of the previous paper.

<sup>b</sup> Rushworth vi., 476. With reference to Pembroke's statement about the number of cavaliers in Fairfax's army see *Memoirs of Sir P. Warwick*, p. 253.

<sup>c</sup> See the Tanner MSS. in the Bodleian Library, vol. Iviii., f. 46.



Upon debate yesterday of the Citty Militia,<sup>a</sup> the Lord Mayor and Aldermen Addams had like to have been seized of; hee had better never been named hee came of with such disgrace.

*Relation from Walden.*

Your desire in yours (which I communicated to Mr. Sparrow and other freinds) was granted before you came. I never found the Officers more unanimous. I was this afternoone with Captaine Goffe, Captain Grigson, Mr. Butler, Lieutenant Lloyd,<sup>b</sup> and other officers, and their resolutions at present are to drawe upp something in writing to expresse the Reasons why they cannot engage for Ireland; as, that they will see things settled here in relation to their priviledges and liberties before they engage abroad; that they will rather suffer with the godly party heere than goe away and leave them to the mercy of their Adversaries, &c. Collonell Sheffeld's Regiment continue their Red Collours, and say they are England's Collours, and that they will not goe for Ireland. Some of the Foote about Cambridgshire give out that they will goe for Holdenby and fetch the king, which gives much offence and scandall. The inclosed was printed at Cambridge, and sent to the High Constable's to gett subscribed and then presented.<sup>c</sup>

Walden, 5 May, 1647.

*Letter from London.*

Heere is little of moment since your departure worth the note-

<sup>a</sup> On this debate see *Commons' Journals*, v, 161; Rushworth, vi., 472, 478.

<sup>b</sup> William Goffe, and George Gregson, captains in Colonel Harley's regiment, and Lieutenant Griffith Lloyd. Rushworth, vi., 471.

<sup>c</sup> A petition for the disbanding of the army purporting to come from the inhabitants of the Eastern Association.



ing, but the continued clamours of the Citty against the Army, and which are now more high and generall then ever, occasioned by a late<sup>a</sup> speach of the Earle of Pembrock's at the Common Councill in London Monday last, telling the Cittizens that did they knowe soe much as hee, coming from the Fountaine's head of the Army, they would not scruple the lending of the 200,000*li.*, to be ridd of the Army and to have them disbanded, for that all the hopes (hee told them) of the King and malignant party depended upon that Army, and that more he said they had sent to the King, delivered him a Petition and had received an answeare of it, and that all this put together hee conceived it were high time they were disbanded. This and more was spoken and which hath raised such a clamour in the Citty will not easily be taken off. This businesse truly I conceive concernes the Army in a high manner to consider of, both for vindication and reparation. The honest Petition of the well-affected Cittizens was on Tuesday last turned out of the House of Commons, with this answeare, that they approved not of the Petition nor manner of the representation.<sup>b</sup> Noe grievances are to be represented to the House, you may perceive, though in a way of Petition, but what they shall approve off. Alasse! poor England! when will be a remedy for thy malladies? or when will thy Egiptian Bondage end? Our good God sett us free in Jesus Christ, and make us denisons not of an earthly but of a heavenly habbition, for there is noe peace to be expected amongst the sonnes of men. The House of Commons on Wednesday called for the Ordinance for conferring the 2,000*li.* per annum on Lievtenant Generall Cromwell, which was read and committed; they likewise ordered the ordinance for the Generall's 5,000*li.* to be read on Tuesday next.<sup>c</sup>

London: May 6th, 1647.

<sup>a</sup> May 3.

<sup>b</sup> Rushworth, vi., 478; *Commons' Journals*, May 4, v., 162.

<sup>c</sup> *Commons' Journals*, v., 167.



[*A Letter from London.*]

Sir,

The rumour of the Armies holding intelligence with the King spreads a pace in the Kingdome, nay as farr as France, as lettres Thursday testifie, and it gives some cause to suspect that report was first framed there. It's talked of in the Citty further, [that] now your Army beginne to keepe strict guards and fortifie the head Quarters, nay say some further Major Generall Skippon will be deteyned untill the Army be satisfied in their demaunds; theis are London stories, and another I would be satisfied in, that a part of your Army should have been surprized by the Trayned Bands of Essex.

Sir,

On Thursday Sir John Sidley of Kent was three times called to the Barre in the House of Commons about Colonell Kenrick's Indictment mentioned in the Occurrances, for taking away of Horses &c. And upon full debate, though Mr. Hollis and Sir William Waller pleaded hard on his behalfe, hee was voted to be put out of Commission of Justice of Peace, out of the Militia, and made incapable of bearing office in State and Comonwealth.<sup>a</sup>

[*Narrative of the Proceedings of Skippon and the Commissioners at Saffron Walden, May 6, 7, 1647* <sup>b</sup>].

Yesterday<sup>c</sup> many of the Officers of the Army came to this Towne, but by reason that few of the officers of Horse came, the meeting

<sup>a</sup> Rushworth, vi., 479; *Commons' Journals*, v., 163-4, May 6, 1647. Sir John Sedley is the person meant.

<sup>b</sup> Rushworth, vi., 480.

<sup>c</sup> Friday, May 7. The Commissioners give an account of their first meeting in a letter to Lenthall, dated May 8. Cary, *Memorials*, i. 267.





was deferr'd till this day. The examination was yesterday taken of Lievtennant Wheeler a Lievtennant in Colonell Hammond's Regiment, to this effect: that being the other day at Royston the Postmaster there shewed him the Coppy of a Paper which was given him the day before by one Mr. Seely, who tooke post for the North there and gave himselfe out to be the Duke of Buckingham's Chaplaine; the paper was the same verbatim with that which goes abroad concerning the Army and his Majestie, which (it seemes) the Earle of Pembroke declared to be true. The Postmaster further said that the Chaplaine told him that hee needed not to feare the truth of it, for that Sir William Armin had a Copie of it at Huntington, and yesterday Sir William sent a Copie of it to the Lievtennant Generall. The Officers, being acquainted with this designe and the Earle of Pembroke's relation are very sencible of the dishonour of the Army therein, and will desire reparation, as will appeare by the inclosed, which yesterday was resolved upon to have been offered to the Major Generall and the rest; but by reason it was apprehended the Officers could not give their sence without the Souldiers, it was not mentioned at all, therefore I was charged not to communicate it to any, and soe I have sent it in short hand for your owne use.

This day the Officers mett in the Church, not above 30 Officers of Horse and about 150 of Foote. The Feild Marshall Generall first made a Narration of the occasion of their comming downe to quiet the distempers of the army, that they should make it appeare that they were faithfull hearted for the publique good, that it would be conscience, justice, reason, and faithfullnesse in them that were Commanders to contribute their utmost endeavours for the alleying of all distempers. After the ending of this Speech the votes of the House were read, and Copies of them given to the severall Officers of each Regiment there present to be communicated to their Regiments. Upon this, the Commissioners (for soe I may call them) withdrawing, the Major Generall returned and expressed



himselfe concerninge the service of Ireland, how just and necessary the worke was, and how that service was altogether unthought of or unsought for by him ; I shall at present give you what he said in this particular at large, and leave the full accompt of the rest till the next: his words were,

Gentlemen,

I shall now desire you to heare mee a few words in relation to the bussinesse of Ireland ; I believe it is not unknowne or unapprehended by your selves how just, and honourable, how necessary that worke is. Altogether unthought of, unsought for, it hath pleased God to call mee to be imployed there if he please, a service truly that my exceeding unfittnesse for made mee exceeding unwilling to (to speake in relation to my selfe, for concerning the service you have heard what I have exprest). If I should have been excused, as I did most humbly and earnestly desire (I speake still in relation to my selfe), I would rather have been content to have laid downe all my other Imployments at the Parliament's foote, by their command, then to have undertaken this, for which I am soe unfitt. It is not a title, or preferment, or any selfe advantage that moves mee in this at all, but singly this, which I desire you to lay to heart, that it should not be said such a man was the delayer, was the obstructour, or the prejudicer of such a service singly. This consideration made mee in conscience to God to undertake that worke, with this expression, though it shall please God I perish in the undertaking of it, God's will be done. It was said on all hands, as I have many times heard, that if I would engage, a considerable parte of the Army, Officers, and Souldiers would engage; if I did not engage they would not engage. Truly, as farr as still relates to myself, I have a great deale of reason to looke upon this as a testimony of love and respect from the Army. Now since that obstruction is taken away be pleased to take notice of it, and if my engagement may be any furtherance to the bussinesse I pray lett it appeare; and accordingly you may please to make knowne



to your severall Regiments that, for those reasons I have partly mentioned, I was exceedingly desireous to decline it, upon that single consideration I was moved to entertaine it, that if my going may be any furtherance (God in mercy goe with us), I should improve it to the furtherance of that service. I thought good to communicate [this] to you ; though it was not in our commission, yet it was not without advice and consent of those Gentlemen.

To this Colonell Hammond replied,<sup>a</sup> that at the meeting of the late Commissioners at Walden there was something offered by him in relation to himselfe and many officers of the Army, that they had that knowledge of the Major Generall's great honour, gallantry, and honestie, that they should as freely goe with him as any, except the Generall and Lieutennant Generall ; not that his going would be an occasion of drawing the Army ; and that if the Commissioners or others had given him information otherwise, they have not done that which is right.

To this the Major Generall thus exprest himselfe: You will be pleased iudiciously, Christianly, seasonably, cordially, dilligently, and faithfully to take into consideration all those things I have propounded to you, and againe I beseech you, as men of integritie and honesty, improve your utmost interest for the service of the Parliament and of Ireland. Then Colonell Butler<sup>b</sup> desired to be satisfied concerning the considerable part of Arreares, whether the Parliament would doe any thing more then they had already voted viz<sup>t</sup>. 6 weekes pay, in regard the Souldiers would be desireous to knowe of them. The Commissioners replied that they could not assure any further satisfaction, and that it did not lye in their powers to interperett the votes of the Parliament. Then some Officers desired to knowe the meaning of the House concerning distempers. To this the Commissioners answered, that the cheife occasion of their coming downe was upon the letter of the 8 Regiments of

<sup>a</sup> See Rushworth, vi., 458. Colonel Robert Hammond.

<sup>b</sup> Colonel John Butler.



Horse; yet the House had been informed of some other proceedings which they conceiv'd illegal and out of discontents, and they were to receive the distempers of the severall Regiments, and for such as could give an accompt that their Regiments were free from distempers, they doubted not but it would be acceptable to the Parliament and to them. After this there was some debate whether the Officers then present should deliver in any thing of what they apprehended was occasions of discontents, and resolved that till they had consulted with their Souldiers it would be but halfe worke, and therefore nothing of their greivances should be then offered; hereupon the Officers were appointed to their severall charges to take the accompts, and to meete the Commissioners at Walden to-morrow sennight; and in the meane time, if they should be provided to give a full accompt the Commissioners declared that they should stay here, unlesse they had a command to the contrary, and receive the same from such as should be prepared before that time. The Officers are generally very unanimous, and I believe what will be proposed will be much according to the sence of the inclosed.

At the meeting Captaine Clarke of Sir Hardresse Wallers Regiment presented the inclosed Petition to Major Generall Skippon, desireing it might be publicly read, for the satisfaction of the Officers present and clearing of himselfe and the rest; but in regard it concerned themselves only it was not thought fitt to be communicated.

Walden 7 May, 1647.

[For the whole proceedings at this meeting, it is in shorthand, in the bundle upon Mr. Wragges Lettre, May 6th 1647.]<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> This note was probably written in 1662, when the letter was copied into the book from which it is now printed. Thomas Wragge was one of the two clerks to Rushworth, the Secretary of the Army. I take this letter to have been written to Rushworth by either William Clarke or Wragge, but probably by the former. Rushworth, as his letters in the *Fairfax Correspondence* seem to show, was in London most of the month, with Sir Thomas Fairfax.







[*Petition enclosed in the preceding Narrative*].

To the right honourable Major Generall Skippon, Lieutenant Generall Cromwell with the rest of the honourable Commissioners of Parliament at Saffron Walden.

Wee whose names are subscribed, being Officers in Colonell Sir Hardresse Waller's Regiment,

Humbly present,

That whereas wee with diverse other Officers are exprest in print and otherwise as ingagers of the present service of Ireland upon the termes lately proposed, contrary to 'our intentions and resolutions, wee having formerly declared that wee were not neither as yet are resolved for that service upon those propositions, wee cannot but with grieve and sadnesse of heart sencibly apprehend it to be a strange designe of some who through false reports have endeavoured to vaile the eyes of those in publique authority to the grosse abuse of Parliament and Kingdome, who by false informers are much deceived and the releife of Ireland obstructed and retarded through such apparant delusions; which likewise may possibly render us unfaithfull and dishonourable, if it shall be conceived wee have engaged and yet declyne the present imployment, which indeed was not by us undertaken.

All which wee humbly pray may be considered.

JOHN CLARKE, Capt.

RALPH WILSON, Lt.

JOHN TRAILKINS, Lt. (FILKINS?)

NATH CHASE, Lt.

EDWARD ALLEN, Ens.<sup>a</sup>

*Copie of the Letter from the Officers to the 8 Regiments.*

Sir,

When wee were in London there were three Letters delivered

<sup>a</sup> The names appended are corrected from Rushworth, vi., 466.



(the one to the Generall, the other two to us, all of the same effect) in the name of the 8 Regiments of Horse, whereof yours is one; which importing matter of dangerous consequence were imparted to the House of Commons, wee desire you to use your best endeavours to enquire where they had their rise, and to bring with you when you come on Saturday next<sup>a</sup> the best accompt thereof you can, and soe wee rest

Your very assured freinds

PHILLIPP SKIPPON.

OLIVER CROMWELL.

Walden, May 9.

The 8 Regiments are

The Generall's Regiment of Horse.

Lieutennant Generall's.

Commissary Generall's.

Colonell Fleetwood's.

Colonell Okey's.

Colonell Butler's

Colonell Sheffield's.

Colonell Rich's.

AT THE CONVENTION OF OFFICERS AT THE CHURCH IN  
SAFFRON WALDEN SATURDAY MAY 15: 1647.

*Severall Speeches of Major Generall Skippon and other Officers at  
the 2d meeting in Walden.*

Major Generall Skippon.

Gentlemen, Fellow Souldiers, and Christian Freinds.

Wee are heere according to appointment at our last meeting in

<sup>a</sup> 15 May. The letter referred to is that mentioned on p. 21, note a, the letter read in the House of Commons on April 30.



this place, to receive from you an accompt how you have improved your vtmost endeavours with your severall Regiments and Companies, to make them sencible of the care of the Parliament for them expressed in those votes that you have received from our hands concerning indempnity, arreares, and auditing of your accompts; and also to receive an accompt from you how you finde the temper of your severall Regiments, and this is the bussinesse for which wee are mett together at this time; and wee hope [you] have soe Christian like, soe judiciously, soe impartially, soe faithfully discharged your duties, as wee shall receive a very good accompt from you in relation to these things.

Lieutenant Generall Cromwell

Then said, that what the Major Generall exprest was the sence of them all.

Colonel Whalley.<sup>a</sup>

Sir,

I thinke it is the souldiers desire and request that you would give them three or fower howres respit to consider together, that soe they may present you with the whole bussinesse, because they are not prepared to give you a satisfactory answer.

Souldier.

They are not all the greivances of the Souldiers; they desire soe much time before they returne that they may answer other greivances.

<sup>a</sup> Colonel Edward Whalley, a life of whom is given in *Noble's House of Cromwell*, ii., 143.



Heere upon the 4 Officers advised together, and then the Major Generall spake as followes.

Major Generall Skippon.

In answer to that which Colonell Whalley desired in the name of the rest of the Officers or you heere present, if you be not at this present prepared to give us such an accompt as has been express in that I said before, you may have some howres respite; and let it be done with as much convenient speede as may bee, that wee may the sooner knowe it, and the sooner in discharge of our duties doe that that becomes us to doe. If the souldiers have anything to present, lett them doe it by their Officers, and wee shall take what is presented unto us into consideration, and in all faithfull heartednesse I hope towards God and man discharge our duties. One thing of my selfe; I shall be bould to desire, and to advise, and to admonish, as I have done formerly, that you will soe represent and soe adjutate things as may become your Christian profession, and as may become sober minded men, as may become servants to the publick.

1713399

Major Alford.<sup>a</sup>

Sir,

In obedience to those commands that wee had from you concerning that which you were pleased to give us in command in relation to the severall regiments, I thinke most of the officers have made a returne of what they have from the Regiments in writinge; as in particular to those two things you were pleased to speake of concerning indempnity and arreares, I have brought from my Colonell's Regiment an accompt in writeing. There are some other greivances also which lye upon the Regiment, which I have delivered to my Colonell and others I mett last night for that purpose.

<sup>a</sup> Major John Alford, of Colonel Rich's regiment, one of the subscribers of the engagement of March 22





Colonel Sheffield,<sup>a</sup>

That hee did not knowe by what authoritie the Officers mett. In obedience to your command, I have brought in the returne from my Regiment which I find to bee their greivance which with others I may bring in.

Lieutenant Colonell Jackson.<sup>a</sup>

My condition is the same.

*(The 4 Officers advised together.)*

Collonell Lambert.<sup>b</sup>

Give mee leave to speake something to what hath been already offerr'd.

Sir,

According to the directions which with the rest of the Commissioners were pleased to give the Officers of the Army att the last convention of them here, there hath been in several Regiments a perfect performance of what you then commanded; in the first place a faithfull publishing and makeing knowne those votes of the Parliament.

To the 2<sup>d</sup> part, which was to make a further search into the supposed distempers of the Army, they have made a dilligent inquiry thereinto, and have brought a returne thereof from the severall Regiments. They have likewise proceeded further into it, and have desired severall Gentlemen of this army, that they would be pleased to receive them, and come and collect out of them what are common, universall, generall to the whole Army, and as speedily as could be drawe them upp and represent them to yourselves. These were desired by the officers of the army and not sought by themselves; and I

<sup>a</sup> Thomas Sheffield, Colonel of a regiment of horse, and Thomas Jackson, Lieutenant-Colonel of Fairfax's foot regiment.

<sup>b</sup> John Lambert, succeeded in 1646 to the command of the regiment in the New Model which was originally Colonel Edward Mountague's.



thinke there is not a Regiment here that hath not made this their suite, and that whatsoever might relate to any one particular Regiment might be left out, and the generall greivances of the whole army represented. And this truly, as yet there hath not been time and opportunity to doe it, and it is their desire that you will be pleased to lett them have time till Monday morning for the perfecting of it.

Collonell Sheffield.

Whereas Colonell Lambert saith, that every Regiment hath made a returne of their proceedings, for my part I knowe nothing of it; and I conceive I, beinge Colonell of a Regiment, may knowe of it, as well as a trooper or an inferiour officer.

Major Fincher.<sup>a</sup>

Wee were to take an accompt from our Regiment, and wee were to returne the answeare to you, as wee conceive, and not to any other.

Collonell Lambert.

This way that is propounded and hath been taken is by the unanimous consent of all, both officers and souldiers, and if you take any other way then this wee cannot helpe your differring from it.

Sir,

There is nothing desired but that these things<sup>b</sup> might bee represented to the Feild Marshall and the rest of the commissioners here; if you will doe otherwise you may take your course. It was agreed by those that were present of the officers.

<sup>a</sup> Richard Fincher, before referred to, p. 1, was Major of Sheffield's regiment.

<sup>b</sup> These particular petitions of the separate regiments may be found amongst the Clarke MSS., vol. xli., ff. 105-127.



Wee did suppose that the meeting of those Gentlemen to whome wee did deliver upp the greivances had been by order of the Commissioners.

Captain Rainborowe.<sup>a</sup>

The command was generall to give a retorne, and not only to a particular.

I was at the Regiment when the Randezvouz was, and I was acquainted as well as the Colonell, though the Colonell be pleased to give the sence of the Regiment. They did give me their sence in writing, that there may bee noe mistake att all in the tender of their just greivances.

Colonell Sheffield.

I doe not deny that ; if you have delivered it, with all my heart, lett them make the best use of it they can: I only speake it as my sence.

Collonell Lambert.

I thinke it will be found when all is done that wee have not neglected our duties, but that wee have used all our interests to pacifie what was not faire in the army. When wee have done and presented what are the common greivances of the army to you, I make noe question but you will finde what wee say doth not proceede singly from us, but from the body of the army, and will appeare themselves what they are to yourselves and the world.

Major Generall Skippon.

Freinds,

In answeare to what Colonell Sheffield hath said I shall now only say thus much ; if Colonell Sheffield or any other officer can give

<sup>a</sup> William Rainborowe, of Colonel Sheffield's regiment, not the more celebrated Colonel Thomas Rainborowe. See *Lords' Journals*, ix., 195.



in the state of their Regiment, and an accompt of their endeavours according to what hath been before desired, wee shall now presently receive it; if any other particular officer hath any thinge, upon just ground and in sober manner, to make knowne concerning that Regiment, wee shall be willing to receive it.

I thinke it not amisse to lett you knowe how precious time is with us, how much an accompt is expected from us; and therefore, though wee are loath to deny soe reasonable a request of giving further time, a great part of you it seemes not being soe fully prepared to give us in an accompt of those things that wee have exprest, to morrowe by 5 of the clock in the afternoone, if God will, wee shall meet you here againe; because wee would willingly dispose and order our bussinesse soe as wee might loose as little time as wee could. And I thinke in relation to those things that wee are sent especially hither about to communicate to you the votes of the House of Commons and the sence of the Parliament, in that as it appeares since, and I shall tell you by and by, the resolution of the Parliament, soe farre as yet it appeares to us, and that you might fully knowe what wee can tell you to give you all the satisfaction that may be, I have received a letter even now which is from a very good hand, the Earle of Manchester that sits in the chaire of the Committee at Derby House, who is also Speaker of the House of Peeres, which doth assure mee that the Act of Indemnity is past large and full.<sup>a</sup>

*(The Letter read.)*

“Sir,

I have thought fitt to give you this accompt: that this day the House of Commons have passed an Act for Indemnity large and full. They have like wise granted a fortnight's pay to those that

<sup>a</sup> On the question whether this ordinance was sufficient to secure the army from danger see the opinion drawn up by Judge Jenkins, May 24, 1647, and published as a pamphlet, entitled *The Armies Indemnity*. He decides that it was not sufficient.





shall be disbanded, and a fortnight's advance more to those that goe for Ireland."

This is from the Speaker of the House of Peeres pro tempore, the Earle of Manchester.<sup>a</sup>

And truly, Gentlemen, though I did not in that particular advise with those gentlemen about it, yet I did by their advice and consent make knowne somethinge concerning Ireland the last day, of which I heare nothing since; I hope it will be soe considered of as a service not to be forgotten, not to be neglected, not to be hindred; and that I shall referre, as I did all the rest, to your impartiall, judicious, and faithfull consideration.

Lieutenant Goodhand.<sup>b</sup>

If it please your Honours, I am to certifie to your Honours concerning the condition of the Life guard.

Major Generall Skippon.

I pray you lett us see our buisnesse, and see it before us, and then wee shall doe as honest men, and I hope you will behave your selves soe too, and I can expect noe other from you.

Trooper.

There's a returne from our Regiment, I humbly desire it may be read.

Collonell Sheffield,

This is a meeting for officers, and if the troopers could come themselves, it had been needlesse for us to goe downe, and bring returnes of the sence of the Regiment.

<sup>a</sup> Rushworth, vi., 485, 489. *Commons' Journals*, v., 174, 181; *Lords' Journals*, ix., 192, 201. Manchester's letter must have been dated May 14.

<sup>b</sup> Andrew Goodhand of the Lifeguard.



Major-General Skippon,

It is more seasonable for us to receive all together, for I hope it is all our mindes not to hinder but further the bussinesse all wee can.

Lievtenant Goodhand.

Wee have call'd them together, and find them not in any dis-temper, and for indempnitie and arreares they returne thanks to the Parliament, and that they will lay downe their armes at the Parliaments command; soe much is presented for satisfaction.

There is a paper to satisfie more fully under Captaine Hall's hand.<sup>a</sup>

Captain Farmer.<sup>b</sup>

In answeare to those two for indempnity and arreares, there is the reply of my Colonell's Regiment.

Collonell Okey.

I heard my name mentioned for the Regiment; those papers which these gentlemen have delivered in are only for those troopers which are engaged for Ireland, and itt is not the accompt of the whole Regiment.

Captain Farmer.

Itt is the sence of those troopes that have engaged for Ireland.

Colonel Lambert.

If it please you, Sir, I shall offer thus much to you.

<sup>a</sup> Captain Henry Hall succeeded Charles Doyley as Captain of the Lifeguard. Sprigge, ed. 1854, p. 332; Rushworth, vi., 551.

<sup>b</sup> John Farmer, captain in the regiment of dragoons commanded by Colonel John Okey.



Major General Skippon.

Captain Farmer, everything shall be taken into consideration as farre as wee are able, and does concerne us to doe, in answeare to the trust reposed in us, when as wee see our bussinesse before us.

Collonell Lambert.

If it please you to heare a word or two concerning the bussinesse before you. It may be Colonel Sheffield and some of those worthy gentlemen that are with him are unsatisfied with our proceedings, thinking wee only have carried on this bussinesse, and not acquainted them with what was done. I shall therefore desire to offer the reason of our soe doing.

One speciall reason was, because himselfe and many of them have already engaged for Ireland, and being soe they are not like to have those influences fall upon them as those in England; and in regard it did not soe especially concerne them, wee thought them not soe proper to them to be acquainted with itt.

Another was, because wee found the greatest grievance of the army is the rejecting the late petition and representation that was intended to be presented to the Parliament by the mediation of the Generall. That him selfe and many of the rest of the worthy gentlemen did declare as noe grievance at all, and soe did refuse to joyne in it; and therefore wee could not represent that as a grievance which they did never assent unto.

This I speake to take off hard thoughts concerning us; and whereas you were pleased to desire a particular accompt to be drawne out of those returnes that are brought in by way of returne from the severall Regiments, wee must needs say wee knowe of severall papers that are brought in by way of returne from the severall Regiments; yet notwithstanding there was this caution with it, that if any one particular Regiment did represent anything particularly, which they presented as their owne desire, and not as the desire of the whole army, it was desired that they might



not be received, because it does not come as the desire of the whole army; and therefore, if wee should give them in, wee should be a little unfaithfull to that trust which was imposed in us, for wee must present some single things as the sence of the army; and therefore wee desire that you will give us as large a time as you can for the examining and compareing of the severall returns together; and then wee shall represent them to you altogether, as the generall and universall greivance of the army, from as many as have made application to us; which wee thinke is the whole army, or very neere itt.

Colonell Sheffield.

I would very gladly knowe by what authority they have done this.

Colonel Lambert.

Sir,

If you desire to knowe by what authoritie wee have done this, if it shall be demaunded authoritatively I doubt not but there will be given a satisfactory answeare; and truly, Sir, all that I offer'd was to noe other end but to take off those reflections which you may lay upon us, when singly wee have done nothing but that which concernes the bussinesse in hand.

Major General Skippon.

To that end you have given in particular papers.

Colonel Hewson.<sup>a</sup>

Many regiments of the Army in bringing in their grievances have desired some gentlemen here that they will collect them into one perticular summe, and present them to you; the desire of those that are sent over was to avoid confusion; in regard they could not

<sup>a</sup> John Hewson had succeeded to the command of Colonel Pickering's regiment of foot on the latter's death in December, 1645. Sprigge, pp. 167, 329.





be represented by many without inconveniencies, it was thought fitt to appoint some gentlemen as a committee to put things into a forme for us, and it was done by the generall consent of the officers of the severall regiments.

Major General Skippon.

I doe not know at present, Gentlemen, what wee can say unto you more, but to desire and perswade you to deale as effectually as you can to make manifest yourselves Christian and faithfull men, to proceede soe as there may be noe just exception taken at the manner of your proceeding as well as of the matter. To morrowe at 5 of the clock in the afternoone, if God will, wee shall be here againe, and receive those things in relation to the particulars that wee have diverse times prest you about, and shall receive any papers from any other that they shall thinke fitt to deliver in to us, and I thinke that may give satisfaction to all. If this be your sense, pray you speake.

The other three officers and Members of Parliament declared their assent.

*Lettre from the Troopers in Sir Robert Pies Regiment.*

Gentlemen and Fellow Souldiers,

Wee cannot but ecchoe the rebounds of our constant desires to the first petition, and by reason of the declaration against that, the resolution of all the souldiers in our regiment is to joyne in the letter to his Excellencie, as freely in their subscriptions (and every other way) as they at first did to the petition. It is our unhappinesse that wee are soe farre distant in quarters from the 8 regiments (our troopes being also apart from the other), by reason whereof timely notice cannot be given us to aggitate according to our reall intentions, which are to adde our selves to them intirely as one man, Colonel Graves regiment (excepting some officers) being of the same resolution, and much discontented they had not true in-



formation of the candor of that first petition. The subscriptions of our regiment (both to the first petition and last letter to the Generall) are in readynesse to be delivered according to directions, though their's cannot be expected in respect of their officers obstructions. Thus, blessing God for exciting such instruments as you, wee waite all opportunities for the provocation of justice and judgment, that they may runn downe like a mighty current, which is the earnest desire of all.

Your assured faithfull friends and servants

T. I. O. B. &c.

May 13th 1647.

The bearer hereof wee have intrusted for what you shall thinke fittinge herein, hee is to stay at the head quarters.

Address. For our honoured freinds Captain Gladman, Captain Berry, Captain Lawrence, Mr. R. or any of them at the head quarters, these<sup>a</sup>

HEADS OF PROCEEDINGS IN WALDEN CHURCH. SUNDAY.  
16 MAY, 1647.<sup>b</sup>

*(The Votes of Parliament read.)*

Major General Skippon.

. . . . . In those votes of the Army, and what sincere industrious and faithfull endeavours you have used to make them sencible thereof, and what distempers you finde in your severall Regiments, Troopes or Companies, that wee might knowe how you have in these particulars discharged your duties as conscientious Christians in the sight of God, and as men faithfull and obedient to the Parliament

<sup>a</sup> Captains John Gladman, James Berry, and Adam Lawrence, all three of Fairfax's regiment of horse. A life of Berry is given in the *Dictionary of National Biography*. Mr. R. I take to be John Rushworth. The letter mentioned is that of the eight regiments. The regiments of Pye and Graves were quartered at Holdenby.

<sup>b</sup> See on this meeting the letter of the Commissioners. Cary, i., 214. Rushworth, vi., 485, 487. Another version of this speech of Skippon's is printed by Rushworth, and dated 15 May.



of England. I am further to desire you, upon a motion made againe and againe at two former meetings, by my selfe in relation to the service of Ireland, that you will give us an accompt how you find your severall regiments disposed to that service. The justnesse, the honourablenesse, and the necessitie of which service cannot be unknowne to you. I desire to knowe and am persuaded it is the mind of these other Gentlemen that are sent downe, not under the name of Commissioners, but as Parliament men and Members of this Army to our severall charges in the Army, that you would in these particulars give us such satisfaction as I hope you can or shall make appeare to us, to the Parliament, and to all that shall have the heareing of our proceedings, that you have faithfully discharged your duty, as wee have desired, and shall endeavour to doe to the Parliament and for the service of the whole Kingdome. I pray that there may be an orderly proceeding amongst you in what you have to doe or say, if any man desire to speake lett him be heard without interruption. Lett all things be done discretely, fairely, and orderly. I hope in the end of all wee shall finde that there is nothing aimed at on all hands, but that which tends to the reall service of the Parliament and publique good.

Lieutenant Generall Cromwell.

Although [*blank*]

Collonel Whalley.

The officers according to your commands have repaired to their severall regiments, and have served you with all faithfulness.

They have left [*blank*] but their actions sufficiently declares that to you, that they have done the Parliament reall and good service. They have conven'd heere at the head quarters according to your command, mett together and declared their greivances in writing, which greivances either are the greivances of all or the greatest part of the Army.



Major General Skippon.

Of the great and faithfull services of this Army there cannot but be an ingenuous acknowledgment from our enemies.

Upon the endeavours of this Army—soe great successes to the great benefitt of the whole Kingdome—lett not any words I speake be misunderstood—That which I especially propounded, which you heare the rest of these worthy Gentlemen were pleased to approve as their sence, was that you would please as well to give us an accompt of your proceedings with your severall regiments in relation to make them senceible of the care of the Parliament for their indemnitie, for part of their arreares at present, and to have their accompts audited . . . . . and what distempers . . . . .

And truly Sir, except you please to give us that accompt, wee in that particular cannot but be unsatisfied, nor cannot tell what to say in it untill you expresse your selves concerning it; and therefore I pray that wee may receive such an accompt from you. In that wee doe . . . . .

Collonell.<sup>a</sup>

May it please your Honours I desire one word at the meeting. Before this all our names in our severall regiments were ready, if you please [to ask] the officers to give an accompt thereof. I have in writing under my owne and my Major's [hands] to testifie what returne it made to us, I believe according to trust, and I hope that will answeare your expectations; for I doe not really [merely?] speake to the matter of distemper that is supposed to be amongst us, but I likewise answeare to the Irish bussinesse.

Major General Skippon.

If you have any thing to offer . . . . .

Officer.<sup>a</sup>

Sir, As in relation to what concernes the Regiment . . . . .

<sup>a</sup> These two officers seem to be Lieutenant Colonel Jackson and Major Gooday of Fairfax's regiment, two of those who had engaged to serve in Ireland.





Commissary General Ireton.

Major, doe you deliver that?

Officer.

I doe deliver that as the sence of the Regiment, which was delivered to mee in the feild in writeing.

Com. Gen. Ireton.

That which was delivered I thinke I have seene, and it was not done . . . .

Maj. Gen. Skippon.

Gentlemen, I doe desire it againe and againe, and I thinke it is all our desires, that you will heare one another with sobrietic.

Captain White.<sup>a</sup>

Please your Honours to heare this concerning the Generall's Regiment of Foote: first, he speakes of carrying in the report as under his hand, for my[self] I doe not understand itt . . . to him and soe to our selves, if it had been soe then our meeting had been in vaine . . . .

Therefore to that end wee did conveene together, some of us agreeing with the rest of the officers, . . . . which Colonell Whalley hath delivered in, soe to that wee sett our hands, and it is the minde of the officers if not private souldiers.

Colonel Lambert.

Please you to lett us knowe, whether it is your desire that wee should give you a particular accompt of the overtures in the Regiments?

<sup>a</sup> Francis White of Fairfax's foot regiment, on whom see Rushworth, viii., 943, and his own pamphlet, viz. *The Copies of Several Letters presented to the Lord General Fairfax and Lieut-General Cromwell*, by Francis White, 1649.



If you extend to every particular, it may bee there may be some-thing of weakenesse or ignorance.

I thinke Colonell Whalley hath already presented itt to you [the sense] if not [of all of] a great part of the Army.

Here the Officers generally cried All, All.

Maj. Gen. Skippon.

Gentlemen, if it please you, these acclamations might be forborne; for wee are desirous to heare every one speake, and according to our trust to deale impartially. Butt still, if it seeme good to you to lett us knowe whatt course you have taken in the particulars that I mentioned to you—your papers of those things which you call greivances—wee desire to knowe the distempers that you could observe to be in your severall regiments, or under your severall commands. Wee did also desire that you would (as I doubt not but you have done) contribute your utmost endeavours for the qualifying them. These papers we shall read, God willing; but, in order to our proceedings, I shall desire that you will give some such satisfaction that wee may knowe how to consider of things amongst our selves as befits our employments [that] wee may know what to say concerning them. You have communicated those votes to your severall regiments, you have endeavoured to lett them see the care of the Parliament for them in these particular votes. You have endeavoured to enquire out the distempers, you have putt to your helping hands what you could to pay [allay?] them. This will be a very proper way: I thinke with submission, I shall desire these Gentlemen to lett you know their sences.

Colonel Lambert.

I thinke wee shall all use our endeavours to the peaceable continuance of the Army for those things that I have mentioned before. I say there is something of weakenesse of which wee must desire



the best construction of your selfe and the commissioners—if you decline that name—and the rest of the Members of the House. Wee dare clearely and fully satisfie you in the whole progresse, but I desire itt may not be soe publique as now it is.

Major Disbrow.<sup>a</sup>

If it please your Honours I shall make a relation of what I did, which is according to the acting of most officers heere.

According to your commands I repaired to the Regiment upon Monday last. I went from one division to another. I told them what you were pleased to represent unto us, and that was an apprehension of some . . . . . To that end I was commanded now to come to them to represent the Parliament's votes to them, which I read to each division, first to one, and then the other.

They told mee there was noe unquietnesse amongst them . . . . . But withall told mee that there were diverse things which lay upon them as Greivances . . . . . which were their Greivances, I should represent them to you, and I must returne an accompt of what accompt I had from them; upon which they did . . . . . which for my part I did disallowe of, I told them see to their faces . . . . . Allowe of the things I argued the case . . . . . and in the conclusion . . . . . prejudiciall and evill, and at last they did come to present mee with their Greivances. I did then beleive, and doe still, that they are very sober things, and therefore it is not only that which I have presented and which is said to be the sence of the Army, but itt is that which lies both upon souldiers and officers that wee have now represented to you . . . . . not mutinously intended and what is fitt to be answered and satisfied; and soe farre as I understand of the condition of the army, and those officers that I have spoke withall, they desire to be answered in some

<sup>a</sup> John Disbrowe (or Desborough), Major of Fairfax's regiment of horse.



particular things, and those particular things are there represented to you.

Collonel Hammond.<sup>a</sup>

I found my Regiment very quiett, only some Greivances and troubles were talkt of.

Collonel Whalley.

As Major Disbrough hath done for the Generall's Regiment soe I have the like accompt to give of mine. I find that both my officers and souldiers are not transported or carryed away by passion. Reason sways them; and truly reason is so prevalent with them, in these humble desires that they make in the way of greivances to Parliament, as I am confident they will deny themselves in every thing, if there may be as reasonable a reason given why they may not goe on.

Colonel Hewson.

Your Honour was pleased to communicate to us for to propound to our souldiers the bussinesse of Ireland, and to read unto them these votes, according as you were pleased now to expresse them. Wee have done it with faithfulnessse. We returned to our regiments. For my part I can give to your Honour this accompt: I read to them the votes [to] lett them knowe what care the Parliament had taken for them, their intention for indemnity and [for] a considerable summe for their arreares. I lett them knowe that your Honour was to goe for Ireland and to accept of that employment. Truly I found them in noe distemper, but very quiett; only I find that there was some greivances lay upon them, something did trouble them. I mov'd about the Irish affaire; they seem'd to be utterly unwilling for to stirre in that untill such time as they had some satisfaction.

<sup>a</sup> Colonel Robert Hammond.





Major Cowell,<sup>a</sup>

Seing you expect an accompt from every regiment in particular I am able to give it for the Generall's Regiment of foote; I drew them upp on . . . . last in two bodies, and for the returne of itt, itt is in those papers. This method they tooke: they desired some time to present their greivances unto us and by us unto your Honours; and being drawne into particular companies wee went from company to company. They had taken their resolutions. Wee demaunded of them if wee should rest confident that what those of every company should bring should be the sence of every particular company. They were brought to us at a rendezvous of the officers of every regiment, and upon our view there is our consent with itt. Wee made knowne unto them the grounds why they should goe, and of your present company and command over them, to try if that would drawe them. I am sorry wee can make noe other report, wee received nothing but a negative voice.

Lieutenant Collonel Read.<sup>b</sup>

According to your command I repaired to the Regiment and according to what Major Cowell hath declared . . . . every particular company gathered together [brought] in the sence of itt.

Major.<sup>c</sup>

Concerning Collonell Fleetwood's I can give your Honour some accompt of that. According to your Honour's command I drew Collonell Fleetwood's Regiment to a Rendezvous, and I read the votes which your Honour sent to be communicated to every troope . . . . only this, they did say they had something to

<sup>a</sup> William Cowell of Colonel Harley's regiment, died a colonel in 1648. See Carlyle's *Cromwell*, letter lxix.

<sup>b</sup> Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Reade of Colonel Herbert's regiment. Rushworth, vi., 466, 471.

<sup>c</sup> Major Thomas Harrison, the regicide.



deliver to mee, which they gave mee, and the greivances wee did returne in yesterday, your Honour received them.

Major Cowell.

Truly this I can say noe more, I found noe distemper nor any shaddowe of distemper amongst them.

Captain White.

An't please your your Honours, I gave in the paper of the particular greivances to my Lievtennant Collonell, wherein they gave in their desires ; my Lievtennant Collonell left out some and sett downe others.

Lievtennant Collonell Jackson.

An't please your Honours, I thinke Captaine White doth forgett himselfe ; I was willing to present their greivances ; I did desire to knowe their greivances ; I should be willing to receive them, or otherwise to heare them.

Captain White.

I shall speake only to the manner of proceeding ; my Lievtennant Collonell hath soe endeavoured to obstruct that hee sent for mee, and questioned mee as high as my life, and committed mee to the Marshall, and afterwards brought mee to a heareing before the Major Generall ; I pressed him either to enlarge mee or else to committ me, upon which the Major Generall did release mee ; and soe lying under that same calumny I did seeke to vindicate my selfe from any man's person, to desire that the Major Generall would vouchsafe to be President of a Councill of Warre that the difference betweene my Lievtennant Collonell and I may be determined.

Commissary Ireton.

For the differences that are amongst them in relation to the



buissenesse that you are now about, since they have severally spoken, it were necessary to take into consideration in regard of the difference of itt, and appoint them to attend you for itt.

Captain Leigh.<sup>a</sup>

I have only a word in relation to that Regiment. I was present in the field when the difference hapned, and did see what Captaine White did, and the truth is my sence is the same . . . . willinge to concurre together in that way ; but when Captain White did declare his greivances they were not accepted of, neither did hee approve of those greivances, but did offer it to joyne with the rest.

Captain Audley.<sup>b</sup>

I shall speake something in referrence to that which Commissary Ireton pleased to order betweene officer and officer ; I only perceive there is some differences in your accompt ; your Lievtennant Collonell gives one, and you another, and for that the Major Generall<sup>c</sup> will take care of these privately without interruption.

Captain White.

Captain Audley, If it shall please my Lievtennant Colonell to present the greivances which his owne company hath there will be compleatly 8 companies, and he may take memorandum<sup>d</sup> then of this.

Major Sedascue.

May it please your Honour,

I have caused those votes and propositions that were sent to be read at the head of every troope in the regiment. Those

<sup>a</sup> William Leigh of Fairfax's regiment of foot.

<sup>b</sup> Lewis Audley of the same regiment. See on Audley, Burton's *Diary*, iii., 15, 37-45, 86.

<sup>c</sup> Major of Ireton's regiment of horse.

<sup>d</sup> MS. M<sup>dum</sup>.



Parliament propositions being read I received from the severall troopes a paper, wherein they have exprest their severall Greivances they have sent hither. I have according to the consent of all the officers delivered them to Colonell Whalley, and the rest of the men who are to present it to your Honour.

Major Huntington.<sup>a</sup>

According to your commands I sent out, but they could not soe soore come to them as to others, they being soe farre distant. I read the orders which the Parliament were pleased to give for the arreares, and for the auditing of accompts, and for indemnitie, and after that I desired they would make knowne their greivances, that I might present them to your Honours; and upon this they chose 4 out of each troope to drawe upp their greivances, which wee have presented unto the gentlemen there, and are now putt with the rest. As for the bussinesse of Ireland, they desired their just desires might bee answered, before they resolved of that, and that the greivances which they had might be represented to them.

Lievtennant Collonel Smith.<sup>b</sup>

May it please your Honours,

In obedience to your commands I repaired unto Sir Hardresse Waller's Regiment, and randevvouz'd them as on Monday, and I read at the head of the regiment those votes which I received from your Honour. For distempers, I find not much, but some amongst them, and that was that there were some officers that had engaged for Ireland, and had declared that those that were not willing to goe now freely for Ireland should be fore'd to comply; which they find to be a great greivance and trouble, and they declared as the sence of the House to that purpose; other greivances I find none.

<sup>a</sup> Robert Huntington, Major of Cromwell's regiment of horse. On 8 April, 1647, the House of Commons voted that he should command Cromwell's regiment. *Commons' Journals*, v., 137.

<sup>b</sup> The Lieutenant-General of this regiment was Edward Salmon. *Rushworth*, vi., 466.





There was indeed some difference amongst some officers falling to some words, that had not I been present, might have been very inconvenient, and made very great mutinie in the regiment. Many greivances they did declare to mee which they had, which greivances they told mee they would draw upp, and they were delivered in with the substance of what is presented to your Honours.

Captaine Thomas.<sup>a</sup>

You were against the going for Ireland, that was the cause.

There was noe words of admonition, but that you your selfe did read the votes, more then these you would drawe upp the greivances, and drew upp an officer of each company to signe them for you. The Major comes after, and then cryes, 'Stand for your liberties and priviledges now and ever.'

Officer.<sup>b</sup>

An't please your Honour I am the man.

The word that was said was this; a corporall in Sir Hardresse Waller's regiment, a private souldier, comeing to knowe my advice, I said, 'I hope the souldiers may have their libertie.' The Lievtennant Colonell, hearing I did desire to knowe, lett him declare to the Lievtennant Colonell, whereupon th . . . . in a mutinous manner struck mee for defending my owne innocency. This is that which I say to that which Captaine Thomas seemes to demaund.

Officer.

An't please your Honour my Lievtennant Collonell drewe the regiment to a rendezvous. Captaine Thomas said as that wee were seditious, and that some had poysoned our souldiers, that wee were enemies to the peace of the Kingdome, which the souldiers desire to be vindicated in; and that though we were not willing to goe for Ireland, yett [wee should be forced to comply]. He used those words against us, which wee conceive tends much to the dishonour of the Army.

<sup>a</sup> Captain Daniel Thomas of Sir H. Waller's regiment.

<sup>b</sup> Major Thomas Smith.



Commissary Ireton.

If you please to hint to them that they may take the examination of what miscarriages have been.

Lieutenant Collonel Jackson.

May it please your Honours, I have one motion to make. If you please to give mee leave you shall have the bussinesse truly laid before you, which, as I suppose, itt is not yett.

Captain White.

For that paper which my Lieutemant Colonell speakes of that hee produced and hee desired us to signe, wee refused and drew upp one, which was signed in the same manner as it is exprest, with those hands of 7 companies of the regiment.

Captain Husbards.<sup>a</sup>

For that bussinesse that was even now spoken of, it does reflect not only on those officers, but upon the whole Army. Itt is of such an high nature that I thinke fitt hee may be secured in the meane time.

Collonel Sheffield.

I doe not thinke but that any man hath a libertie to speake; 'tis true there are more officers of the one side then of the other.

Major General Skippon.

Freinds, I thinke itt is our desires that love and peace should be maintain'd amongst us, whether wee bee of the one way or other. I am sure it is our duty towards God in conscience, and towards one another as Christians; and truly I must needs ingeniously say, I am very sorrey to observe that there should be such a disagreement betweene you; the thing itselfe I hope cannot justly produce any

<sup>a</sup> Azariah Husbards, of Rich's regiment. "Hee," refers to Capt. Thomas.



such thing; and therefore it must be my advice to you that you would leave personal things, and apply your selfe to those things that wee are mett about; not but that there may be a convenient time and course taken to order these things.

That shall be my advice to you; and truly, as I said before, God knowes it is a very great pressure to my spiritt to heare and observe such clashings and jarrings amongst you; I am sure there can noe good come out of it, it is very likely noe good can come out of it.

And therefore I shall desire that you will leave these particular disagreements till another time.

Collonel Whalley.

An't please your Honours, itt was thought as a great burthen upon many heere present, those words which were spoken, yet wee did resolve not<sup>a</sup> to speake of itt, because wee would not trouble your Honours, though they are words not to speake of.

Collonel Okey.

According to your Honours commands I did declare to my Major that was here, and one Captaine Mercer that is with mee in Shropshire,<sup>b</sup> the votes that came downe with your Honour. By reason of the distance of place, which is 6 score miles where five troopes quarter, hee could not possibly returne the answere by this time; but 5 troopes that are quartered about Holdenby they were brought in yesterday by the Major.

Officer.

I could not be soe particular for my own part.

I knowe not who they were sent to; I heard they were sent.

<sup>a</sup> MS. "did not resolve."

<sup>b</sup> Major Nicholas Moore and Captain Charles Mercer of Okey's regiment of dragoons.



They were never communicated to the regiment, but soe farre as I perceiue the condition is not any way distemperous but very quiett. Heere is my owne ; I have delivered the sence of itt to the officers.

Commissary Ireton.

For Colonell Okey's regiment, if the votes be not communicated it is fitt some course should be taken for itt.

Major General Skippon.

Truly that is very well remembred of Commissary Ireton heere, I knowe not whether you tooke notice of itt.

Hitherto I knowe you have not had time to speake with your regiment about it more particularly, and to prevent distempers, but the bussinesse is of such concernment as wee cannot tell how to avoid itt, but pray that you will take especial notice of itt ; for I had it from a very good hand, that the House of Commons have passed an Act of Indempnity large and full, [two] moneths arreares to those that goe for Ireland ; soe that you shall doe well to make all the advantages that you can to give satisfaction unto your severall officers and souldiers, and to discharge your duty in all faithfull obedience to the Parliament, and not to question the justice and honour of the Parliament in further proceeding to give you satisfaction I hope.

Major Scroope.\*

May it please your Honours, I doe conceive and doe partly knowe that these votes have not been communicated to Collonell Graves' regiment, and therefore I doe not see how any just accompt had been given in the bussinesse ; and if your Honours would please to

\* Adrian Scroope, the regicide, Major of the regiment of horse of Colonel Richard Grevis, or Graves, which was at this time guarding the King at Holmby. Scroope afterwards succeeded to the command of that regiment.





direct what way wee may take to deliver in our accompt before the day appointed . . . . .

Captain Holcraft.<sup>a</sup>

Sir, I had the [votes] delivered to mee. I did carry them first to my Collonell, and by his command went to the regiment; but the regiment was not called to a randezvous by his command, but they are according to your approbation; likewise it being made an objection before wee went away whether that course might be taken, itt was communicated to severall troopes. To Captaine Flemming's troopes the votes were not sent. I am sure they were communicated to all but Captaine Flemming's<sup>b</sup> troope, and Captaine Barton's Quarter Master received them.

Quarter Master.

I never received them.

Officer.

The Troope never heard of them.

I can assure you the troopes were not called together; that was left to the discretion of the officers.

[Captain Holcraft?]

They were in the same posture they ever have been, to those troopes they were communicated according to their sence.

Quarter Master.

It was only the sence of the officers.

Major General Skippon.

I shall speake only to this present bussinesse of Colonell Graves'

<sup>a</sup> Charles Holcroft of the same regiment, one of those officers who had signed the engagement of March 22, promising to serve in Ireland.

<sup>b</sup> Captain Fleming, of Graves's regiment, was adjutant-general of horse in the New Model, colonel in 1618, and killed in the war in Wales. Phillips, *Civil War in Wales*, i., 401.



Regiment. I thinke by what hath been said that the votes have been communicated to fower of the six troopes, and not to the rest.

But sure, Captaine Holcraft, I did desire you yesterday that some might goe to the other two troopes.

Captain Holcraft.

Sir, According to your command I communicated the votes to the troopes; if you please to peruse the papers, and then I am confident you will finde that to be the sence of that regiment to be delivered in fully.

Major-General Skippon.

Those that are brought in wee shall read.

Major Scroope.

That was all that I have to say because the Regiment was not called together.

Commissary Ireton.

You may remember that the coppie of the votes to the Regiment were delivered to Captaine Holcraft; Captaine Holcraft and three more officers have made a returne, and I doe not remember what they did make . . . . if it had not been done through want of time or otherwise . . . . But, Sir, now I perceive by what Captaine Holcraft sayes that it was communicated to the troopes, all but Captain Flenning's, I desire that Captaine Holcraft may declare possitively, cleerely, and expressly: whether hee knows that they were all drawne together.

Captain Holcraft.

I knowe that my Collonell's Troope was drawne together, and that upon my conscience and honour I have given that which was their sence.



For my Major's Troope I understand that their troope was called together; for Captaine Flemming's Troope, his Lievtennant was in towne, and hee did not tell mee that his Troope was not called together till hee had signed what was delivered in there, for at my Major's desire wee were to drawe upp the sence of the Regiment; for my Lord Caulfeild's Troope it was drawne upp and the greivances given in according to the sence you have there; for Captaine Barton's Troope itt was drawne upp with the rest.

Captain Barton.<sup>a</sup>

I can affirme this not to be true, for all the Regiment was not call'd together, of severall troopes there were not halfe his troopes gathered together.

Collonel Rich.<sup>b</sup>

For the bussinesse of my Regiment you have had severall hints; the truth of itt is I was not there my selfe, and itt was for noe other end but because I was not well, and I had a particular dispensation from the Generall to be absent. My Major and all the Captaines of my Regiment are here in towne; they have both particularly by themselves, the Major joyntly from the whole Regiment, given mee a little accompt of those things of which you desired an accompt; and truly as to those votes that you laid your commands upon them to read to the Regiment in reference to Arreares and Indempnitie, I find that of this Ordinance of Indempnitie they give us some hopes that wee shall be indempnified fully.

Truly as to arreares, that same considerable proportion which the votes does mention they tell mee that they doe not very well understand, unlesse it be that six weekes pay which the House of Commons have voted at their disbanding; and they would be very glad if the House would see favour them as once againe to

<sup>a</sup> Captain ——— Barton.

<sup>b</sup> Colonel Nathaniel Rich; his major was John Alford.



take that into consideration. In refference to distempers I am sorry to see my Major and some of my officers differ in their accompt. My Major did indeede give me an accompt under his owne hand and the hand of some of my Captaines, as that which was the sence of the whole regiment, and that which hee hath signed; and truly I dee finde in that, as I have in that from another regiment, some things not fitt, and impertinent and extravagant, and that was the reason and the only reason that that course which you see was taken, that wee extract out of all that was brought in that that wee thought might be most pertinent upon this occasion, and to leave out those things that were impertinent or otherwise. But lastly, as to that which you speake in reference to the Irish service; truly I am verry sorry to see soe little accompt given generally. For the particular accompt of my regiment, for I speake [to] noe more; wee who are horsemen are not very willing to crosse the seas, but wee must also desire that wee might further be made happie in haveing such a Commander as we could approve. Wee are told of an officer of the Cavaleeres that should beare immediate command over us; as to that person to serve under him either in or out of the Kingdome I knowe nothing that I can speake or thinke to detract from him; hee is a person of honour, butt hee is a stranger to mee and to my regiment, and as on the one side wee should be very glad to have one with us that wee have had experience of, soe on the other side itt is their oppinion to be wedded to noe man to goe under his command out of the Kingdome, before they receive some satisfaction in some competent measure.

Souldier.

May it please your Honour to be acquainted with the temper of your Regiment, and to see in what condition wee are; itt is not only the desire of the Regiment to knowe their commands, but in matter of Greivances which now lie upon them [they desire they] may accordingly have redresse from those in power, and remedies





applied according to the diseases; and then wee desire that the justice of our proceedings may noe longer be censured, and condemned, butt judges<sup>a</sup> in the proper spheare of them, that soe wee may bee noe longer misapprehended, which I represent to your Honour and to this honorable company.

Collonel Rich.

I perceive this is an honest souldier of the regiment who has been a witnesse of all things that have passed; from this bussinesse in hand that doe respect the souldiers as well as the officers, if I have falne short in any thing, if you please to permitt him to give mee some private notice.

Souldier.

I cannot say that I knowe every particular, but it is the generall desire of the Regiment that they may be represented before you.

Collonel Rich.

I have done faithfully my endeavour for your satisfaction.

Collonel Sheffeild.

Sir. there is one thing that an officer in Collonel Hammond's Regiment said just now: that they were ready to accept of the termes with a great deale of chearefullnesse, that I did tell them that you did engage into Ireland, and Major Generall Skippon to command them, and I am sure itt is as great a comfort as any they have.

Collonel Hamond.

To what that Gentleman said, I find my Officers and Souldiers very willing; and though they doe confide in you, yet unlesse they have satisfaction as to indempnity and arreares, I must needes

<sup>a</sup> judged?



say — when wee are satisfied in them as wee are in the point of conduct under the Major Generall, provided that the conduct be soe settled upon the conditions before mentioned — to engage themselves and the army that is to serve with them upon that service. Truly, Sir, if they may be soe satisfied upon those termes, that they will then chearefully, faithfully and honestly, not out of any ends of their owne, but out of a cleere and candid sence, freely and chearefully venture their lives for the service of the Kingdome as they have hitherto done; and this I speake to you not from my selfe alone, but from very many that have desired mee to speake.

Collonel Sheffeild.

I shall desire your favour in this: I beleive Collonel Hammond hath made a mistake, I am confident my men would as willingly have their owne officers, and I am confident that they desire nothing more then to serve the Parliament in what the Parliament shall command them in; and, for the ends, if Collonel Hammond does meane mee, I thinke I have as little cause otherwise as any other.

Collonel Hammond.

I did not intend itt of Collonell Sheffeild or any other in [relation to] that service, I only speake in relation to the Act of Indempnity which I am not ashamed to owne. But there is some exceptions for Captaines to be Lievtennant Collonells, Lievtennants to be made Captaines and Sarjeants to be made Lievtennants and Ensignes; this they have done in my Regiment.

Captain Rainborowe.

May it please your Honour, not haveing heard any thing fully spoken as to my Colonell's Regiment, though superiour officers are heere, I hope I shall not be mistaken in that which I am now to speake.

And that is to tender the account of what I have proceeded in



my troope in Collonell Sheffeild's regiment. I had my troope at a randezvouz by themselves, thinking it the best way whereby I might impart and encourage them to the satisfaction desired of the Parliament, which I did in as faithfull a manner as I thought I was called unto. I advised them not to doe any thing too rashly but consider of itt. In conclusion they did tell mee, that if such and such things, which they did apprehend was very just and necessary as to their good and satisfaction, and according to the engagements of the Parliament, should be made [good] unto them, they should shewe the same affection.

And as to the bussinesse of Ireland they did include itt in these expressions. And as to the regiment, the Colonell and Major, the Captaines and my selfe was present when the letter was read and the votes of both Houses read unto them. I heard noe questions at all made, but that which they said their answeare was, this, jointly, one and all, that they could not be satisfied till they had an answeare to their petition.

And as to that of Ireland, I did not heare it moved in publike by any Officer at the Randezvouz. And as for the full of the Souldiers meaning and answeares to the votes, they have appointed severall of the regiment to bring upp their resolucions; they did not seeme to vent any distempers, for I saw not any thing done but that that did become them as souldiers, but these men are come upp and have signed these greivances which are signed. The whole Regiment signed them, they choose two out of a troope to bring them; and to speake seriously many of them did not knowe what they did, for many of them cryed out 'Indempnity,' 'Indempnity,' and afterwards ask't mee what it was.

Lieutennant.

May it please your Honours.

I hope I have rendred a faithfull accompt of what is commanded to mee, that is to give satisfaction to those votes, and what Greivances did remaine upon their spirits.



Collonel Sheffield.

Truly I beleive that Captaine Rainborrowe's accompt doth not make mine otherwise.

Lieutennant.

This relation that Captaine Rainborrowe makes of Colonell Sheffield's regiment upon my knowledge is true. Colonell Sheffield and the Major<sup>a</sup> were there ; they drew upp the severall troopes ; they did read it particularly to every troope, and after they had done soe they signed them in the respective troopes, and there is brought upp by those souldiers [the desires of] at least 500 souldiers.

And if any other accompt be given the Regiment doth not owne it.

Collonel Sheffield.

I wish that Gentleman would keepe to his duty, for I thinke I shall bee able to prove that hee hath nott. I humbly desire that when any officer doth doe anything that may make a breach in the performance of that duty, hee may be call'd to accompt for it.

Lieutennant.

Collonell Sheffield, what I doe [promise] I shall performe.

Wee desire that wee may not be misunderstood ; there are many officers of the army that doe desire the good of our Souldiers as of our selves, and therefore wee desire that those papers that I delivered in may be heard read publicly, that it may be knowne what wee have desired in the behalfe of our Souldiers.

Colonel Rich.

Sir I shall offer this to you; in what hath been delivered, you have a summary extract of what was the troubles of our souldiers. Though wee are not ambitious of what wee have done, or our way

<sup>a</sup> Richard Fincher.





of proceeding more then all the world, yet if any of themselves knowe their owne greivances to be soe plausible, and to carrie with them such a face of justice and equitie to any that shall heare itt, it will not be only a satisfaction but a courtesie [to hear them].

Captain Holcraft.

I did not speake any thing in reflection, but to satisfie you that, for very honest reasons, wee doe not judge it necessary to joyne in those things that other Regiments doe.

Major Scroope.

I have given you an accompt of that of Colonell Graves' Regiment, to give satisfaction to those that desire itt.

Major Gen. Skippon.

Major Scroope, I suppose the case with that is much the same in every regiment, and that wee did [in one] that wee will doe through every regiment.

Captain.

May it please your Honours I am here with a member of Colonell Lilburne's Regiment ; my Collonell is commanded to waite upon the Houses at London, hee cannot be heere.<sup>a</sup>

His Major was here and received your Honour's command; hee was here on Fryday to give what accompt hee had then ready, but since hee is gone away to London hee hath left noe order to any to doe itt, but I thinke none can give soe just an accompt as my selfe ; if your Honour please to take it from mee I shall as faithfully make the returne.

Upon Wednesday last the Regiment was drawne to a Rendezvouz to muster, and according to your Honour's command had the votes of Parliament communicated to them. The Collonell's orderly . . . and soe consequently

<sup>a</sup> Colonel Robert Lilburne ; his major was William Master.



the rest ; but for those that saw nothing nor heard nothing of those votes communicated to the Souldiers, it being as they alleadge done privately . . . . . I knowe what was said in itt by the souldiers to whome I heard them read, and particularly two companies ; they were inserted amongst those which are presented to your Honours.

Major General Skippon..

Are there any officers of the Regiments that have not yett spoken that have anything to speake ?

Lievtennant Collonel Grimes.<sup>a</sup>

I said this, There was noe dissenting ; you were pleased to say there was dissenting in the army, I knowe that the mindes of the officers are knowne to the Collonells.

Major General Skippon.

Wee speake of distempers.

Commissary General Ireton.

The question that is expected to be answered is an accompt of the desires of the regiments.

C\_\_\_\_\_

According to my Colonell's command I went to the Regiment, and when they came to the Randezvouz, hee drew them together, and then I told them there were severall Votes which the Commissioners of Parliament delivered to be read to them ; as for distempers there are none. I made<sup>b</sup> this answeare, first for the Act of Indempnitie, they should be very well content when they had itt ; they thought a considerable summe was noe more then what was due to them. They said they were willing to any peace, they desired they might be presented to you which I have presented to the

<sup>a</sup> Mark Grime, of the regiment late Mountague's, now Lambert's.

<sup>b</sup> had.



Colonell. And as for Ireland, [they gave] that answere that Collonell Rich made and some others, they did desire some satisfaction for what was herein, satisfaction for what was done there.

Lievtennant Colonel Jackson.

I desire to speake but one word, and then I shall have done in an instant.

Least there should be any hard thoughts of the officers of the Generall's Regiment, wee have dined together these two dayes; yesterday I shew[ed] to Captaine White the resolution of the souldiers for Ireland, and Captaine White himselfe, and Captaine Leigh also, who dined with us . . . . that hee did all, that that was true which he had written, and much more which he desired to be spared, and that concerning the Irish bussinesse.

Collonell Whalley.

Gentlemen, our owne hearts and consciences tell us that upon this last bussinesse that the Commissioners have imployed us about in goeing to our severall regiments, wee have performed itt to the great and good service of the Parliament; yet wee may be out of doubt that there will be various representations, nay I may say misrepresentations, offered to the House of Commons of our acting and doings; itt is as good as already promised us. I shall therefore move you, whether it were not good for us all in a joint and sollicitous desire to request one or more of the Commissioners here to goe to London in our behalves, to answere what shall falsely be laid to our charge. and to give the Parliament a true sence of our doings heere.

Lieutenant Colonel Grime.

You will please to satisfie the Commissioners that there is not soe much dissenting as they speake of, for 7 or 8 men doe not make a dissent in the army.



Collonel Whalley.

I thinke there shall not neede to be any such thing.

Captain.

Every man is left to his owne freedome to subscribe that which hee does agree to. I suppose in the whole greivances there is delivered different things, but wee may assent to that which is wholly and perfect ours and noe more.

Collonel Whalley.

This I say further. If you doe approve of what I have now tendred to you, that it is your desire to have one or more of these gentlemen that are members of the House to goe upp, that you will [let] them heare.

Heere the officers generally cried out. Two.

Major Scroope.

Perhapps there may be an information given to the House, for they cannot goe yett.

Collonel Rich.

I most humbly offer this also, to take this along with you, concerning the Commissioners of Parliament of their going to London to serve you there and the kingdome, that it should be with submission to their judgment and reason it should be very well, but otherwise I doe not knowe whether it be soe well or noe, itt is our desire.

Lievtenant Chillenden.<sup>a</sup>

I shall desire that Collonell Whalley and the rest may goe.

<sup>a</sup> Edmund Chillenden, an account of whom may be found in the *Dictionary of National Biography*.





Lieutenant Generall.

Gentlemen, by the command of the Major Generall I will offer a word or two to you. I shall not need to reminde you what the occasion of this meeting was, and what the bussinesse wee are sent down about: you see by what has past that it was for us to learne what temper the Army was in, and truly to that end were the votes of the Parliament communicated by us to you, that you should communicate them to the Army that soe we might have an accompt from you. That accompt is received, but it being in writing and consisting of many particulars, wee doe not yett knowe what the contents of those papers are. But this I am to lett you knowe: that wee shall deale very faithfully<sup>a</sup> through the grace of God with those that have imployed us hither, and with you also. The further consideration of these bussinesses will be a worke of time. The Major Generall and the rest of the Gentlemen thinke it not fitt to necessitate your stay here from your severall charges; but because there may be many particulars that may require further consideration in these papers that are heere represented, itt is desired that you would stay heere a field officer at the least of every regiment, and two Captaines. For the rest it is desired of you, that you would repaire to your severall charges, and that when you are there you would renew your care and dilligence in pressing [on] the severall souldiers under your commands, the effect of those votes that you have already read. That likewise you would acquaint them as particularly with those two things that the Major Generall did impart to you, which hee had in a letter from the Speaker of the House of Peers, to witt the addition of a fortnight's pay, a fortnight to those that are to goe for Ireland, and a fortnight to those that doe not goe, and likewise there is an act of Indempnitie very full already past the House of Commons. Truly, Gentlemen, it will be very fitt for you to have a very great care in the making the best use and improvement that you can both of the Votes and

<sup>a</sup> A note, evidently written in 1662, when these reports were transcribed, says: "Looke that Rogue's words was fidele, Ambo nebulones."



of this that hath been last told you, and of the interest which all of you or any of you may have in your severall respective regiments, namely, to worke in them a good opinion of that authority that is over both us and them. If that authoritie falls to nothing, nothing can followe but confusion. You have hitherto fought to maintaine that duty, and truly as you have vouchsafed your hands in defending that, soe [vouchsafe] now to expresse your industry and interest to preserve it, and therefore I have nothing more to say to you. I shall desire that you will be pleased to lay this to heart that I have said.

Cornewall.

Wee shall desire that though there are dissenters in few regiments yet appeare, that the like is in all regiments.<sup>a</sup> I presume most of us doe abhorre to engage against authority, and wee doe as equally abhorre the hindring the service of Ireland. You will find that the matter conteyned in any of the answeares is the sence of most of them.

Commissary Ireton.

Itt was told you that the Major Generall's result was, that there should stay here a feild officer of every regiment; but because there have been diverse officers that have seemed to presse some differences, the Major Generall offerrs it to your consideration, that it any other besides those shall stay from the regiments have occasion to attend, they may have liberty.

Officer.

May it please your Honours, I thinke there cannot be an exacter accompt given from some regiments, there being none given from Colonell Okey's Regiment, they haveing not had the votes.

<sup>a</sup> Colonel Whalley ? We shall desire you to say that though there are dissenters in a few regiments yet it appears that the like sence is in all regiments.



Major Disborow.

I shall offer only one thing to your Honours, the greivances have been presented [but] it hath not been as yett put to them whether it be with their consent, or for that purpose. Some may suggest that it is some private actings of some few of us, and therefore I desire that the question may be putt whether they doe consent or not.

Colonel Rich.

I shall humbly offer one word to you more in referrence to what Major Disbrowe gave an hint, and that is truly a thing that hath a little troubled mee, to see a dislike testified to some of us, as wee have thought have tended to serve the Kingdome, the Parliament, and the Army, and to contract the bussinesse that you are hereabout into as narrowe a compasse as the thing it selfe will beare, as such an displeasing thing as the representation of greivances will admitt. I could heartily wish that as the unanimity of this Army Officers and Souldiers is very well knowne, [during the war] which God be thanked is not now in the Kingdome [it] might be soe exprest at our conclusion, and wee desisting from further engagement in another Kingdome [be united] as it hath been formerly. I hope though there may have been some extravagancies spoken by some Officers or Souldiers of the Army, that it shall not be represented to you, that those extravagancies are the acts of the whole Army; it is fully acknowledged by all of us that there [are] weaknesses and imperfections in the best, but I professe it seriously that wee have, as wee shall answeare it to God and man, done our best endeavours to preserve our regiments from those things that the Parliament are pleased to call distempers amongst us, and to doe our utinost endeavours I say as may become us in our places, as may conduce to the further prosecution of the Parliament's affaires either in Ireland or England. I meane in England iff wee should goe on in our bussinesses, as wee have done, united in a body. If any shall say, because wee talke of arreares before wee



disband wee doe not intend to disband before wee have them, I speake that for my owne part, I speake the sence of my owne, that it is not any immodest, irrationall thing that wee drive at: only that the Parliament will please to reassume into their consideration that thing of arreares, before they are pleased to send us home or elsewhere.

Major Butler.<sup>a</sup>

In that particular I thinke there are not any officers here butt will agree to make an application to the House in that humble and submissive way as Colonell Rich hath proposed, to be reassumed into their consideration; I speake in the behalfe of diverse who are free to itt.

Lieutenant Colonel Jackson.

Itt is my desire.

Captain Holcraft.

But there are some particular exceptions of which wee doe not soe well approve, and some things wherein they are not at all concern'd; and therefore, upon those and other considerations, they desire to take that course apart; and as that cannot reflect upon any proceedings in the Army, soe they are very well satisfied in their consciences, that there is none can desire the peace of the Army more than they doe.

Colonel Hewson.

Major Disbrowes motion, as I understand, was to desire that you would knowe whether they did not desire Colonell Whaley and some other Gentlemen to accompany the Commissioners with their report to the House, that it may not be thought thatt it was of Colonell Whalley's particular act, or any others joyn'd with him,

<sup>a</sup> Colonel Butler ?





and [lest] that itt should be look'd upon to be their actings, and not the desire of the rest.

Major General Skippon.

For my part I thinke it was the desire of other Officers, though only Collonell Whalley mov'd itt.

All.

Noc. Noc.

Major General Skippon.

Let us understand things soberly, rationally, and freindly one from another. I say, I thinke there was none of us, though I beleive wee did not knowe of itt, nor it was not by order from us, yet I doe verely beleive that wee could not imagine that Colonell Whalley whome wee thinke to be a wise man and an honest man then to doe a thing of his owne head . . . . .

But that you should make this the unanimous concurrence of the Army whereas there are divers officers that doe say otherwise . . . . .

Colonell Whalley.

The thing is soe cleere as you cannot chuse but take notice of itt ; but in regard they doe heare of some that does almost threaten to send up such informations to the world as I may say are not true, therefore their humble request is, that two of the Members of the House of Parliament, you being all members, that you would be pleased to take the paines to goe up to London, that soe you may be able in their behalfe to represent their desires to the Parliament; and likewise to give the Parliament a cleare and true sence of what is their actings and doings here.

Collonell Sheffeld.

I humbly couceive that Collonell Whalley [is] speaking this as from himselfe, but if there be such a thing you all must knowe itt.



C[olonel] W[halley.]

Sir, I did soe, yet I am sure it is most of their mindes. Does your conscience accuse you ?

Major General Skippon.

I pray either speake with moderation or else be silent.

Cornett Joyce.<sup>a</sup>

The thing is thus, that letter which was sent out was communicated to the severall Regiments, and that answere was sent from ours; if you desire mee to justifie itt I am willing, and acknowledge what they did, and whatsoever hath been done, hath been done to the end in the relation come upp.

Commissary Ireton.

I conceive that by what is said that some officers doe take offence as taking more upon them then was fitt for them to doe. [I therefore conceive it fit] That before this meeting doe breake uppe that some officers be appointed to present the sence of the whole. I speake only to drawe that bussinesse to a conclusion soe you may be noe longer deteyned.

Colonel Hammond.

Sir I shall make a short motion to you. That you will appoint us to make a more full discovery, and [to take the names of] those that doe assent to the appointing of us.

Captain Holcraft.

The Major Generall hath already an accompt who wee are that doe dissent.

Colonel Hammond.

I hope you will rightly understand us in that point of division. That word dividing was spoken.

<sup>a</sup> George Joyce, cornet to Faurfax's life-guard.



Major General Skippon.

Gentlemen, I shall cover all in as good language as I can, and in as good earnest as I can, and in all faithfulness that I can. Put an end to this discourse. I thinke the papers that you have given in by the hand of Colonell Whalley will evidently mannifest who they are that dissent.

I thinke the papers on the other side will cleare itt; and therefore I beseech you in all earnestnesse that you doe nothing but what may tend to unitie, love and peace. And see good night.

[A Declaration from the Agitation of eight regiments of Horse.]

Walden, May 17th.

Whereas some few Officers of this Army (dissenting from the Army) have not only declared their owne dissent, but pretended also to declare the dissent of a parte of the Souldiers under their command, and thereby have done as much as in them lieth to render the Army in a divided condition. Wee, whome our severall Regiments of Horse have made choice of to act in their behalves, doe in their names attest to your Honours from our owne certaine knowledge, that whatever dissent there may be by any particular Officers, that there is not any the least appearance of any difference or dissent among the Souldiers from the greivances presented by our Officers to your Honours; and this wee will undertake to make more fully appeare, when wee shall be called to an accompt by your Honours, or any other having authoritie to doe it, and in the meane time protest against that action of those dissenting Officers.

Edward Sexby	}	of the Generall's Regiment.
Wm. Taylor		

Wm. Allen	}	of the Lievtenant Generall's Regiment.
Sam. White *		

\* Should be probably Sam. Whiting.



Thomas Sheffield <sup>a</sup>	}	of Commissary Generall Ireton's.
Anthony Nickson		
William Prior	}	of Colonel Fleetwood's Regiment.
John Caseby		
Thomas Kendall	}	of Collonel Whalley's Regiment.
Wm. Young		
Tobias Box	}	of Colonel Butler's Regiment.
John Willoughby		
John Brayman	}	of Colonel Riche's Regiment.
Nicholas Lockyer		
Henry Gethings	}	of Colonel Sheffield's Regiment.
Thomas Diggell		

\* Should be Thomas Shepherd, I believe.

Of the sixteen names appended to this, nine, or if the corrections suggested be accepted, eleven are also attached to the letter of April 28.

The subsequent history of some of the men signing this document is of interest.

John Brayman (or Berman) became a lieutenant in Colonel Rich's regiment and was cashiered in February 1655, on the charge of complicity in the plot for raising a rebellion amongst the army in Scotland, in which Major-General Overton was implicated (*Mercurius Politicus*, pp. 5052, 5165). In June 1659, he was restored to his place in the army with the rank of Captain, became major of Rich's regiment, and was arrested on April 13, 1660, for endeavouring to raise his soldiers in support Lambert's intended insurrection (Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1658-9, p. 289; *ibid.* 1660, pp. 202, 573). He was again arrested in May, 1662, and confined in the Tower and in Windsor Castle (Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1661-2, pp. 376, 456). He was imprisoned in 1682 on account of suspected complicity in the Rye House plot (*Luttrell's Diary*, i., 269, 286, 556).

William Prior's career was less distinguished. He was, however, arrested in January, 1655, for taking part in the plots of the levelling party against the Protector (*Mercurius Politicus*, p. 5050; Thurloe, iii., 35).





*To General Fairfax.*

May it please your Excellency,

I thought it my duty to give you an Accompt of what hath happned in the transaction of this waightly bussinesse committed unto the care of Major Generall Skippon &c. what has been done by them, and what by the Army, in order, and obedience to the Commands. Upon Fryday last many Officers, and almost from every Troope or Company one, conven'd at Walden, and brought them from every Regiment severall Particulars of those Greivances which the Souldiers were most sencible of; and there by generall consent and desire of those Officers Collonell Hammond, Rich, Whalley, Okey, Major Disbrowe, Cowell and myselfe,<sup>a</sup> would extract out of the severall Papers sent from the Regiments those greivances which were most common to all, most probable to occasion the late distempers in the Army, and most seasonable to be presented to the Parliament, and compose out of them a forme and draught<sup>b</sup> in the name and behalfe of the whole Army; which although it was both troublesome and we might bring thereby an inconveniencie upon our selves, wee undertooke, as a thing which we might possibly doe the Parliament and Army reall service in;

<sup>a</sup> This letter was evidently written by Colonel Lambert, who expressed in the debate views exactly similar to those contained in this letter, (p. 42), and acted as spokesman of the ten officers authorised to draw up the grievances. The authority given to them ran as follows:—

“The Officers whose names are here underwritt doe declare, That they conceive the summary of the severall Representations of their respective Regiments read to them in the Church in Walden the 15th of May, 1647, to be the substance of the severall Representations, and doe desire that Collonell Whalley, Collonell Hammond, Collonell Rich, Collonell Lambert, Collonell Ingoldesby, Collonell Okey, Collonell Hewson, Major Desbrowe and Major Cowell may perfect and drawe up our summarie to be delivered to Major Generall Skippon and the rest of the Officers sent from the Parliament:” (Worcester MS., vol. xli., f. 101 b.) The list of names which follows is practically the same as that printed in Rushworth, vi., 471.

<sup>b</sup> MS. “brought.”



and accordingly went about it, but could not possibly perfect it in time against the appointed houre of tenn of the clock the next day, and therefore were forced to desire a longer time of the Commissioners, which was granted untill five a clock the next day in the afternoone. Against which time wee being prepared, deliver'd in by the hand of Collonell Whalley the summe of what we had composed ; wherein we used as much moderation as possibly wee could with satisfaction to the Souldiers, who, though they remaine very high in their demaunds and expressions,<sup>a</sup> yet I am confident I have declined much which was in their hearts to have strongly insisted upon. A copie of which according to its last extraction, together with the Interduction and Conclusion, I could not in this short time procure to send unto your Excellencie, but doubte not but Mr. Rushworth's man<sup>b</sup> will send them in shorthand to the Secretary who may make them knowne unto you. After that wee had delivered this with the sence of the Army the Commissioners desired a more particular Accompt of what pass'd at the Rendez-vous's of every Regiment ; which was accordingly done by the Collonell's Majors, or cheife Officer of every Regiment, and most of them was to this effect: That they for the present found their respective Regiments in very quiet condition, neverthelesse were sensible of some present and other approaching greivances, the Summe of which was delivered in to Collonell Hammond, Whalley, Rich, &c. and were very much the same which were delivered at that present to the Commissioners. There was return'd from your owne Regiment of Foot, two severall differing Accompts ; one from the Lieutenant Collonell, the other from Captaine White and some other common Souldiers, whom the Regiment hath appointed to agitate in the behalfe of the whole Regiment. And likewise from Collonell Sheffield's some differences of the like nature, and also a somewhat lame and imperfect accompt from Collonell Graves' Regiment ; but all the rest were intire and very

<sup>a</sup> MS. "expedition."

<sup>b</sup> Either Thomas Wragge or William Clarke.



full. Next to this [the] Major Generall desired an Account of what had been done in order to his designe of motioning the releife of Ireland; to which an answere was given as from most of the Army, that they could find nothing of willingnesse or affection to that service, untill they had received some satisfaction in their greivances. And indeed, if the Parliament thinke to have helpe out of this Army for Ireland, they must goe another way then what they are in for the present. Collonell Sheffeild, Col- lonell Butler, Quarter Master Generall Fincher, and some few others, who indeed were not acquainted with our private debates by reason they have subscribed for Ireland, and therefore are not liable to most of these greivances, and by reason they had delivered in a Petition, the substance whereof was the great cause of trouble upon us, and were unsatisfied in what wee did, and have expressed their dislike in a Paper delivered to the Commissioners, the contents whereof for the present I knowe not.<sup>a</sup> Betwixt them, and [us] is something past of heat and animositie, especially betwixt Cols. Sheffeild and Whalley, but I hope will goe noe further.

Walden, 16<sup>o</sup> May, 1647.<sup>b</sup>

*Lettre from Sexby<sup>c</sup> to the Agitators.*

Gentlemen,

If these be not <sup>\*s</sup> a presse gott into the Army wee shall be att a

<sup>a</sup> The protestation and vindication of Colonel Butler and the other dissenting officers, which are annexed in the MS., were printed in a pamphlet entitled "*A Vindication of a Hundred and Sixty-seven Commission Officers that are come off from the Army in Obedience to the Parliament Orders,*" published July 1, 1647. See also Rushworth vi., 495.

<sup>b</sup> In the MS. this letter was originally dated 1662, for which date 1647 was afterwards substituted. This and an entry at the beginning of vol. lxvii. of these MSS. shows that these copies were made in 1662.

<sup>c</sup> Edward Sexby first appears in history as one of the presenters of the letter of the



losse. There wants nothing but money, therefore tell the Officers they must disburse the money.

The King will it is verily thought come and joyne with them, and that makes them soe high, therefore minde that by all meanes hasten the greivances away. There is a Committee to goe to Rain-borrowes Regiment, \*s will goe if you send him instructions, which doe by to morrowe night, and send two more to London to convey Newes. The generall will be with you on Thursday, Soe I rest

Your freind,

\*

17<sup>o</sup> May, 1647.

agitators of the eight regiments to their General. He was a Suffolk man, and had served first in Cromwell's regiment of horse, and then in that of Fairfax. See his account of himself in Appendix B. He seems to have left the army after 1647, but happening to be present in Cromwell's army at the time of the battle of Preston (on some private business) was entrusted with a letter from Cromwell to the Speaker, announcing the victory. For this service the House of Commons voted him £100 (August 23, 1648, *Commons' Journals*, v., 680). In February, 1649, Parliament ordered the detention of the Scotch Commissioners, and they were arrested by Mr. Sexby at Gravesend, for which he was ordered £20 (February 23, *Commons' Journals*, vi. 152). He was also appointed Governor of Portland, is henceforth designated as Captain Sexby, and was more than once charged with commissions requiring dexterity and energy (Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1649-50, pp. 135, 155, 531). In June, 1650, he was, at Cromwell's suggestion, selected for employment in Ireland, and charged to raise a foot regiment, but on September 23, 1650, was ordered to march to Scotland instead, as Cromwell complained of the want of foot (Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1650, pp. 206, 332, 352). He took part with his regiment in the siege of Tantallon Castle, in February, 1651 (*Mercurius Politicus*, p. 621). In June, 1651, however, he was cashiered by court-martial, for what offence does not appear (*Letters of Roundhead Officers to Captain Adam Baynes*, Bannatyne Society, 1856, p. 27). This letter was evidently written from London to the agitators at Saffron Walden.





*A letter to the Agitators.*

Sir,

I kindly salute you, I have noe newes but this, That the House did order those that brought Ensign Nicholls prisenor 10<sup>l</sup>. a peece for their good service.<sup>a</sup> Thus you may see their proceedings. And lett mee tell you, this is in hand to divide us ; they intend to pay the private Souldiers all their Arreares and to abuse the Officers, and see to divide the Souldiers from their Officers. This is the way they intend to doe as their last designe ; and therefore Gent.[lemen] you must use your dilligence to the severall Regiments, Troopes, and Companies to sett them right in this bussinesse, and to try them whether they will stick to their Officers, though they should be paid their Arreares and have securietie by an Ordinance to see whether they will have Justice done to. Their Officers have stuck to them, and it is expected in Honour and Justice they will stand to us. Therefore use your dilligence. I neede not say more to you. I have sent to you some of the

<sup>a</sup> Lientenant Frances Nicholls, of Lilburne's regiment, was committed by the House of Commons on April 27, having been sent up from the army in custody on account of his' opposition to the enlistment for Ireland (*Lords' Journals*, ix. 154; *Commons' Journals*, v. 155). The vote mentioned in the letter took place on May 14 (*Commons' Journals*, v. 175) and is thus referred to in a newsletter of 17 May, amongst the Clarke Papers :—

"The House of Commons voted those that brought upp Ensigne Nicholls 10<sup>l</sup>. and debated very much about discharging the Ensigne, and giveing him 10<sup>l</sup> towards his charges, but going by voices foure carried it in the Negative, the Ensigne was informed by the Sargeant, that if he pleased to Petition the House they would give him his release and a gratuitie besides perhaps of 20<sup>l</sup>. The reason why it was carried in the negative was because then it would be said they repented them of what they had done."



Cittizen's Petitions, and they doe much rejoyce in our unanimity.  
Therefore knowe I am

Your assured freind,

\* a

May 18th, 1647.

*Letter to the Agitators.<sup>b</sup>*

These are to tell you that this day the Armie is to be disbanded by vote of the Commons House, and referred to the Committee of Derby House for manner, time, and place; and soe farr as I conceive, itt is upon good information, that they intend to disband the Foote first, and then the Horse, and that by Regiments, and they to be 40 miles asunder. Beleive itt my deare fellowes, wee must now be very active to send to all our severall Regiments of Horse and Foote and [let them] knowe that nothing but destruction is threatned. I pray you observe these severall directions and send to the severall regiments, to principle them by all meanes presently, and Sir . . . . . in the Commons House abused the Generall as basely, they said "there was never Generall did like him, hee is now in Towne and courts Ladies, and itt is a shame for him that he should be now in Towne and his Armie in a distemper,"<sup>c</sup> and Mr. Hollis hath promised to deliver the Citty's Petition though hee

<sup>a</sup> This letter is headed in the MS. "Letter from Lt. C<sup>a</sup>." It is perhaps also from Sexby, who was undoubtedly the leading spirit amongst the agitators. In that case the heading may have been added by the copyist in 1662, and may mean Lieutenant-Colonel Sexby, giving him his later title. On the other hand, the expression "it is expected they will stand to us," seems to show that the author was an officer. Perhaps "Lt. C<sup>a</sup>" signifies Lieutenant Edmund Chillenden of Whalley's regiment of horse, one of the two officers elected in June, 1647, to act as "agitator" for the officers of his regiment.

<sup>b</sup> There are two copies of this letter amongst the Clarke Papers, one of which gives it as a postscript to the preceding letter. It was evidently written on May 18, from the reference to the disbanding vote (*Commons' Journals*, v. 176).

<sup>c</sup> See *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii., 343.



himselfe is nominated to have justice done on him ;<sup>a</sup> what this will effect I knowe not but you shall heare by the first. I would you would tell that the Printer is taken and undone, and if it be not thought on to have a Presse in the Army wee are undone. Heere is one perfect and workmen :<sup>b</sup> Lett him therefore see what will be done amongst the Officers concerning itt, and, Sirs, you must be sure to send to the Foote, and tell them this, and be sure they doe not turne. Loving freinds, be active, for all lies at the stake. This is the stratagem that was spoken on the other night. I would intreat you to bestirr your selves, for the good of all the kingdome and their preservation is in your hands. In the name of God improve itt for the kingdomes happinesse.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> A newsletter of 18 May says: "The petition of the well affected partie in the City should have been presented this day, but none can be found to present it though tendered at the House of Commons door. I understand that Mr. Hollis hath received the City petition, though himselfe is concerned in it, and hath presented it to the Speaker, with a promise to see it read to-morrow in the House."

<sup>b</sup> The advice about the printing press was followed. Hollis, in his *Memoirs*, § 66, describes the army as "countenancing and publishing seditious pamphlets, for which they had a press which followed the army." The printer of these pamphlets seems to have been a certain John Harris, who himself wrote several pamphlets under the name of "Sirrahniho." Harris printed, *inter alia*, the following pamphlets: "*A Declaration of Master William Lenthall, Speaker of the House of Commons, wherein is contained the reasons that moved him to absent himself from the service of the House on Friday, July 30, 1647.*" The imprint it bears is "Oxford, printed by J. Harris and H. Hills, living in Pennifarthine Street, 1647." "*The humble address of the Agitators, 14 Aug. 1647,*" is said to be printed at London, "for J. Harris, Printer to his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax," and also "*the Resolutions of the Agitators of the army*" "printed for John Harris, London, 1647." On September 30, 1647, Parliament passed a stringent ordinance against unlicensed printing, and, at the request of Fairfax, appointed Gilbert Mabbot, licenser. The political press in general thus passed under the control of the army, and there was no further need of Harris and his travelling press. *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 300, 309. About November, 1647, Harris printed a pamphlet entitled "*The Grand Designe or a discovery of that form of Slavery extended, and in part brought upon the free people of England by a powerfull party in the Parliament, and Lieutenant General Cromwell, Commissary General Ireton and others of that faction in the army.*" From this time he became closely associated with the Levellers, and published pamphlets for that faction.



*Letter from the Agitators to the severall Regiments.*

Gentlemen and Fellow Souldiers, wee greet you well.

These are to let you knowe, that wee have received Letters from London this day certifying, that still the dividing and soe the destroying designes are in hand. Before you were the Marke shott at without your Officers, and they loath to see you in such a condition designed to ruine they appeare now to speake and act for you ; but noe sooner came they to speake on your behalves, but they become the Marke instead of you. This is now the thing in hand to divide betweene you and them, and that is either propounding or giving you your arreares, and soe [to] take you from your Officers, thereby to destroy them, and then to worke about their designes with you also, which will make your money be but little useful to you. As soone as you have it and you disbanded you may be prest away for Ireland, or hang'd in England, for prosecuting the Petition, or refusing to goe for Ireland ; which wee question not but many of us shall be found guiltie of, some already saying if you be but disbanded, if you will not goe they will drawe you along like doggs. Fellow Souldiers, the summe of all this is, if you doe but stand, and not accept of any thing nor doe any thing without the concent of the whole Army, you will doe good to your selves, your Officers, and the whole kingdome. Stand with your Officers, and one with another you need not feare. If you divide you destroy all. Therefore once more, Fellow Souldiers, as you tender your owne wellfares and the wellfares of us all, acquaint one another with these things, and resolve neither to take monie, nor march from one another, but lett all your actions be joyn'd. And if any orders should come to your particular Regiments to march from the rest of the Army, march not while you have consulted with the rest of the Army. Be sure you take heed how you obey any such orders, untill you have acquainted and consulted with the rest of the Army. Be active and unanimous, the whole Army will assist you,

REIGN OF KING CHARLES THE FIRST

IN THE YEAR OF HIS MAJESTY'S DEATH

BY JOHN BURNET, BISHOP OF SALISBURY

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

LONDON: Printed by J. Streater, at the Sign of the Gun, in St. Dunstons Church-yard, 1689.

THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.

IN TWO VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME.



if you doe but acquaint them with it. Doe nothing for your owne securitie, but what may secure your reall and faithfull Officers as well as your selves. Be assured they are yours, while you are theirs.

Yours and the Kingdomes faithfull servants,	
choen to advise and consult in your behafes.	
EDWARD SAXBY.	ANT. GRAYES.
WM. ALLEN.	NICH. LOCKIER.
THOMAS SHEPHARD.	JOHN NEWSON.
THOMAS KENDALL.	ROBERT PRICHARD.
THO. JONES.	RO. MASON.
TOBIAS BOX.	THO. DIGGELS.
JOHN NEWSON.	WM. LAUNDY.*

Bury : May 19, 1647.

For our assured freinds and fellowe  
Souldiers that are of the Regiment  
that was lately Collonel Herbert's.

\* Agitators were first elected by the eight regiments of horse whose representatives signed the letter of April 28; see p. 33, and Appendix B. In May, in consequence of the mission of the four officers to enquire into the grievances of the army, the foot regiments also chose agitators (Rushworth, vi., 485). Each company is said to have elected two, out of whom two were selected to represent the regiment. A comparison of the names appended to the different declarations of the agitators shows that in this letter one man signs for each regiment. The signatures to this letter represented the eight regiments of horse above mentioned; Diggell belonged to Sheffield's regiment of horse, Mason to Sir Hardress Waller's foot regiment, Newson to Fairfax's regiment of foot, and the three others probably to regiments of foot then near Saffron Walden. The double mention of Newson is probably an error of the transcribers. The address of the agitators to Fairfax on May 29 (*Book of Army Declarations*, p. 16) is signed by the representatives of ten horse regiments (the two additional regiments being those of Pye and Graves), and by representatives of six foot regiments (those of Lambert, Harley, Lilburne and Hewson with the two before-mentioned).

Herbert's regiment is probably spoken of as lately Colonel Herbert's, because he had accepted the command of a new regiment to be raised for the Irish service, out of the volunteers for that object from the different regiments of the new model. His old regiment was given in June or July to Colonel Robert Overton.



*[Letter from the Agitators of Horse to the Horse in the North.]*

Honoured Gentlemen and Fellowe Souldiers wee greete you well.

Wee in this Army whereof you are a part having for these few weekes last past had it made our portion to be brought on the publique stage of the Kingdome as acting in the things which wee could wish had been more private, but necessitie hath noe law, fellow Souldiers, wee knowe, that these actions of ours have through the false suggestions of some been liable to misconstructions and misinterpretations which we well knew must be our portion before we began to act, but our comfort is, Wisedome is justified of her children, and we hope wee shall not be condemned by you; and to the end you may have right apprehensions of our candid intentions and actions wee present you with these following lynes, wherein we shall breifly give you the ground of the way and the end of our Proceedings. For the Ground it was this, Wee in this Army lying under many sore and pressing greivances, and being apprehensive of many more we were ere long like to bé involv'd into if not prevented; for the prevention of which wee had an humble Petition with Representations annexed framed to be presented to the Generall and by him to the House, we conceiving this to be our undoubted right and priviledge whether considered as Souldiers or Subjects if wee have a right to any thing; but while this was only in intention, such was the haniuousnesse of itt apprehended to be, according as it was represented by a Letter from an unknowne Officer of the Army who was not sparing in the Letter in the laying many odious aspersions both on itt and us, and suddenly after the receiving of this letter (unexpectedly and to our amazement) comes forth the Declaration against our Petition, declaring us enemies to the State and persisting and laying many heavy charges upon us as you may see in itt at large (to which wee



referre you); this coming out from our professed Enemies, it sadned our spiritts that wee should be declared Enemies for going on in that way which they themselves had directed us to in case of Greivances, and the thoughts of this putt us upon drawing a vindication of our late Petition which wee beleive you have seene. The next thing was to thinke of framing of a Letter<sup>a</sup> to the Generall and Major Generall and Lieutenant Generall. Our end in that was thus, wee did not knowe but the Parliament might be pleased to heare them speake for us though they would not receive our Petition from us, but were pleased to condemne it to die before it was brought out to live. This Letter being presented to the persons to whome directed, it was conceived by Major Generall Skippon to have many things of great importance and dangerous consequence; soe it was presented to the House, and the messengers called in and examined and much debate about it, and the results were the dismissing of the messengers at present to attend them on the next summons, and this Letter according as wee conceive was the occasion of the Commissioners coming downe to take a view of the distempers reported in the Armie, which accordingly they did, and having conven'd the Officers gave them order to repaire to their severall charges to receive the greivances of those under their commands, which was done accordingly and the greivances brought in to the Commissioners to be by them presented to the House, and wee have herewith sent you a coppie of them as they are in the abstract, though they would have been longer, but the severall Regiments being streightened in time they could not bring them in soe large as otherwise they would, which wee desire you to read and impartially to judge of our sad condition wee are in, and what just cause we have to doe what wee have done, and withall what little ground there is for all these loud clamours against us as is sounded abroad daily. Wee desire the just God and all just men to judge whether wee have deserved such hard measure from them



that wee [who] have not thought any thing too deare to part with for their sake, who have manifested our selves not to be enemies but reall freinds and soe knowne to be in the dayes of their adversitie, and did little thinke that this should have been our portion to be declared Enemies in the dayes of their prosperitie, but our God his will is done, and our worke is with him and our reward is before him. As to our ends [it] is to selfe preservation, which all creatures does, and Man, the cheife of creatures. cannot but doe, that soe when God hath made us instrumentall in saving a kingdome we might [not] be accessorie to our owne destruction, as we should be if wee should suffer our selves to be deprived of our just freedoms, which are ours in a double sence, first, as by the lawes of this Nation it hath been conferred upon us; and 2<sup>dly</sup>, as by many of our dearest blouds it hath been purchased by us, and whatsoever the false suggestions of men are to the contrarie, yet our ends, soe farre as wee knowe our own hearts, are noe other but in that we might live and enjoy that which the knowne lawes of this Nation allowe us to enioy, and the Parliament in many of their Declarations have oftentimes assured us wee should have; and wee shall never desire any to adheere to us any further or longer then wee are acting to this end. Thus you have our whole bussinesse before you. Read and consider, and God direct you. Thinke wee are prosecuting just things in a just way, and if from such thoughts of us you have a desire to joyne with us, these Gentlemen which are the bearers hereof will direct you in the way of doing itt, and our hearts will abundantly reioyce in it, and wee shall not be wanting in the use of all lawfull wayes and meanes to assist you to the utmost of our power in the attainment of this our desired end; and wee question not but the just Lord who loves Justice will assist us all while Justice doth runne as a mighty streame amongst us. In the meane time wee hope to stand right in your apprehensions soe long as you shall discern the clearenesse of our intentions. Soe we leave you to God who wee hope will never leave you but will be to you a God of direction, and





to you and us a God of Protection in all our warrantable undertakings.

Yours and the Kingdomes humble Servants  
Adjutating for the severall Regiments whose  
names are hereto subscribed.<sup>a</sup>

*Letter to the Agitators.<sup>b</sup>*

Gent.

The great bussinesse of the House yesterday was a long debate upon the honest partie of the Citties Petition,<sup>c</sup> and likewise upon the great Petition that is gone out into the Kingdome, and in conclusion order'd them both to be burnt by the Hangman at the Exchange and Pallace Yard—a new way to answer Petitions and doubtlesse (might some have their wills) the Petitioners too should be burnt in Smithfeild. They committed one of the City Petitioners to Newgate, for telling a Parliament Instrument “if wee cannot be allowed to Petition wee must take some other course.”<sup>c</sup> The expression indeed was too high but he knew him

<sup>a</sup> This letter is not dated and no signatures are appended. It was, however, evidently written immediately after the abstract of the grievances had been drawn up, *i.e.* about May 20. Several agitators are mentioned as being sent with it to the northern troops. The names of three agitators belonging to the southern army are appended to a subsequent declaration, *viz.* Richard Kingdom of Cromwell's regiment, Thomas Diggel, of Harrison's, late Sheffield's regiment, and John Caseby, of Fleetwood's. None of these signed the petition of May 29, but Diggel signed the letter of May 19, therefore their despatch to the north probably took place between 19th and 29th May.

<sup>b</sup> It is difficult to determine the authorship of this letter. It seems to have been written by some one officially employed at headquarters. The signature does not occur again.

<sup>c</sup> An account of the whole business of these petitioners is given in a pamphlet entitled *Gold Tried in the Fire*, 1647. British Museum, E. 392, (19). The petitioner committed to Newgate was one William Browne. *Commons' Journals*, v. 179; Rushworth, vi., 488.



not to be a Member, yet it was not soe high as both parties was that day in the House, for one of the parties said That they [that] had delivered and sent the letter to the Generall, Major Generall, and Lieutenant Generall were a companie of rascalls; and another said, That hee shall very willingly die with his sword in his hand though there be an Army of 30,000, in the Feild. Massie is sent downe to Gloucester (they say), from thence to secure Monmouth for feare of some insurrection in those parts. Sir Robert Pye is gone to his Regiment. The designe of the King's letter to settle Presbitry for three yeares, and the Militia for tenn, may be easily gues't at :<sup>a</sup> His Majestie hath a mind to please the Citty, and they him; they forgett that they are little lesse then 80 thousand pound arreare to this Army. His excellencie came hither this Evening. The Major Generall and some other Officers came to vissitt him (though they went not forth to meet him). Major Gooday saluted him with a pittiful complaint in a Letter from Lieutenant Collonell Jackson. That his Regiment would have meetings, and some of them come to the Head Quarters without orders, notwithstanding they had acquainted his Souldiers, with a desire which the Major Generall, Lieutenant Generall, &c. made Thursday before the Lieutenant Generall went to London, That the Officers would use their endeavours to prevent any meetings of the Souldiers. The Major Generall sett it home with Arguments of the inconveniences that might come by it, Mutinies, disorders, &c. It was moved that the Generall would send some command in writing, that the Major Generall and the rest had forborne it before, expecting his Excellencie's coming downe. There is noe order as yet given; if you have not that libertie

<sup>a</sup> A news-letter of May 18 says: "Things growe very high; the Lord moderate them or else we are like to have a very sad kingdome. It is thought that the House intends to send down propositions to the King; it is thought such propositions will be sent as the King will signe, and then they thinke the King's party and theirs will be hard enough for us. . . . The great designe of the Parliament is to get the Magazine of Oxford into their hands upon pretence of the service of Ireland."



(carrying things discreetly and moderately) I knowe not what can be done to purpose. Our Enemies may worke and destroy us before wee are aware.

36

Walden, 20<sup>th</sup> May 1647.

*Letter from the 4 Officers to Mr. Speaker.*

Sir,

Upon the order you sent us of the 18th instant wee have herewith sent upp two of our selves (Lievtennant General Cromwell and Collonell Fleetwood) to give an accompt to the House of the bussinesse wee are imploy'd in here according to certaine heads by a Report here agreed upon for that purpose by us all who are

Your most humble servants,

PHIL: SKIPPON.

OL: CROMWELL.

HEN: IRETON.

CHARLES FLEETWOOD.

Walden, May 20th,  
1647.

THE HEADS OF A REPORT TO BE MADE TO THE  
HONOURABLE HOUSE OF COMMONS BY LIEVTEN-  
NANT GENERALL CROMWELL AND COLLONELL  
FLEETWOOD IN THE NAME OF THEMSELVES AND THE  
REST OF THE OFFICERS IN THE ARMY AND MEMBERS  
OF THAT HOUSE LATELY SENT DOWNE TO THE ARMY  
WHOSE NAMES ARE SUBSCRIBED.

Agreed upon and sign'd by them all at Walden May 20th,  
1647.

1. That according to the appointment (whereof wee have formerly



given accompt) the Officers mett here againe on Saturday last to returne an accompt of their proceedings and successes in communicating the Votes and improving the same together with their utmost interest and power for the satisfaction of the Souldiers and quieting of all distempers, as also to give a full accompt of the tempers of the Army in relation to the late discontent appearing therein.

2. That on Sunday Evening wee received a summarie accompt in writing agreed upon and signed by about 24 of the Officers, and presented to us by some of the cheife in the name and presence of the rest of the Subscribers which wee have now sent upp.<sup>a</sup>

3. That at the same time from the 8 Regiments of Horse and 8 of Foot now lying within the association the severall Cheife Officers present for the respective Regiments gave us accompt by word of mouth all of them to this effect. That they had communicated the Votes and done their endeavours according to order and doe find their Souldiers very quiet and in noe visible distemper at present, but having divers greivances sticking upon them, which (they said) were contained in the respective papers then given in by them, and all of them did also expressly declare, That the effect and substance of those their Greivances was contain'd in the said Summary then given in, except only those Officers whose distinct returns for their severall charges given to us in writing are these following, which wee have likewise sent upp,<sup>b</sup> vizt.

1. One from three Officers of Collonell Lilburne's Regiment for the remaining soldiers of there three Companies only.
2. One from the Feild Officers and 5 Captaines of the Generall's Regiment of Foote.
3. One from Captaine Hall for the Life Guard.
4. One from Collonell Sheffield, his Major and 2 Captaines.

<sup>a</sup> See *Army Declarations*, p. 17.

<sup>b</sup> These returns are amongst the Clarke Papers, Worcester MSS. vol. xli.





To that from the Generall's Regiment there was exception made by three Captaines and some other Officers of that Regiment, as also by 7 Souldiers chosen and intrusted by their fellowes of 7 Companies, who declar'd their greivances to be as in the Summarie and have given in a Paper to that purpose which wee have also sent upp.

To that from Collonell Sheffeild there was excepti<sup>on</sup> made by Captaine Rainborrow, and Captaine Evelyn's Lievtennant for their respective Troopes, and by private Soldiers for other Troopes of that Regiment chosen and intrusted by their fellowes, who brought the hands of all the Souldiers of the Regiment to attest their greivances, which because contain'd for substance within the Summarie wee doe not trouble the House withall. Colonell Sheffeild repli'd, That hee knew of noe such thing while hee stai'd with that Regiment, but the other averr'd it was publicly agreed on upon the Randezvous after hee was gone.

That wee received also in writing other distinct accompts from some other Officers of Horse and Dragoones lying out of the Association, vizt.

One from two Lievtennants, two Cornetts and a Quarter Master of Collonell Graves's Regiment.

One from the Major and two Captaines of Dragoones of the three Troopes lying about Holdenby.

One from two other Captaines of Dragoones for their two Troopes lying in Shroppshire.

But wee find that these accompts were made by the respective officers without the imediate privitie of all their Soldiers or the other officers and Troopes of the same Regiments, and that they had not since the former meeting here had time to draw out their Troopes from the rest of those Regiments to acquaint them fully with the votes, or gaine a certain accompt of them, the great distance of all from those of their Quarters not admitting itt to be see done within that time, and therefore wee have given order that the Votes, together with what is since added of the arreares, be



effectually communicated to them all, and a certaine accompt to be returned from each as soone as may be.

5. That from Sir Robert Pies Regiment of Horse (we suppose for the same reason) we have had noe returne from any officer yet appearing, nor doe we yet heare whether they have received the Votes. The copie whereof for them was (in defect of any officer of that Regiment at the first meeting) delivered to an officer of Collonell Graves's Troope for both those Regiments.

6. Wee have also received some other Papers which at present wee thought not necessary to trouble the House withall.

7. That on Monday another Paper was delivered to us by Lievtennant Collonell Jackson, subscribed by himselfe and other officers that dissented from the rest to cleere themselves from mistake or misapprehensions in their said dissenting, which wee have likewise sent.

8. That since the said Generall meeting the Officers (who by consent of the rest had subscribed it) drew up and perfected the Summary, have shew'd us, and we have read over.

1. The particular returnes in writing from the 8 Regiments of Horse, and 8 of Foot lying in the association out of which the Summarie was extracted.
2. A Request of them in writing sign'd by the officers that brought in the same unto them, desireing that they would take the paines to frame and perfect the said Summary.

By all which wee find,

1. That those officers had good ground for what they did in the Summary, the said particular returnes of greivances being full to the heads of the Summary and many of them exceeding.

2. That whereas many of them for matter or expressions were brought confused and full of tautologies, impertinencies, or weaknesses answerable to Soldiers dialect, they drew the matter of them into some forme more fitt for view or judgment.



3. That whereas many of them for matter or expressions were such as might have given greater offence, they did, by their perswasions with the inferiour Officers and Souldiers that came with them (intrusted for the rest), bring them to lay aside many more offensive things, and to be satisfied in the heads of the Summarie, and therein endeavoured to bring them as low and to as much moderation as they could.

4. That their end and reason for going in that method and undertaking the Summarie seems (most probably) to be to gaine the precedent effects, and to avoid further offence to the Parliament, soe as the Armies tendernesse towards the authorities and priviledges of the Parliament, and the Parliament's favourable construction and consideration of the Army might seeme to remove all discontents and prevent any more inconveniencie.

5. That the Officers thus joyning with the Souldiers againe in a regular way to make knowne and give vent to their greivances hath contributed much to allay precedent distempers, to bring off the Souldiers much from their late wayes of correspondencie and actings amongst themselves, and reduce them againe towards a right order and regard to their Officers in what they doe.

6. That the said severall Returnes doe generally expresse a pationate sense of the scandall concerning the petition to the King, protesting against the thing and the appearance of it amongst them in a great detestation thereof and importunitie for their clearing therein.

1. The same particular returnes themselves the said Officers that shew'd them to us desir'd they might keep, both for their owne justification in what they had done, and especially because the Officers and Souldiers that brought them being all satisfied in the Summary.

1. It was their owne request the particular papers might not be produced in publique to discover the weaknesses or rashnesse of those that sent them, which they are very sensible of.



2. The Officers therefore conceiv'd it might be better (if the Parliament pleas'd) to take noe notice of them.

9. That though (in the charge to the Officers at their first meeting) wee exprest not, nor did intend to expect to have any such Returnes of Greivances, but only an accompt of what effect the Votes with the Officers endeavours had for quieting of distempers, and to knowe what distempers had been or should remaine, to the end wee might the better understand how to apply our selves to pay them, and give the better accompt to the House, yet now upon the whole matter wee humbly conceive, that the way it hath falne into, the course taken by the said Officers and admitted by us (being all upon a kind of necessitie as providence hath cast it for preventing of worse) hath hitherto proved for the best, and may (through the goodnesse of God with the wisdom of the Parliament) be turn'd to a good issue.

10. Lastly. That what hath been publicly said or done by us in the transacting or prosecution of this great affaire hath been with the advice and unanimous consent or with the allowance and approbation of us all.

All which wee humbly submitt to the Parliament's better Judgment and the good pleasure of God.

PHILLIP SKIPPON.

OLIVER CROMWELL.

H. IRETON.

CHARLES FLEETWOOD.<sup>a</sup>

May 20, 1647.

<sup>a</sup> This report was presented to the House of Commons by Cromwell on May 21. *Commons' Journals*, v. 181; *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii. 348. It forms a sequel to the letters printed in Cary's *Memorials of the Civil War*, i. 205, 207, 214; and in Carlyle's *Cromwell*, Appendix, 10. The originals of those letters are amongst the Tanner MSS. in the Bodleian Library, but the MS. of this report is not amongst them. There are, however, amongst the Clarke MSS., copies of several letters which are in Tanner's collection, and the two frequently supplement each other. A news-letter amongst the *Clarendon Papers*, No. 2,520, says, "Lieutenant-General





[Letter to the Agitators.]<sup>a</sup>

Gentlemen,

My best respects. I rid hard and came to London by 4 this afternoone. The House hath ordered and voted the Army to be disbanded, Regiment by Regiment. The General's Regiment of Foote on Tuesday next to lay downe their Armes in Chelmsford Church, and they doe intend to send you down once more Commissioners to doe it of Lords and Commons; they will not pay more then two months pay, and after we be disbanded to state our Accompts and to be paid by the Excise in course. This is their good Vote, and their good vissible securitie. Pray, Gentlemen, ride night and day; wee will act here night and day for you. You must by all meanes frame a Petition in the name of all the Souldiers, to be presented to the Generall by you the Agitators, to have him in honour, justice, and honestie, to stand by you, and to tell Skippon to depart the Army and all other Officers that are not right. Bee sure now be active, and send some 30 or 40 Horse to fetch away Jackson, Gooday, and all that are naught, and be sure to possesse his Souldiers, hee will sell them and abuse them; for soe hee hath done, hee engaged to sell them for 8 weeks pay. Gent. I have it from (59) and (89) that you must doe this, and that you shall expell [them] out of the Army; and if you doe disappoint them in the disbanding of this Regiment namely (68)

Cromwell on Friday last made his report from the army, that it will without donb disband, but they will not by any means hear of going for Ireland. The greatest difficulty, he said, would be to satisfy the demands of some (whom he had perswaded as much as he could possibly) but a great part of the army remitt themselves entirely to be ordered by the Parliament." Compare Hollis, *Memoirs*, § 87, Walker, *History of Independency*, ed. 1661, pt. i. p. 31.

<sup>a</sup> This letter is headed "Letter from Lt. C. to the Agitators:" see p. 85. The second sentence refers to the votes of the House of Commons on May 25: this letter was apparently written the same day. Of the cyphers some can be easily explained: 51 stands for London, 55, the army, 44, the agitators, 43, a rendezvous, 68, probably Fairfax.



you will breake the neck of all their designes. This is the Judgment of (59) and (89), therefore Gent. followe it close. The (52) are about (42) which Coppies I send you, and let mee tell you (41) and (52) in (54) are all very gallant; I pray God keep us soe too. Now, my Ladds, if wee worke like men wee shall doe well, and that in the hands of (52); and lett all the (44) be very instant that the (55) may be called to a (43) and that with speed; delay it not, by all meanes and be sure to stirre upp the Counties to Petition, and for their rights to make their appeale to (55) to assist them. You shall heare all I can by the next. Soe till then I rest.

Yours till death,

102.

From 51, 11<sup>o</sup> at night.

Sir,

As soone as the Generall came to Walden hee sent to the severall Regiments to acquaint them, that on Friday last the House had taken their greivances under consideration, and requir'd them to desist from their meeting; and because hee would be neere the Horse Quarters to prevent inconveniences he removed to St. Edmonds Bury in Suffolke, on Tuesday last. All Fryday hee was very ill, hee left his course of phissick too soone, but your commands were above phisick. This day the Regiments understand of the proceedings on Tuesday last, that as to vindication &c. nothing is to be done till after disbanding, and that only 8 weeks is ordered them at disbanding. Truly Sir, I am loath to expresse what their sense is of this. Tis in vaine to say any thing on their behalfe; I only dread the consequences, and desire that on all sides there may be more moderation and temper. I doubt the disableing of soe faithfull an Army will be repented of; provocation and exasperation makes men thinke of that they never intended. They are posses't, as farr as I can discern with this opinion, That if they be thus



scornfully dealt withall for their faithfull services whilst the Sword is in their hands, what shall their usage be when they are dissolved? I assure you that passionate and violent counsell which is given thus to proveke the Army will in time be apprehended to be destructive, or my observation failes mee. It shall be my endeavour to keepe things as right as I can ; but how long I shall be able I knowe not. Unlesse you proccede upon better Principles, and more moderate termes then what I observed when I was in London in the bitterness of spirit in some Parliament men, Cittizens, and Clergie, and by what I perceive in the Resolution of the Souldiers to defend themselves in just things as they pretend—and truly many honest consciencious men much disobleiged by the Declaration—I cannot but imagine a storme. The Lord fitt all those that belong to him to heare<sup>a</sup> things with patience, and lett the Parliament see it is possible they may erre as well as the Army or any other State.<sup>b</sup>

25, May, 1647.

<sup>a</sup> beare ?

<sup>b</sup> The date above given can hardly be correct. Fairfax was ordered down to the army on May 18, and arrived at Walden on May 20 (ante p. 93, Rushworth, vi., 491). The letter "to the several regiments" is that of May 24, printed in Rushworth, vi., 495. The removal of the headquarters to Bury took place on Tuesday, May 25. The letter also refers to the votes of Parliament on May 25 "Tuesday last," as having this day become known to the soldiers, and was therefore probably written on Thursday, May 27. The Friday on which Fairfax was ill would then be May 21, the day after his arrival at the army; if it be taken to refer to Friday, May 28, this letter must have been written on May 29, and in that case the absence of any reference to the council of war fixed for that day is curious. The authorship of the letter is more difficult to determine. It was evidently written by some one in authority in the army, to some one in the Parliament. The author speaks of the vote ordering Fairfax to the army as "your commands," and says of the proceedings of Parliament, "unless you proceed," etc. It was very probably addressed to Cromwell. The author had been recently in London, and it was his business in the army to keep things as right as he could; it was probably one of the four commissioners sent down at the beginning of May, two of whom, Skippon and Ireton, were still with the army. From substance and style it seems more likely to have been written by the latter.



*Letter from Collonell White to the Generall.<sup>a</sup>*

May it please your Excellencie,

I am bold to send you such votes as the House hath passed in order to the disbanding of your Army, which being now resolv'd upon I shall pray to God that it may be done peaceably, upon which I looke as that which carries in it the good and safetie of this Kingdome present and future. I knowe that some are of opinion that the Army being disbanded libertie is endangered, which I confesse—but withall doe clearly discern, that if the Army shall continue it selfe against the authoritie of Parliament (for soe wee must conclude that which is passed by majoritie of Votes however contrarie to particular opinions) that there must inevitably follow the ruine and desolation of the Commonwealth, for this must needs occure to every eye (which looks forwards) to be the consequence: the Parliament being disobeyed and the Kingdome burthened with an Army voted unnecessary and to be disbanded, a force must be raised to compell obedience, and rather then faile the Scotts speedily call'd in, the issue of which (whosoever prevayles) must be the ruine of the Kingdome, and a sure stepp to the King and those that designe his ends either to bring him in (upon his owne termes) as the aire of these distempers, or to have opportunitie to raise a force such a one as may subdue and destroy both the other. On the contrarie, if it please God to dispose the Army to a quiet disbanding I am confident to say the Royall Designers have plotted in vaine, and their Councells how craftie soever are frustrated, for I am sure that if ever the King's interest appeare bare fact, without the masque of publique case and zeale against hereticks, it will not have many to countenance it, few inclining to a confidence that the King is to be trusted with power

<sup>a</sup> Colonel William White, M.P. for Pontefract; see *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii., 42, 318, 342; Hollis, *Memoirs*, § 130.





over their lives or estates. Your Excellencie I confesse hath a most difficult game to play, your relations to Parliament and Army considered especially if there shall be opposition to the Parliament's command's (which God prevent) and if such be the sequell (which if reports be true wants not its symptoms), I beseech you pardon my boldnesse that I presume to offer you my humble advice. God hath made your Excellencie his great Instrument of good unto this Kingdome in subduing the Enemies thereof. The Parliament honours and esteemes your Person and services most highly—I say the Parliament, I dare not affirme it of every individuall person, vertue is alwaies the object of envy, and honour hath ever its emulations—as God hath made you successefull in their warrs to their advantage and your owne honour see I may confidently say that your endeavours for quiet disbanding at there commands will add to their esteeme and love of you ; for I doe assure your Excellencie, though some differ about the time and manner of disbanding, yet there are not many whose opinions are to continue more forces then the number of Horse and Dragoones voted to be under your Excellencie's command. If any disturbance (upon occasion of Disbanding) shall happen in the Army (which your Excellencie cannot speedily remeady) I beseech you foresee it in time, and write to the Parliament to give you leave so come upp to London to preserve them with your advice for the quieting thereof. I cannot see that your stay in the Army in any unquiet distemper (upon this occasion) can be for your safetie, nay I am sure it must be to your apparent danger. I leave your Excellencie to imagine the reasons, I know they are obvious to you. Pardon, I beseech you, this boldnesse and presumption, which is noe other then the reall effect of Duty to you and my Country, and of honour and faithfullnesse to your Excellencie, to whome I shall ever render my selfe upon all occasions.

Your Excellencies most faithfull and most humble servant

[WILLIAM WHITE.]

London, May 28, 1647.



*Lettre from<sup>a</sup> to the Agitators.*

May 28, 11 at night.

Send this to 92.<sup>b</sup>

Send to mee and you shall have powder enough and that in your owne Quarters, 500 Barrells, and it shall not cost a penny, and on Tuesday<sup>c</sup> I will informe you how and where.

Gent.,

There is 7,000<sup>d</sup> comming downe to Chelmsford, on Monday night it will be there. The Earle of Warwick, the Lord Dewan,<sup>d</sup> of the Commons, Mr. Annesley, Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Sir John Potts, Mr. Grimstone, all these are to come as Commissioners for to disband us, therefore Gent. you knowe what to doe. Collonell Rainborrow<sup>e</sup> is to goe to his Regiment, and it is by Oxford; and

<sup>a</sup> Headed as before, "Letter from Lieutenant C—— to the Agitators."

<sup>b</sup> 92 is perhaps Cornet Joyce.

<sup>c</sup> Tuesday, June 1. These three lines appear to be an enclosure, a message to be forwarded to the agitators. It is probably from some one at Oxford.

<sup>d</sup> Lord De La Warr.

<sup>e</sup> Colonel Rainborowe was appointed on May 25 to command the forces intended for the reduction of Jersey. On May 28 he was ordered to repair to his regiment with all speed and take course to stay it at the place he shall find it at his coming down. *Commons' Journals*, v., 184, 193. For the reasons of this order see Hollis, *Memoirs*, § 95. He found it quartered about Abingdon, and in a state of great disorder. Cary, *Memorials of the Civil War*, i., 221. The cause of Rainborowe's being ordered to his regiment is related by Hollis, *Memoirs*, § 95, and is thus stated in a royalist news-letter, "Friday last Colonel Rainsborough told the House of Commons 'that his regiment was marching, being thereto invited by the other regiments of the army who have persuaded them to participate in the fortune with the rest of the soldiery.' The said Honse asked the Colonel what that signified, he answered he knew not, that he had been three months past rather a solicitor for the Colonel of that regiment, showing from time to time the wants of his soldiers, and that the country people, being injured by some of his necessitous soldiers, fell upon them, as he had formerly acquainted the House, in soe much that his regiment was constrained to dislodge, and was now marched towards Oxon." Clarendon MS. 2,522 The regiment had been quartered in Hampshire.



a Guard of Dragoones comes with the money and the Commissioners, but how many I knowe not. All the honest partie doe much rejoyce here at your courage, and the other partie doe much threaten and speake bigge; therefore I pray be carefull to have horse to apprehend and seize on the money and Commissioners before they come at the Foote; and if you can bannish Jackson and the rest out of that Regiment you will doe the worke, and be sure you doe what you can. Doe not let Jackson be there to goe to London, nor none of them of that Regiment, and you will doe well enough. Lett two horsemen goe presently to Collonell Rainborow to Oxford, and be very carefull you be not overwitted. Now breake the neck of this designe, and you will doe well, and you must now doe to make a Bolt or a shott, and not to dally, but a good partie of Horse of a 1,000, and to have spies with them before to bring you intelligence, and to quarter your Horse overnight, and to march in the night.

Soe God blesse.

I rest,

Yours,

102.

[*Sir Thomas Fairfax to Field Marshal Skippon*<sup>a</sup>.]

Sir,

I understand this day there are Votes concerning the disbanding of the Army to beginne with my owne Regiment on Tuesday next; most of the Officers are here already, but in a bussinesse of soe great concernment, I desire your Advice and company this Sattur-

<sup>a</sup> Skippon was not present at the council of war; see list of persons present, *Army Declarations*, p. 15. On June 1, the House of Commons ordered him to return at once to London, and he was again in his place on June 4. *Commons' Journals*, v., 195, 198. The letter should be dated, Bury, May 29.



day morning if it be possible. I am sorrey the time is soe short  
but necessitie hath occasioned this suddaine desire of

Your very affectionate freind,

THO. FAIRFAX.

To the Honorable

Feild Marshall Skippon.

Walden, 28th May, 1647.

*Lettre from Derby House to the Generall.*

There is 7,000<sup>l</sup> appointed to be sent to Chelmesford towards the  
Disbanding of your Army, which is to be there on Monday night  
next; wee desire you to take care that the said monies may be there  
in safety, and therefore to give Order to your Life Guard, or such  
other or more forces as you thinke fitt to be at Chelmesford by  
Munday at noone, and that they goe forth to meet the money upon  
the way from London to Chelmsford,

Soe we rest,

Your very affectionate freinds and Servants,

WARWICK.

THOMAS WILLOUGHBY.

E. MANCHESTER.

SUFFOLKE.

PH. STAPYLTON.

DENZILL HOLLIS.

GILBERT GERRARD.

WM. LEWIS.

WM. JEPHSON.

JOHN CLOTWORTHY.

JOHN TEMPLE.

Postscript.

Wee send you also herewith inclosed a copie of the Votes of the  
Houses whereby you may see their results concerning the time and  
manner of Disbanding your Army.





Saturday, May 29th, 1647.

His Excellencie this day communicated to his Councill of Warr the Vote of the House of Commons of the 25th of May,<sup>a</sup> and also a Petition lately presented to himselfe in the name of the Souldiers of 8 Regiments of Horse and five of Foote,<sup>b</sup> and left the same to their consideration, desirinc their advice thereupon for the preventing of any inconvenience that might arise.

The said Votes and Petition were read and thereupon these severall Questions being debated, were propos'd to every officer, and resolv'd as followeth.

1<sup>st</sup> Question.

Whether upon the Reports come to the Army concerning the Votes of the House of Comons on Fryday sennight last and the Resolutions on Tuesday last you find such sctisfaction in the Army in relation to the late greivances as that there be noe danger of any disturbances and inconveniences in the proceedings upon these Resolutions.

Resolved Negatively.

Vizt. Negatively 86 votes, affirmatively by 3: and 4 Votes were suspended upon their owne desires.<sup>c</sup>

2<sup>d</sup> Question.

Whether upon the satisfaction and danger implied in the last vote you thinke it needfull for preventing of inconveniencies, that

<sup>a</sup> These votes for disbanding were passed by the House of Commons on 25 May, on the report of the Derby House Committee, brought in by Hollis. They were agreed to by the Lords on May 28.

<sup>b</sup> "*The humble petition of the souldiers of the army*" is printed with the names of the agitators appended in the book of *Army Declarations*, published in 1647, p. 16, and without the names in Rushworth, vi., 498.

<sup>c</sup> A list of the names of the officers present is given in the book of *Army Declarations*, p. 15. A short account of the Councils in Rushworth, vi., 497.



the Quarters of the Army not fixed upon duty be immediately contracted.

Resolved Affirmatively.

Vizt. 82 Votes Affirmatively. 5 voted Negatively, and 6 were absent at this vote.

Ordered By this Councill, That Commissary General Ireton, Collonell Whalley, Collonell Rich; Collonell Lilburne, Collonell Okey, Collonell Hewson; Lt. Collonell Jackson, Major Desbrow, or any 5 of them, shall drawe up a Representation of the effect of the precedent votes to the Generall, with the grounds and intention thereof according to the Debates past, and also of their humble desires to the Parliament for suspending the present proceeding upon their Resolutions on Tuesday last and the resumeing the consideration thereof, and this to be presented to the Councill of Warre at the next meeting for their approbation.

The Councill adjourned till 6 a clock afternoone.

The Councill accordingly mett at 6 a clock and there were present this afternoone which were not present in the morning

Col. Sir Hardesse Waller.	Capt. Leigh.
Major Rogers.	Ensigne Perth.
Major Saunders.	Ens: Nicholls.
Capt. Rainborrow.	

And upon Debate this Question was first putt.

3<sup>d</sup> Question.

Whether upon the dissatisfaction and danger impled in the first vote at the meeting this morning you thinke it necessarie for preventing of inconveniencies That the Quarters of the Army being contracted as in the 2<sup>d</sup> vote there be a generall Rendezvouz of that part of the Army whose Quarters shall be soe contracted.



Resolved Affirmatively.

Vizt. 84 voted for the Affirmative, 7 voted for the Negative, and 9 were absent.

After the passing this last vote the Officers appointed in the morning according to the last and precedent votes in the morning deliver'd in a Paper and upon reading and debating thereof into parts this Question was put, vizt.

4<sup>th</sup> Question.

Whether this paper drawne upp and brought in by the Officers appointed thereunto by this Councill, and now read and debated in parts, shall passe with the Amendments now made as the opinion and advice of the Councill of Warre to be presented to the Generall.<sup>a</sup>

Resolved Affirmatively.

Vizt. Voted Affirmatively by 82: Negatively by 4. 13 were absent, and one was suspended, Vizt. Sir Hardresse Waller's Vote upon his own desire, in regard of his long absence from the Army and Kingdome.

Here a Letter from the Earle of Manchester, Speaker of the House of Peeres, to his Excellencie together with the former Votes of Parliament, passed both Houses and signed by the Clerke of the Parliament,<sup>b</sup> were read, after which the Question was moved by the President to this effect, vizt. Whereas by the Votes of Parliament now read severall Regiments of Foote are appointed to be disbanded at severall times and places, That upon the drawing out of those Regiments for the contracting of Quarters the said Votes may

<sup>a</sup> "The opinion and humble advise of the Councill of Warre, convened at Bury, Saturday, 29 May, 1647." *Army Declarations*, p. 12; *Lords' Journals*, ix., 226; *Old Parliamentary History*, xv., 385.

<sup>b</sup> On May 28, Parliament ordered the votes to be sent to the General with a joint-letter from the Speakers of the two Houses. The letter is printed in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 217; *Old Parliamentary History*, xv., 380. Fairfax's answer to Manchester, *Lords' Journals*, 226; *Old Parliamentary History*, 384; his reply to Lenthall, Rushworth, vi., 499; *Old Parliamentary History*, 390.



be communicated to them by their respective Officers at the head of every Regiment, to the end that if any of them appeare satisfied soe as to stay to be disbanded without disturbance or inconvenience those that shall be soe satisfied may continue at their present Quarters untill they shall be drawne out to be disbanded; and after some debate thereof this Question was put, vizt.

5<sup>th</sup> Question.

Whether the stating and determining of the Question last moved since the precedent Vote shall be laid aside for the present or noe?

Resolved Affirmatively. Nemine contradicente.

JO. MILLS, Advocate.

Letter of Intelligence,<sup>a</sup>

The Generall is at St. Edmundsbury. About 200 Officers have mett this day at a full debate. Upon reading the Votes of Parliament on Friday was sennight and Tuesday last, it was resolved by all except Lieutennant Collonell Jackson, Major Gooday, and two Officers more of the Generall's regiment, that they were all unsatisfied with those Votes; and that it would be as unsatisfactory to the Army to heare there were dayes of Rendezvous appointed to disband, and yet their greivances to be unredressed. I assure you, Sir, the more they stirre to disunite us, the more wee are cemented. God shews their actions to be but foolish in what they attempt against us, for what ever they propose for their Ends does our's while we are at a stand. A Committee is appointed (Lords and Commons) to come down on Tuesday next to disband the Generall's Regiment; they may as well send them among soe many Beares to take away their whelps. I wish your good Lord

<sup>a</sup> The mention of the council of war gives the date of this letter to 29 May.





R——<sup>a</sup> be not one, hee will hardly returne with content. The Officers now owne the Souldiers and all that's done and doe beginne to bestirre themselves. I beleive before they depart this day they will agree to move the Generall for a Rendezvouz, and if hee scruple itt, itt will be done however. All the honest People in the Citty and Country send to us to stand to them or they are undone; you will shortly heare of severall Counties Petitioning the Parliament that the Army may not be disbanded till things are settled, and that they may have their dearely earned wages, and not [be] scornefully cast off with 8 weekes pay as both Houses have now voted to be paid.<sup>b</sup> The House of Commons pass'd all Tuesday Votes unanimously (our freinds withdrawing). The Lords were divided 12 against us, 11 protested for us against every vote. Wharton was absent or else all had been equall. I hope in the Lord, if wee baffle these Maligoe [maligne?] Grandees in this their maine designe to divide us by disbanding Regiment after Regiment they will be put to new Councells, and court us to accept of Arrears (which they can easily pay us had they but will) if wee will demand noe further and accept of the Irish Service. The Citty Petitioned for 20,000 for to be imployed about the Lync of the Communication, in order to make warre against us as we apprehend. Our drawing unto a Rendezvouz upon it will undoubtedly put them into a military posture and great distractions. Oxford, where our Magazine is, wee have well secured. I wish things at Holdenby were as secure. Itt is incredible the Unitie of Officers and Souldiers except some few Officers who have put themselves in print in opposition to the Army, and now the Souldiers are Petitioning to cast them out or else they will doe it themselves. Sheffeild's Regiment hath begunne it already, dismounted their dissenting Officers, and seized their Horses and Armes.

<sup>a</sup> Robartes.

<sup>b</sup> According to the *Lords Journals*, ix., 207, only three Lords protested.



Saith Lieutennant Collonell Jackson to mee will the Foot do soe, I told him they would, for eight of his Companies had subscribed to stand with the Army and were resolved to cashier their Officers: the poore man sighed at it, but Mr. Edwards his Parishoner and Ghostly Father soe awes him hee dares not comply with the Army. Major Generall Skippon is quite lost in the Army by endeavouring to please both sides: hee will not gett any men with him, and I much feare if hee stay hee will be at a nonplus. Pye's Regiment and Graves' are all engaged with the Army. Sir Robert Pye drew his sword and another Captaine; the Souldiers hem'd them round, made them putt up and give present satisfaction, dismounted the Captaine, and beat him out of their Quarters. Graves look'd on and said never a word. All the Dragoones at Holdenby are come in upon Engagement to the Army; soe now they are all of a peice. I pray God the Souldiers gett not too much head; the officers must instantly close with them, or else there will be disorder.

*[Letter from the Committee at Derby House to Sir T. Fairfax.]*

Sir,

Wee received yours of the 30th of May<sup>a</sup> from Bury. The Commissioners are already on their way to Chelmesford, and being instructed for that service, we desire you to be with them at the place appointed; and whereas your letter seemes to imply that there are soe many Greivances to be further presented to the House from the Souldiers, the Houses have satt severall dayes upon that bussinesse, and have granted whatever they thought fitt for them to grant, or for the Army to desire, and wee are confident the Houses will expect a punctuall obedience in their disbanding according to their orders, And we desire you that if your Life Guard be not

<sup>a</sup> Fairfax's letter of May 30 is printed in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 226.



yet come to Chelmsford. That you will order it to attend you there as soone as possible may be in this service. Soe we rest.

Your affectionate freinds and servants,  
 DENZILL HOLLIS, T. LINCOLNE,  
 PH. STAPYLTON, WW. LEWIS,  
 WM. JEPHSON, WM. WALLER.

Derby House, 31 May, 1647.

For the Right Honorable, Sir Thomas Fairfax.

31 May, 1647.

At the Committee for the affaires of Ireland at Derby House.

Ordered

That such of the Traine of Artillery and the Provisions thereunto belonging (apperteyning to the Army) as were either at Oxford<sup>a</sup> or Wallingford shall be brought up to London and put into the stores in the Tower, And that all the Ordnance and Ammunition that belong to the Garrison of Oxford be also brought up and put into the Tower.

That the said Traine and Provisions be brought from Oxford to

<sup>a</sup> Colonel Richard Ingoldsby's regiment was then quartered at Oxford. They were to be disbanded at Woodstock on June 14, and £3,500 was sent down to pay them, but recalled by vote of June 1. "The messenger being too slow, the money was got into Oxford before he could overtake it, and the soldiers, notwithstanding the Parliament's commands, were resolved not to part with it. The convoy of Dragoons who had guarded it from London attempted to have carried it back again, but the garrison soldiers fell upon them in the High Street by All Souls' College (where the money then stood), wounded several, and beat the rest so shamefully out of the city that they were glad not only to leave the money but a waggon and team of horses behind them." Wood, *Annals*, ii., 508. The agitators despatched Cornet Joyce and a body of horse to seize the magazine at Oxford, which was effected about June 1. Hollis, *Memoirs*, § 95; *Huntingdon's reasons for laying down his commission*, *Mascer's Tracts*, i. 398. According to John Harris, whose statement is copied by Huntingdon and Hollis, the seizure of the magazine was approved by Cromwell, *The Grand Design*, 1647, p. 3.



Abbingdon by land, and from thence by water, together with that at Wallingford, to London.

That the Horses belonging to the Traine be brought by land to London and such other things as may best come by land as the Comptroller shall thinke fitt.

That the Officers and others belonging to the traine doe come to London to disband, and that they shall receive their two months pay as the rest of the Army receives upon their delivery of the Traine into the Tower.

That the Firelocks belonging to the Traine doe Guard the same to London.

That these Votes concerning the Traine be sent to Sir Thomas Fairfax, and a letter written to him to desire him to give order for the putting them in execution.

GUALTER FROST.

*[To Sir Thomas Fairfax from the Committee at Derby House.]*

Sir,

The House of Commons hath referred to this Committee to disband the Traine, and to bring the provisions belonging to it into the Tower, in prosecution of which wee have made the Votes which we send you inclosed, and desire you to give your Orders for the bringing the said Traine to the Tower according to those Votes. Soe wee rest,

Your very affectionate freinds and Servants

WM. WALLER,

WM. JEPHSON,

WM. LEWIS,

T. LINCOLNE,

DENZILL HOLLIS,

PH. STAPYLTON.

Derby House, 31 May, 1647.





[*Sir Thomas Fairfax to the Committee at Derby House.*]

My Lords and Gentlemen

Having formerly written unto your Lordships concerning the former Letter about the disbanding of severall Regiments of Foote, and since that time having presented unto both Houses the result of the Councill of Warre concerning that bussinesse, I humbly desire I may not be thought to neglect your orders (considering the temper of the Army and my desires to prevent greater inconveniencies) if the Regiments be not drawne out at the time appointed; hoping speedily to receive the further pleasure of the Parliament herein, which I hope will tend to the prevention of further distraction, I remaine,

T. F.

Edmonds Bury, May 31, 1647.

[*News-letter from London.<sup>a</sup>*]

Sir,

I suppose from many you will understand how much the great Enemies of the Army lost ground yesterday, notwithstanding their motion of locking upp doores, and having an oath ready in case you [they?] should gett a decree for warr. The Lords being sent unto to sitt, and all out of a confidence to carry it by the end of the day; but when it came to the pull soe much sadnes, feare, and deadnesse was over their partie that they were ready to sinke with thoughts of it. I never saw mens lookes soe changed. Sir, in short, it was put off to this morning, when it's deem'd they will

<sup>a</sup> Undated, but pretty certainly written on June 2 from the references to the votes of the Commons of June 1, as to locking up the doors and sending to the Lords to sit. The end of the debate was a resolution "That this debate of this business concerning the army be laid aside for the present: and resumed the first business to-morrow morning; and nothing to intervene." *Commons' Journals*, v., 195.



find as little life to a new warr as yesterday. The great Citty of London having been privately felt, have noe minde to doe any thing further then redeeme publique faith and gett Brokeridg money ; its believed the combustion [conclusion ?] will be this, the going of the supernumerary to Ireland under their owne Officers, and there wee shall be put to it, the Lords having concurr'd to the Ordinance for those to be continued here according to the desire of the Comons as I am told.

[*News-letter from London.*]

London, 3 June, 1647.

All the talke in London is of your Army, some speake ill of you and many well ; for believe it you have a very considerable party in the Citty, they like well your proceedings and will stick by you. The Petitioners, who had a while agoe their Petition burnt, presented another Petition to the House of Commons on Wednesday last; itt was delivered in by Sir William Waller and read, but noe answeare given to it, and was carryed by some few votes to be laid aside; but the House that day insisted on one maine point desired in that Petition (but did it not in Relation to the Petition) about undue Elections, and voted out two of their Members for Wales, and were about nominating a Committee to receive Information about Members unduly Elected.<sup>a</sup> It is noe newes to tell you how the House was startled the day before when they understood from the Generall the Army would not disband, and how it was moved to send for the Generall, and to raise 10,000 men to assist or compell a disbanding ; but all that was laid aside, only the money sent for back againe, and the fortnight's pay to Colonel Rainsborough's men, but the monies wee have news just

<sup>a</sup> See p. 92 ; this second petition was rejected by 123 to 112 votes, Hollis and Sir William Lewes being tellers for the majority. *Commons' Journals*, v., 195. Sir Richard Price's and Sir Philip Percival's cases were referred to a committee.



now is step'd by the Souldiers at Woodstock. Itt had been well if that at Chelmesford had been the like.<sup>a</sup> I hope the Magazine at Oxford will be carefully looked unto. The Militia of London goe on bravely (as some suppose),<sup>b</sup> and have voted all the Godly party out of the Commission of the trayned Bands ; butt this is not well relished by many, and few of the Souldiers ('tis conceived) will be subject to the new Officers they intend to put over them ; the new modell for the Guards is likewise disbanded, only 360 under new Officers to keepe the Guards.

[*A Letter from Cornet Joyce.*']

Sir,

Wee have secured the King. Graves is runne away, hee gott out about one a'clock in the morning and soe went his way. Itt is suspected hee is gone to London; you may imagine what hee will doe there. You must hasten an answer to us, and lett us knowe what wee shall doe. Wee are resolved to obey noe orders but the

<sup>a</sup> See Cary's *Memorials of the Civil War*, i., 219-222, and Rushworth, vi., 499, 500, 502.

<sup>b</sup> See on the London Militia, Rushworth, vi. 648, 745.

<sup>c</sup> The question whether this letter is the famous letter addressed to Cromwell is discussed in the preface. There are reasons for believing that it should be dated June 3. It appears to have been written immediately after the events related in it. Joyce surrounded Holdenby on the night of Wednesday, June 2, and occupied it about daybreak on June 3. By eight the house was in his possession, and he was peacefully setting his guards. According to the letter of Lord Montague, one of the Commissioners, Colonel Greaves escaped before one of the clock on the Wednesday night, which agrees exactly with the statement in this letter. About one o'clock in the morning seems to refer to the morning of the day on which the letter was written, rather than the morning of the day before. By the morning of the 4th, Joyce had arranged to carry the King to Newmarket, and needed no instructions. His plans were made.

The best accounts of the seizure of the King are that in Rushworth, vi., 513, apparently written by Joyce himself, and those contained in the letters of Lord Montague, dated June 3rd and 4th. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 237, 240, 250.



Generall's; wee shall followe the Commissioners directions while wee are heere, if iust in our Eyes. I humbly entreat you to consider what is done and act accordingly with all the hast you can; wee shall not rest night nor day till wee heare from you.

Yours and the Kingdomes  
faithfull Servant till death,

GEORGE JOYCE.

Holdenby this 4th of June  
at 8 of the Clock in the  
Morning.

[*A Letter from Cornet Joyce.<sup>a</sup>*]

There hath been a partie of Horse, about 500, at Holdenby, who

<sup>a</sup> As in the case of Joyce's first letter, there is no note of any name or address. It is possible however to deduce from the contents of the letter certain conclusions as to the person to whom it was directed. Joyce was now on his way to Newmarket, where the rendezvous of the army was to take place. The letter is evidently written to some person at Newmarket, near it, or on the way to it. He is asked to assist in conveying the King thither, by giving Joyce a party to help him, and by coming with his friends to meet the King. The person to whom the letter is addressed was apparently not in the plot himself. Joyce thinks it necessary to tell him that the King has been taken from Holdenby, that it is at the King's own desire that he is being conveyed to Fairfax, and he also thinks it necessary to protest the excellence of his own intentions. After telling him what has been done he urges him to make the best of it. These points suggest that Joyce was not writing to an accomplice but rather to a person whom he wanted to become one after the event. A suggestion based on these general conclusions may perhaps be ventured. Joyce purposed to go to Newmarket by way of Cambridge, as the fact that Whalley met him on the way the next day proves (*Lords' Journals*, ix. 248). His route from Huntingdon to Cambridge lay through the hundred of Papworth. On May 30, Major Adrian Scroope and that portion of the regiment of Colonel Graves which was not actually assigned to guard the King had been ordered to take up their quarters at once in Papworth hundred. (See Appendix C.) Had Scroope and his soldiers been so disposed they could have seriously hindered Joyce's journey to Newmarket. I suggest therefore that this letter was addressed to Major Scroope in general reliance on his sympathy and assistance. If so, Joyce in asking for "a partie" employs the word in the technical sense of a detachment of horse, and by "friends" probably means to ask Scroope to bring all the officers he can to meet the King.





have secured and taken his Majestie into their Custodie, and the King who doth desire to speake with Sir Thomas Fairfax. — The King is now at Huntington Towne, and will be at New Markett to morrow. Persuade all the freinds you can to come and meet him, and endeavour to doe for the best. Certainly God hath appeared in a mighty manner, and therefore I shall wholly rely on you for what I desire, which is a partie to doe that which may be justifiable before God and Man. Hast, Hast, think on mee.

I rest,

GEORGE JOYCE, Cor<sup>tt</sup>.

Huntington att 11 of the clock  
this night the 4<sup>th</sup> of June 1647.

---

<sup>a</sup> Read this inclosed, seale it upp, and deliver itt what ever you doe, that soe wee may not perish for want of your assistance. Lett the Agitators know once more wee have done nothing in our owne name, but what wee have done hath been in the name of the whole Army, and wee should not have dared to have done what wee have, if wee had not been sure that you and my best old friend had consented hereunto, and knew that I speak nothing but truth.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> In the copy from which this letter is printed these lines are appended to the preceding letter as if they were a postscript to it. This appendix however is evidently not addressed to the same person as the letter. I take that letter to be itself the enclosure referred to, and this an endorsement appealing to some person to deliver it. The person to whom it was addressed was evidently in constant communication with the agitators. I should suggest that it was directed to some inferior officer, or possibly to some agitator belonging to the regiment of Colonel Graves, that he might deliver it to Scroope.

<sup>b</sup> There are two copies of this letter. In one, the last line runs, "I know that I speak nothing but truth." The reading given above is that of the earlier copy.



[*A Letter from York.*]

Sir,

Wee heare you have trustees engaging Souldiers heere, and not without successe, Collonel Pointz<sup>a</sup> beginnes to be much troubled, and writes to the Parliament this weeke of Colonell Boynton's<sup>b</sup> turning a Presbiterian out of Scarborow Castle. Hee hath desired of the Major and Aldermen that he may have an addition of men for the Tower; they answered they have a Company of Cittizens which shall be ready for the publique service but will admitt noe strangers, according to your Order given them, which is to keepe the disposall of this place as much in their owne power as they can and out of the hands of one who will, it may be, be too forward to engage. Then I wish you Justice and us peace, for if wee beginne againe the second woe will be worse then the first. I wish your Army a reparation in point of honour, but, were there not w[e]ightier causes, that will be look'd upon as unequall

<sup>a</sup> A life of Poyntz is given in Sir John Maclean's *Historical and Genealogical Memoir of the Family of Poyntz*. Sydenham Poyntz, b. 1607, was the fourth son of John Poyntz of Reigate. Originally a London apprentice he took service in Germany and rose to high rank in the imperial army. On his return to England he entered the parliamentary service, and on May 27, 1645, was voted by the House of Commons the command of a regiment of horse and a regiment of foot in the north, and shortly after was nominated commander-in chief of the seven associated northern counties. *Commons' Journals*, iv., 248, 250. On September 24, 1645, he defeated the King's forces at Rowton Heath, near Chester. On March 13, 1647, he was confirmed by the Commons in the post of Governor of York, and Clifford's Tower was also placed under his command. He had some difficulty in getting control of Clifford's Tower. A news-letter written about this time says, "The northern general struts and looks big, and instead of true blue hath got a bundle of orange ribbon in his hat, much like a plume of feathers behind." The adherents of Fairfax wore blue ribbons in their hats, the Levellers adopted sea-green as their colour, and the Clubmen in 1645 chose white ribbons. Lilburne, *An Impeachment of High Treason against Oliver Cromwell*, p. 41; Whitelock, *Memorials*, iii., 23, ed. 1854; Sprigge, *Anglia Rediviva*, p. 61, ed. 1854.

<sup>b</sup> Matthew Boynton, confirmed as governor of Scarborough, March 13, 1647. In the second civil war he sided with the royalists. Rushworth, vii., 1370.



to the hazard of new trouble, and they slack (?) doe well to dispencc with it as much as they cann ——— this very advice that the Generall be not engaged against the Parliament, and that it be not expected from him by the Army. For, in case an agreement come after a little busling, his joyning with them will robb the Kingdome of that employment of his from which wee expect much benefitt. And I hope the Army will be content that he carry faire to the Parliament.

J. B.

June 4<sup>th</sup> 1647.

[*Colonel Whalley to Sir Thomas Fairfax.*]<sup>a</sup>

Sir,

His Majestie about 5 of the clock this afternoone was pleased to be a little merry and laughingly told mee hee now perceived your Excellencie would not force him back to Holdenby, which I perceived hee tooke very well. I told him hee might rest confident you was very tender of his honnour, and would secure him in what you might, what your resolutions were, I knew not; hee desired to give order to his servants to prepare to goe to New Markett to morrow. I desired his Majestie to forbear till I had acquainted you with his desires, and had orders from your Excellencie to that purpose. His Majestie longs to be there, and this night expects to heare from you, and to be answered in his desires.

<sup>a</sup> On Friday, June 4, when Fairfax was at Kenford, near Bury, he received the news of the seizure of the King, and immediately sent Whalley and his regiment to march to Holdenby to take charge of the guard of the King and attend the Commissioners there. On the morning of Saturday, June 5, he learnt that Joyce had on the preceding day removed the King from Holdenby to Hinchinbrook, near Huntingdon, and sent Whalley further orders to guard the King back to Holdenby, despatching also two more regiments of horse to assist him. To his great surprise the King refused to return. See Fairfax's letters of June 4 and 7, *Old Parliamentary History*, xv., 400, 409; *Lords' Journals*, ix., 243, 248.



I doubt not but your Excellencie will take into serious consideration a bussinesse of soe high a nature; the Lord direct you, which is the prayer of

Sir,

Your Excellencies most faithfull  
Servant,

EDW. WHALLEY.

[Sunday] June 6<sup>th</sup> 1647.

*[Letter from Collonell Whalley to Sir Thomas Fairfax.<sup>a</sup>]*

Sir,

I have acquainted his Majestie with your orders; hee seemes to be very well pleased. I told him from your Excellencie that your coach should be ready to waite upon him; hee thanks you and desires it may be sent hither to goe by him, in case it should raine hee may make use of itt. His Majestie intended to be upon his march presently after dinner, I suppose it will be betwixt one and two of the clock. I shall not faile further to advertise you, soe soone as hee shall be ready to mount I shall send presently to your Excellencie. His Majestie is resolved to goe through Cambridge, though last night he seem'd to be otherwise minded. I suppose having condescended soe much to him in a great bussinesse you will [not] crosse him in this; I shall take it for your pleasure if I receive not contrary commands from you. I cease not to be,  
Sir,

Your most faithfull and humble servant,  
EDWARD WHALLEY.

From the Court at Childersey.  
June 7, 1647.

<sup>a</sup> Fairfax's answer to this letter is shown by a letter to Lenthal, June 8. Rushworth, vi., 551.





*[News-Letter from Newmarket.<sup>a</sup>]*June 7<sup>th</sup> 1647.

This day the Generall, Lieutennant Generall, Commissary Generall Ireton, and Lt. Generall Hammond and divers Officers of the Army went to the [Lady] Cutts house where his Majesty was, according to his Majesties desire the day before. When they came there, they were according to the usuall manner received by the King with civilitie; after some generall discourse of things, the King went into the garden, and the Generall, his Officers, and the Commissioners went together and conferred upon the whole carriage of the businesse. The Commissioners seem'd to be much unsatisfied, whereupon the King coming up againe, the Generall and the Commissioners came to him and Cornett Joyce, who was the man that managed the bussinesse in secureing the King, was call'd before them all. The King charg'd him with saying hee had the Commission of the whole Army for what hee did, and by consequence had the Generall's, hee being the principall part of the Army. The Cornett replied, and did avow hee told his Majestie hee had not the Generall's Commission when the King did particularly demaund it of him, and that [when] the King asked him by what Commission hee did come to secure him hee answered the King, if hee pleased to looke about hee might see by what authoritie, meaning the Troopers that were ready mounted. Whereupon the King publicly said to the whole Company, that it was true indeed hee did say soe, and it was likewise true all the Gentlemen that were mounted on horseback did cry out givinge their approbation to what hee said, but saith the King I was notwithstanding perswaded that hee could not venture to attempt such a thing as to bring mee away but that hee had the councill of greater persons. Then Mr. Crewe, Sir John Cook extreemly prest against Cornett Joyce, that hee deserved to loose his head for what hee had done, that hee had injured the Parliament, the Generall, the Army, and the Commissioners intrusted with the King, and had brought them away without their

\* An abridged version of this letter is given in Rushworth, vi., 549.



consent; whereupon Cornett Joyce replyed, That the King gave his consent to come, and that the Commissioners gave their consent to come, and told them hee would not bring them without their consent. I, sayth the King and the Commissioners, you told us wee should goe, and then it was in vaine for us not to consent, but sayth the King, now I am come, I had the promise of these Gentlemen to be conveyed to New Markett; I take them to be men of their words, and were I meere stranger mett upon the high way and stopt from going on, none in civilitie but would provide conveniencies for mee, here I have none, and therefore I doe expect to morrow to goe for New Markett, and desire Sir Thomas Farfax and his Officers [to] conferre together about it, for the Commissioners say they have noe power at all further to dispose of mee, for their power ended at Holdenby, and was limited to that place, though the Commissioners be the same; whereupon the Generall and Officers withdrew and conferr'd together and afterwards returned to his Majestic, and told him, as they did at the beginning, hee was removed from Holdenby without their privitie, knowledge, or consent, yet notwithstanding since hee is unwilling to goe back, if the Commissioners present with them will condescend, the Generall would not be against his going to New Markett. Sayth the King, This is a perfect denyall.

[*John Cosens to Alderman Adams.*]

Newcastle, 7 June, 1647.

I am assured, That the present feare of a sudden change is better knowne to you, and more deeply considered by you, then my selfe, by how much neerer you are related to the publike trust of the Kingdome; but this storme threatening us (and you in us) to fall heere, both as suddenly and as heavily as upon any other place whatsoever, I could not forbear to give you my present sence of our condition in this place. This Regiment<sup>a</sup> is betweene twelve

<sup>a</sup> Skippon's regimen



hundred and foureteene hundred strong, the Commander whereof (which makes all our danger) absent, there being not one Officer of the whole Regiment of considerable command that I knowe of which standeth well affected to the Parliament and Government but one Captaine and Lieutennant; some of the rest of the Captaines have been lately at London, and this weeke unexpected came suddenly and hastily home, and as it is reported did not at all see their Commander in cheife the Feild Marshall, and since they came they spare not to speake their intentions of feighting freely. How they speake of the Citty you may guesse by their language in their Declaration, and how they talke of the Parliament many wonders to heare; to morrow they muster the Regiment, and a flying report goes that they will turne all the Scotts out of the Towne. On Saturday morning soe soone as the post came, and that the Major had returned his letters for the Deputy Governour, who then by reason of his sicknesse would not goe, but without question they doe now joyne Councells, and will when time serves joyne forces together also; as yet they come not to doe any thing visibile, but certainly as soone as they receive the word they will secure this Towne and the Castle of Tinmouth in a moment: for my part I looke for it every day. And I pray God there may be soe much time left as may admitt of a recovery and timely helpe; the only way will bee in my apprehension that the Feild Marshall doe post hither with all speed, soe may hee both save this Towne and his Regiment; another way I knowe not, only I seriously recommend it unto you and those in whose hands helpe lyeth, that that you would please to make it knowne unto them. Whether [were?] this Regiment out of the Towne and a Commission sent to any person here of trust together with a proportion of Armes, there were noe doubt but all would be well and the Towne kept safe by our owne inhabitants, for the body of the Commons of this Towne are right, and soe I thinke are the Common Souldiers of the Garrison, only the Commanders of both are to be doubted, and what may be the issue God only knowes; for my owne partieular if they become



Masters, I expect noe more favour from them, nor lesse crueltie then from our last Enemies. But now, good Sir, for this Townes sake, for the Citties sake and for the Kingdomes sake, lay this to heart, and improve your power to rescue this soe desireable a Morsell from the mouth of the Adversary, and more I shall not say, the consequence thereof in relation to your Citty and the Kingdome being enough knowne unto you.<sup>a</sup>

To Alderman Adams, London.

*[Letter to Skippon from some one in the Army.]*

May it please your Honour,

Before the Parliament Commissioners came into the Army on the Heath there were read these ensuing Articles at the head of the severall Regiments, vizt.

1. That dureing the time of the Commissioners being at the Rendezvous and the time of their speeches the Soldiers to be very silent and civill towards the said Commissioners.

2. That all Cinque Ports be presently seized on and secured, least the treasury should be conveyed out of the Kingdome.

3. That all Committeemen, Excisemen be presently seized on and secured untill they and every of them doe give upp their accompts from the beginning of this Warre.

4. That a Way be forthwith consulted for the speedy prevention of the Scotch Invasion to disturbe the Kingdome.

These or to the same effect with many more were read and applauded, but command was given that none should move any of these to any of your Members. Pardon I humbly beseech your

<sup>a</sup> From John Cosens. Rushworth, vi., 559; see also *Commons' Journals*, June 12, and two letters from Skippon on the subject. Cary, i. 229, 230.





Honour my presumption for this my troubleing of your Honour,  
 it beeing out of a reall intention to the Kingdome's good from  
 Your humblest and most faithfull Servant.

June 10th, 1647,  
 at 7 at night.

Some Committees being at the Randezvouz and heareing it are  
 gone aside for it I assure your Honour.

To the Honorable Field Marshall Generall  
 Skippon at the Rose in Cambridge, These  
 with my duty and humble service presented.

[*Letter from Major Twistleton to his Excellencie.*]

May it please your Excellencie,

By order from Major Generall Skippon<sup>a</sup> (at Newcastle) I drewe  
 out of my Colonell's Regiment 150 Horse under the command of  
 Captaine Anthony Markham, who were appointed to attend his  
 Majestie to Holdenby as a guard, and to receive further Orders  
 from Collonell Graves; where they accordingly continued untill  
 Friday the 4th of this instant, when his Majestie was removed  
 from thence by a partie of Horse under the command of Cornett  
 Joyce, with whome parte of those of our Regiment are gone, the  
 Officers and about 70 Souldiers are returned to the Regiment,  
 [not]perceiving the Cornett nor any other to have any order from your  
 Excellencie or other Superiour Officer to command them further.  
 I thought it noe lesse then my duty herewith to acquaint your

<sup>a</sup> On June 15, the House of Commous voted that the General should deliver the  
 person of the King to the Commissioners formerly appointed, that he should be  
 placed at Richmond, and guarded by Colonel Rossiter's regiment. Twistleton was  
 Major of Rossiter's regiment. His letter shows that a detachment of that regiment  
 had before formed part of the King's guard. Further references to the subject are  
 contained in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 283, 287, 289. Twistleton succeeded Rossiter  
 in the command of the regiment.



Excellencie, and humbly to crave your order whether to returne those to their former trust, or remaund the other from the Army to the Regiment. What in this or otherwise your Excellencie shall please to command shall be carefully and punctually obeyed by him who is

Your honour's most humble and faithfull servant,

PHIL. TWISLETON.

Lincolne, 11th June, 1647.

[*General Fairfax to Major Twistleton.*]

Sir,

I received your letter desiring my orders for the further disposall of that party which formerly was appointed out of your Regiment to attend upon the king to Holdenby; and in regard I perceive the occasion of the party soe dividing itselfe proceeded from the affection of some of your Souldiers who have seene and been fully possess of the reall and honest desires of the Army in order to the peace and libertie both of the Kingdome and themselves, have uninvited resolved to engage and stay with the Army in the lawfull prosecutions of the generall good, and therefore not doubting but all good men who understand us will joyne with us therein, I thought fitt to desire you to march upp with your Regiment to the Army, with all convenient speed; and least you or any else may be unsatisfied either in our proceedings, intentions, or present condition I have sent unto you Lieutenant Lloyd<sup>a</sup> of Collonell Fleetwood's Regiment, who is a faithfull man and one well knowne unto you, to give you a full Accompt of all our whole bussinesse.

[T. FAIRFAX.]

<sup>a</sup> Lieutenant Griffith Lloyd.



[*Letter from Sir Thomas Fairfax to Collonell Whalley.*]

Sir,

Having given orders for removing the head quarters to St. Alban's,<sup>a</sup> and the rest of the Army thereabouts, I send this to you to give you notice of it that you may order your bussinesse accordingly, not knowing whether the removing the Army that distance from you may not produce some inconveniency in refference to the safety of the king's person. I shall therefore committ it to you to take an especiall care of that your charge in using all meanes tending to the securitie of his Majesty's person, not only in keeping strict guards, but also in sending out scouts into the Countries about you, especially into Norfolke, where I understand there hath been lately some kinde of disturbance as if they intended to rise. In case there shall appeare any such reall danger I desire you to secure his Majestie by bringing him towards the Army, and to send me timely notice thereof. Not doubting of your care herein, I remaine

[THOMAS FAIRFAX.]

Royston,  
June 11<sup>th</sup> 1647.

[*Letter intend[ed] to severall Counties concerning the Armies  
Engagements.*]

Honoured Gentlemen and our Christian freinds,

Wee suppose you have received some information from our

<sup>a</sup> The headquarters were at St. Alban's on the night of June 12. Fairfax received on June 11 a petition from the peaceable and well-affected inhabitants of the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 260, 261, 263; Rushworth, vi., 559.



printed papers concerning our late proceedings with the Parliament in relation to our affaires as Souldjers, we meane the bussinesse of Ireland, of our Arrears, the Declaration against us as Enemies after soe many experiences in bloud of our fidelitie to the Kingdome, and all these managed and carried on by a prevailling party who have abused and misledd the Parliament against their faithfull freinds and the Kingdomes interest in many particulars. As to these things wee have named we desire to referre you to our printed papers, and the declarations wee are setting forth ; but the trueth is, whilst these things were in agitation, that greate designe of the prevayling partie against the Parliament and this kingdomes interest does discover it selfe in their transactions with us. We are unavoidably involved as subjects both respectively to our selves and the publique to keepe our swords in our hands. Wee hope within three or fowre dayes to publish a Declaration which wee are confident will give satisfaction to all honest and reasonable men of our proceedings. In the meane time wee thought fitt to give you this breife accompt, that we are come neere London without the least intent of giving occasion of a new warr, but hope fully to prevent it ; wee seeke not our selves but the accomplishing those ends and obteyning those things which the Parliament held forth as arguments to invite us to undertake this warre, vizt., the recovery of the rights and liberties of the subject, the opposing tyranny and oppression, the obteyning a firme and well grounded peace, and those other things which the Parliament held forth in their severall Declarations, without which wee had not engaged our selves ; and now having through the good hand of God brought the warr to an end, wee would be loath the Kingdome should loose soe blessed a fruite and harvest of our labour, as we perceive some bad men are designing to defeate it of. Wee meddle not with matters of Religion or Church Government, leaving those to the Parliament. Wee desire as much as any to mainteyne the authority of Parliament, and the fundamentall government of the Kingdome. We seeke justice against those that have wronged us and the Kingdome.





To which wee desire the concurrence of you and all good men  
and rest

Your very affectionate Freinds.<sup>a</sup>

St. Alban's, June 13, 1647.

[*News-letter from London.*]

London : 13 June, 1647.

Our cheife news here is of your Army, and I can assure you wee have twenty stories in a day and scarce ever a true one ; but your coming neere London I promise you put the Parliament and Citty into a shrewd fright. The Parliament satt hard at it Fryday and Satturday,<sup>b</sup> and soe did the Militia and Comon Councill ; it was much urged to raise forces against you, nay and they would have done it if they could have found any way how. Many Officers Fryday and Satturday listed themselves at the Committee at Derby House, and the Militia were consulting how to put the Citty into a posture, and to arme all, and have also listed some, but they find soe much difficulty in the manner they have laid all aside againe, and now intend to come to you with good words and are sending an answere to your letter by foure Aldermen and 8 Councill men. The Parliament have sent Sir Thomas Widdrington and Collonell White with additionall instructions. On Satturday morning things wrought after another manner, for upon the report of your being neere, all the Trayned Bands of London were commanded to rise on paine of death, and all the shoppes to be shutt upp ; and if this had taken, more pretty feates had been acted, the suspected party in London been secured, and they would have mett your Army (after you had been declared enemies) and done strange things ; but this designe comes to nothing, for the trayned Bands would

<sup>a</sup> From the officers of the army, but apparently never sent. Compare the letter of June 10, given by Carlyle and Rushworth.

<sup>b</sup> Friday, June 11, and Saturday, June 12. See Rushworth, vi., 553, 557.



not budge, not 10 men of some companies appeared, and many companies none at all but the Officers; nay the very boyes in the streets jeered the drumms as they went about with their charge upon paine of death. The Westminster Regiment made a great appearance, and the Lord Mayor<sup>a</sup> was in person very active to compell the shopp keepers to shutt upp shopp, by which means most about the Exchange and Cornhill were shutt, but few in other places; and those that did shutt upp were of the right stamp, and these many of them, understanding upon what slight ground that command was and being laughed at by others, opened their shoppes againe in the afternoone, when also the Trayned Bands were discharged, but stronger Guards kept then formerly.<sup>b</sup>

[*News-letter from London.*<sup>c</sup>]

Sir,

The game is hard that is plai'd but hee that hath ordered hitherto will still noe doubt for the best.

<sup>a</sup> Sir John Gayer, impeached for his share in the tumults of July. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 201.

<sup>b</sup> On June 11, a Committee of Lords and Commons was appointed to join with the Committee of the Militia of the City of London, with power to put London in a posture of defence, suppress insurrections, etc. The same afternoon the letter from Fairfax and the chief officers of the army to the city of London was communicated to the Parliament, and at the request of the city the army was ordered not to approach within 40 miles of London. On the 12th, hearing that the army was still approaching, the Mayor and Aldermen despatched a conciliatory answer to the letter and abandoned all intention of resistance. *Commons' Journals*, v., 206-209; Rushworth, vi., 554, 557; see also *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii., 355.

<sup>c</sup> Undated, but pretty clearly written early in June, as shown by the reference to the advice of the council of war of May 29 as recent; it was evidently written soon after the army declared its resolution not to disband, and before its political demands had been definitely set forth, i.e., before the representation of the army of June 14. On 11 June, Parliament and City made preparations for fighting, on 12 June, the City gave way and sent a deputation to the army with a conciliatory answer to the letter of the officers of June 10. As that letter was written by Cromwell the statement about his speaking home must refer to it.



I perceiv the purging the House is inclined unto here, for the Army to stand upon, and a Councell faithfully to transact martiall affaires (and the truth is there is noe safety without now, for that you have false Elections, Members not capeable, such as have been corrupt and all to pay their debts will goe farre); and indeed this must be, and if possible the Lords and Commons sitt together, at least be declared jointly the Supream Judicature; and before theis severall particulars can be gone through, what time will be spent; if that a party to Ireland could goe, and the rest see the other done it were excellent. I like well your last results at Councell of Warr on pursuing the designes of disbanding. The truth is the Army may be now instrumentall of the greatest good that ever this Kingdome or any other tasted on, and it's cleere delivered from apparent ruine, which by these wretched instruments would have been brought upon it. Feare but the Citties, for to feare them is to conquer them, and feare hath done that; and now what say you to what I have ever told you, that the Citties being feared by the Parliament who had such an Army argued they were men of as much cowerdize as any in the world. O. Cromwell spake as gallantly and as home as if he had been charging his enemies in the feild.

[*News-letter from London June 14.*]

The House was this day informed, That about a thousand reduced Officers intended to addresse themselves to the Houses for their Arrears. It was thereupon ordered to send to the Militia for a stronger guard, which was speedily sent downe by a message to the House of Commons, and a Committee was appointed to goe to some of the cheife of the Petitioners and acquaint them with the ill sence the House had of this their publique meeting in the feild and to require them to disperse forthwith, and when all their Accompts were audited (which would be on Thursday next) the House would take speedy course for the payment of them. A Committee was then appointed to drawe a Declaration, That noe



persons should upon paine of death gather themselves in a tumultuous way, and likewise what they have done in satisfaction of the Soldiers, and what they intend. A message came from the Lords; That their Lordships had appointed a Committee to drawe a Declaration to satisfie the Kingdome what the Houses had done, and what they would doe for the future, for the ease of the subjects, for the payment of the Souldiers, and for settling the peace of the Kingdome.<sup>a</sup> The Commons named a Committee to joyne with the Lords for the drawing upp this Declaration. Another message came from the Lords desiring it might be referr'd to the same Committee that is appointed to drawe up the Declaration last mentioned to consider what place is fitt and convenient to have the person of the King brought unto, that soe hee may have the joynt applycation [of both kingdoms] for the settling a safe and well grounded peace. Sir Phillipp<sup>b</sup> opened the bussinesse upon this message, pressing much for his Majestie to come on the South-side of this River, Mr. Sollicitour answered him, Mr. Hollis replied, Mr. Nathaniell Fienness answered, Sir William Lewis replied to him in a long and pithie speech; at last comes Sir Arthur Hazlerigg and spoiles all the play with a plaine and downeright answer. Soe that the House ordered to send their Lordships an answere by messengers of their owne. The further debate of this bussinesse concerning the King to morrow. Letters of intelligence from France was sent for from Derby House, which being read were laid aside. Here is great talke of a designe to bring the Scotts in againe, and that Lauderdaile is gone with a letter from his Majestie for the Prince, who is to come in the head of that Army.

I am,

Your Excellencies most humble servant,

June 14 1647.

10 at night.

O. C.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *Lords' Journals*, ix., 264.

<sup>b</sup> Sir Philip Stapleton.

<sup>c</sup> O. C. is not O. Cromwell. It is evidently written to Fairfax, and probably by some member of the House of Commons.





[*News-letter from London.*]

Sir,

Heere hath been this day the greatest tumults and insolencies raised upon the House of Commons that ever any yet heard of, some of their members (and by name Sir Henry Vane Jun<sup>r</sup>) threatned to be cutt in pieces, many others of them insufferably abused, and the whole House threatened, and I may truly say at this houre close block't up by common Souldiers clamouring for their pay, and vowing to lett noe member passe out till they be satisfied. Itt first begane in the Court of Requests, to whome Mr. Hollis, Sir Phillip Stapleton and others were sent to appease, with promiss of 10,000<sup>l</sup> more to be added to what was formerly given them; upon which promise those seemed to be quiett, but this latter and more dangerous one still continues and whether they be of the number of those who first rais'd itt, or some other discontented persons who now second it, the tumult and throng in the Hall is soe great that it cannot be knowne. I looke upon this as a very sad omen, fearing least under this colour the Parliament would be forced to drawe downe ths Citty Guards for their owne securitie, and by this the Army not only have some cause of jealousy ministred to them when they shall see the whole Citty in a posture of defence, which hath been soe often urged to be done and except under this colour would hardly be obteyned, but also those spiritts who soe much thirst after a second warre exceedingly encouraged and heightened, looking upon this as a handsome foundation to raise another Army upon.

London. June 14<sup>th</sup> 1647.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Dated in the MS. June 16, but apparently referring to the tumult of June 14. *Commons' Journals*, v., 209; Rushworth, 561, 571. One of the charges against the 11 members evidently refers to this tumult of June 14 described in this letter. See also the Army Declaration of June 23, and the *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii., 357, 358.



[*Letter from the Earle of Warwick to the Generall*].

Sir,

Your professions are soe large and soe cleere to the good and service of the publique as I cannot receive those feares that many take by your approach to this place, that the sword the publique hath trusted in your hand shall have any use but for the defence and advantage of the State and Parliament that you have soe faithfully and fortunately served. I am glad to find your expressions doe agree with my opinion of your justice, goodnesse, and honour, which as it hath occasioned a great affection and desire in mee alwayes to serve your Excellencie, soe shall it continue me in a reall disposition to serve you as

Your Excellencies most faithfull and  
humble servant

WARWICK.

London: 14<sup>th</sup> June 1647.

[*The King to Sir T. Fairfax*].

Charles R.

The professions which you made to us at Childersley makes us hope, That albeit ye disavowed Cornett Joyce in bringing us forth from Holdenby yet you will not deny us those civilities which he (according to his power) did promise us; wherefore we desire, That the Duke of Richmond, Sir William Fleetwood, Doctor Shelden, and Doctor Hammond may be permitted to waite upon us to serve us in their severall places.<sup>a</sup> This being that which is soe necessary for our service, and not dissonant to your owne

<sup>a</sup> See Lord Montague's letter of June 27, 1647, and subsequent letters. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 299, 300. The commissioners of the Parliament complained on June 27 to Fairfax of his allowing these persons to have access to the King. They report, "the General tells us that it is very true that the King wrote to him about a fortnight since about those two chaplains, and he never gave him an answer; whereat the King was angry." In his letter to Parliament of July 8, Fairfax vindicated his conduct in permitting Richmond and these chaplains to attend the King.



grounds, we cannot doubt but to have a satisfactory answer to these our letters. Att Newmarkett the 17<sup>th</sup> June 1647.

To Sir Thomas Fairfax, Generall.

*Letter to the Gentlemen of severall Shires.*

Gentlemen

You will understand by the bearer hereof the late proceedings with the present intentions and resolutions of my selfe and this Army in order to the good and peace of the Kingdome. The papers that have been published from the Armie will (I hope) satisfie you concerning our grounds and the occasions that have led us to what we doe. I desire that for preserving the peace of the Kingdome, (untill things may through the goodnesse of God come to a settlement) you would unanimously endeavour to putt your selves and the Country into such a posture as to prevent or suppress any insurrections that may disturbe the peace of the country or the Kingdome, and that herein (without relation to different parties or interests) you would apply your self to such courses as may conduce to a generall composure, soe farr as may consist with the common right and liberties of the subject which we have hitherto fought for; and in prosecution hecrof I shall acknowledge my selfe

Your very assured freind to serve you,

THO. FAIRFAX.

St. Albans.

19<sup>th</sup> June, 1647.

*Letter to Collonell Whalley [from Sir Thomas Fairfax.<sup>a</sup>]*

Sir,

I have received yours, and cannot but be very sencible of the great burthen which the confidence I have of your care and fidelitie

<sup>a</sup> Undated. probably written June 21, 1647. See Lord Montague's letter of June 20. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 283.



brought upon you, wherein I must needs say you have not now fayled my expectation, but have discharged your trust to the satisfaction of all and Honour to your selfe. I understand by Collonells Hammond and Lambert and also by your Letter, that the King, according to the Parliament's last letter, intended to beginne his journey towards Richmond upon Thursday next, and that he intends to ly the first night at Royston, according to which his resolutions I desire you to attend upon his Majestie thither, and with all possible care to pursue your former dilligence for the safetie of his person, and by a messenger to give all speedy intimation when you see hee is resolv'd his jorney, and second it by another when he takes Horse, and I shall take care that further orders shall meete you in good time at Royston. I heare of some jealousies of an intention to surprise the King to London, and though I need not be solicitous for your care, yet I thought it good to lett you knowe that I have received a caution thereof from other hands as well as your selfe. I shall say noe more, but, expecting as timely notice as you can, I rest,

[T. FAIRFAX.]

Tuesday the 22<sup>th</sup> of June, 1617.

To his Excellencie Sir Thomas Fairfax &c.

The humble Petition of the Adjutators of Collonell Rich  
his Regiment.

Humbly Sheweth,

That whereas it hath been this day debated by us the Adjutators of the severall troopes of Collonell Rich his Regiment and Officers of the respective troopes, in which wee are all satisfied and have joyntly concurr'd that Lievtennant Hooker, Lievtennant of that troope which was Captaine Nevill's, is noe freind but an enemy to the present iust proceedings of the Army: Wee therefore humbly Petition your Excellencie that hee may be suspended and dischargea





of that charge as Lievtennant of a Troope of Horse.<sup>a</sup> And your Petitioners shall as in duty bound ever pray &c.

JNO. BIDDLES	}	Collonell's Troope
JO. DOBER		
JON. BRADSHAW	}	
RICH. WILLIAMS		
OLIVER HARRIS	}	
THO. BUTTERY		
ROGER STURGIS	}	
WILLIAM ROOKE		
JOSEPH FOSTER	}	
TOBIAS HILL		
THOMAS COOKE	}	
RI. LOXTON		

*Letter to Collonell Whalley from Barkhamsted.*

Sir,

Having received yesterday's vote<sup>b</sup> from the House, which putts the Commissioners into the same capacitie that they were at Holdenby, we hold you free of all further charge, save to looke to your Guards that his Majestie make noe escape, and therein you must be carefull and more now than ever.

Dr. Hammond and the other of his Majestie's Chaplaines (soe much desired) went through this Towne this morning coming towards you; perhapps the Commissioners will put you upon it to keepe them from the King, see<sup>c</sup> you are exact only in faithfullnesse to your trust, and that dureing that only, for now you can be as civill as some others that pretend to be more. Lett such distrustfull

<sup>a</sup> Compare a paper printed at the end of the "*Solemn Engagement*" of June 5, 1647, entitled, "*Severall Reasons, why we Souldiers cast out our Dissenting Officers.*" British Museum, E., 392, 26.

<sup>b</sup> *Lords' Journals*, ix., 290, 292; *Commons' Journals*, v., 222.

<sup>c</sup> MS. "soe."



carriages be provided for by those Gent[lemen], who perhaps will incur some difficulty in the way wherein you have been faulted. We commend our selves kindly unto you and rest

Your Affectionate freinds and Servants,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

JOHN HEWSON.

June 25th, 1647.

Prethee be very carefull of the Kings securing ; and although you have had some opportunity of putting all upon others that's unacceptable, yet be never a whitt more remisse in your dilligence.

[*News-letter from London to Sir T. Fairfax.*]

May it please your Excellencie,

The House of Commons this day made the inclosed order, to which the Lords have not yet assented; the House hath not yet received the motion made yesterday by 10 of the 11 Members,<sup>a</sup> the Recorder Glynn being not willing to joyne with the rest in that motion, but hopes for the protection of the Cittie. The neglect of this bussinesse makes delay which caused jealousies of some designes. The reduced Officers went to receive 10,000<sup>li</sup> at Christ's Church, which being denied to some of them because their Accompts were not audited, a tumult beganne which occasioned the Lord Mayor and Sheriffes to endeavour to raise the trained Bands, who fearing it was for some designe in opposition to the Army refused to stirre, though the Cominand was upon paine of death; the Cittizens shutt upp their Shoppes, the Souldiers threatening to pull downe their Houses, whereupon said an eminent Cittizen, "how shall wee be able to oppose an Army when we cannot suppress a small number of Officers." This last night the trayned Bands of Westminster about one of the clocke was

<sup>a</sup> See *Commons' Journals*, v., 224, 225. The ten members asked for leave to be absent, which was granted on the afternoon of June 26.



called out upon paine of death, but not one in 20 appeared. The Houses adiourned this day from 12 of the clock to 4 at which time they ordered to debate the Ordinance for putting the reduced Officers out of the Lines. I humbly thank your honour for your last and former favours to

Your Excellencie's humble servant.

26 Junii, 1647.

*[Letter from General Poyntz to his Officers].*

Gentlemen and fellow Souldiers,

I make noe question but you are sencible of the great distractions is like to befall these northerne parts who have already soe much suffered by these unfortunate warrs, and if not prevented are like to suffer much more, and that through the occasion of some discontented persons who seekes to sett the Army and Country in a great mutiny and uproare, and to draw them to dissobedience of the Parliament, my selfe, and all their Comanders, the issue whereof can produce nothing but ruine to these northerne parts. Now to give you the more satisfaction I thought fitt to write this lettre to you all that you might truly understand how things are carried on by such incendiaries and disaffected persons who came into my quarters to intangle and draw my Souldiers from their obedience to the Parliament to whome you have alwaies been soe faithfull and done soe good service from the beginning of those unhappy troubles, and them which the Parliament looke more upon now then ordinarie for our civill comportment both to the Country and our Superiours, all which I make no doubt when time shall serve but wee shall reape both the benefitt and honour to perpetuall posteritie. Now I being informed that Major Lilburne with one or two more of such incendiaries as hee is have had meetings within the West [riding] and with one Hodgson formerly a Mountebank's man and now a Chyrurgeon under the command of



Colonell Copley, who observing these parts to continue still in their obedience to the Parliament endeavoured to putt this Army into confusion and distraction, pretending they were sent with authoritie from Sir Thomas Fairfax, which I will assure you is false, for they neither doe nor can produce any such order from him. I know him to be soe much a Gentleman of Honour and a Souldier that if hee desired assistance of forces hee would have desired it of mee and not have imployed such mountebanks and illaffected persons. I am credibly informed by my owne Quarter Master who was with Commissary Ireton and Collonell Whalley within thes foure or five dayes, that some of them framed a letter as if it came from the Souldiers of these parts, that they would march to him if hee pleased; but hee utterly denyed their motion, and forbad them not to stirre. Now according to the rule and discipline of warre, that if any comes into anothers Quarters to inveagle or perswade Souldiers from their superiours hee is to be punished with death; but I being unwilling to use my authoritie untill I first informe the Parliament of England therewith, and for answeare thereunto you may perceive by these inclosed Ordeynances<sup>a</sup> which I send you, which is soe much as I am confident will satisfie all honest and faithfull Souldiers. And truly, Gentlemen, you may all be assured that the Parliament does value you much, as may appeare by these inclosed Ordeynances; therefore I make noe question but you will continue in your wonted obedience to the Parliament, to mee, and your superiour officers as you have hitherto done, and if there be any of your fellow Souldiers that have unadvisedly engaged themselves with any such discontented persons, being misinformed, lett him returne to his Quarters and observe the commands of his commanders and all what hee hath

\* In a letter dated June 17, Poyntz gavé Parliament an account of the commencement of the disturbances amongst his soldiers. Cary, *Memorials of the Civil War*, i., 233, see also pp. 264-282. For the orders in question see *Lords' Journals*, ix., 288; *Commons' Journals*, v., 218, 219. The Major Lilburne referred to appears to have been Major Henry Lilburne.





done in this bussinesse shall be freely forgiven him and noe more thought upon. But in case these will not prevaile with such persons I will use my authoritie given mee by both Houses of Parliament. And these are to require you if any such incendiaries or ill affected persons come into your quarters that then you apprehend them and bring them to mee with all speed. Having noe more at present, I rest,

Gentlemen,

Your loveing freind and faithfull  
Commander in cheife

SEDNHAM POYNTS.

To all Captaines, Lt<sup>s</sup>, Cor<sup>ts</sup>,  
Ensignes, and all other inferiour  
Officeres and Souldiers under my  
Comand.

Yorke. 28<sup>th</sup> June 1647.

[*General Poyntz to Col. Lionel Copley.*]

Honoured Sir,

I received yours of the 27th instant, and doe understand that those who pretend to be agitators for the rest of some perticular Regiments doe continue in their obstinacy yet, and doe justifie their meetings without order from their Officers, and that they intend to make their just greivances knowne to his Excellencie. I would faine knowe why they should make their greivances knowne to Sir Thomas more now then they have done formerly. And why to Sir Thomas? they all knowing these forces are a distinct Army and not under the command of Sir Thomas, and that his Excellencie does utterly renounce their actions, as my Quarter Master<sup>a</sup> informes mee which came from the Army but some fower or five dayes since, and Commissary Generall Ireton and Collonell Whalley told

<sup>a</sup> Robert Newcomen. *Lords' Journals*, ix., 238; Cary, *Memorials*, i., 265.



him see. As for their desiring to have a generall Randezvous to know result, all or in part, I thinke it not fitt, neither are my Officers or Souldiers to appoint any Randezvous without an expresse order from mee. A joynt Randezvous as they call it will be a great disturbance and oppression to the Country ; neither can I conceive what they can have to demaund, consult, or act, being the Parliament have ordered them all their arreares and an additionall Act of Indemnitie, in summe all what Sir Thomas his Army has, as you may perceive by these inclosed Prints ; but I and any man may plainly see what these disturbances ayme at. If any of these men have any greivances to make knowne that they have not full satisfaction of in these ordinances let them repaire to mee, who am their Commander in cheife, and alwaies have given redresse to all that ever complained to mee as yet ; but [if] that they doe not come speedily in to mee, or forbear to send out any more of their unlawfull orders, to appoint Randezvous or have any such unlawfull meetings which they pretend to be just, they shall see I will disturbe their next, for I believe by that time this Letter is come to your hands I thinke my orders are devulged throughout the Army. I have sent severall goods [?] into the Northerne Country to the same effect. I desire you will lett this Letter be sent to those fellowes which undertake to act for the rest. Sir, haveing noe more at present, I rest

Your servant,

SEDNHAM POYNTE.<sup>a</sup>

Yorke, 29th June,  
1647.

<sup>a</sup> See p. 168, where this letter is made the basis of the first charge of the agitators against Poyntz. Copley was impeached by the army in 1648. Rushworth, vii., 1354. Some other letters written by Poyntz at this period are in vol. 58 of the Tanner MSS. in the Bodleian Library. He invariably spells his own surname with a final "s," and his Christian name as above.



[*Fairfax to the Agitators of the Regiments of the Northern Association.*<sup>a</sup>]

Gentlemen,

I have received your letters, and doe perceive by them together with the Coppy of your intended Petition, Representation, and Declaration, how senceible you are both of your owne and our condition as Souldiers in referrence to our late greivances exprest in our severall papers and declarations, as also [of] the condition of the Kingdome now calling and pressing for a speedy settlement of their just rights and liberties with the peace thereof; as also your approbation [of the] proceedings of the Army in pursuance of our iust desires, soe that I cannot but well accept and approve of this your vnanimous and mutuall concurrence with this Army for the obteyning of their soe just and necessary concernments both to our selves and the Kingdome. And I doe give you this assurance that I looke upon you as the same with the Army more immediatly under my command, and shall in all things equally provide for you as God shall enable mee to provide for them, which I am the more engaged to doe because I cannot forgett the former labours and hardships which you under my command have soe willingly

<sup>a</sup> The petition and representation of eight regiments of the Northern Association is dated July 5, and was presented to Fairfax at Reading on July 15, and presented by him to Parliament on July 16. Rushworth, vi., 620-623. On June 25, Poyntz wrote to Fairfax informing him that several "gentlemen pretending dependence" on the southern army were causing disturbance amongst the northern regiments, and that in pursuance of the orders of Parliament he intended to arrest them. Fairfax's answer reached Poyntz, July 3. It was, "That if any officers or soldiers were come from his army into the northern army, and laboured to inform that army of the fair carriage of his, and that such demands as were desired were just, and that the reports cast upon himself and his army in disobeying ordinances of parliament were untrue, he had sent none such; but if any such were come from his army and had endeavoured to satisfy any of the truths aforesaid, he and the forces under him would countenance and protect such good instruments." *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii., 359, 363. Fairfax's answer was dated June 28, or 29. This letter was probably written about the same time.



undergone for the good and preservation of this Kingdome, and that upon as small and inconsiderable satisfaction as any forces in this Kingdome. I perceive by your inclosed papers that you intend some speedy addresse to the Parliament by way of Declaration to them, and therein to expresse your approbation of the Armies just requests both concerning themselves as soldiers and subjects of this Kingdome, and your resolution to associate with them in pursuance thereof, upon which intimation I though[t] fitt to lett you knowe that I shall be willing to all your desires [to] represent your just and modest desires in as effectuall a way as I have done for my owne Army ; and for your desire of being exempted from any obedience to any other command which might occasion obstruction in the promoting of your iust desires, I shall assure you, though I cannot for the present answeare your expectation, I shall not doubt but upon the returne of your representation &c. to be presented to the Parliament, to take such course and provide soe for you as shall both be for your owne satisfaction and of all those who singly desire the pease and quiet of the Kingdome.

[T. FAIRFAX.]

In his *Short Memorial* Fairfax says that he concurred with the Army against his will. "From the time they declared their usurped authority at Triploe Heath I never gave my free consent to anything they did ; but being yet undischarged of my place, they set my name in a way of course to all their papers whether I consented or not" (p. 9). This and the other letters of Fairfax here printed seem to show that he acted more heartily with the Army than he was afterwards willing to admit.





## PASSAGES THE FIRST DAY OF THE TREATY.

Wickham, July 2nd, 1647.

At a Treaty at Wickham then begunne at the Katherine Wheele,

Present,

Commissioners of Parliament.

The Earle of Nottingham.

The Lord Wharton.

Sir Thomas Widdrington.

Major Gen. Skippon.

Colonel White.

Sir Henry Vane.

Thomas Povey, Esq.

Thomas Scawen, Esq.

Officers of the Army.\*

Commissary General Ireton.

Sir Hardress Waller.

Colonel Rich.

Colonel Lambert.

Major Desbrowe.

The Instructions of the Commissioners and severall votes of  
the House concerning the army read.

It was moved by the Commissioners of the Parliament That Mr.  
Marshall and Mr. Nye might be present at the Debate.

A long debate about that and whether the Agitators should be  
admitted to sitt there or noe.

Inclinable to neither for diverse reasons.

Inclinable only if they desired to be at any particular debate.

Reasons against admitting them.

A dissatisfaction and discontent to the Agitators.

For admitting them.

Query. That it should be proposed that our Commissioners  
should have two in lieu of them.

\* The Commission of Fairfax appointing these and other officers to negotiate is  
printed in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 312.



*A Paper read by Mr. Scawen with these Desires:*

1. That the meeting shall from time to time, but at such places and at such times as shall be mutually agreed on by both parties.

Moved for the conveniencie of a meeting place at the head Quarters.

Desired the Quarter Master Generall may take notice of itt.

1. That the meeting of the Commissioners shall be from time to time, by the mutuall agreement of the Commissioners or upon the desires of either party respectively, at such place within the Head Quarters. . . . .

Colonel Lambert.

Query whither or noe they can debate upon what the Army shall now desire or according to what they have desired.

Sir Thomas Widdrington.

Iff wee propound some things at one meeting and then have others come at the next it will be a worke of labour.<sup>a</sup>

Wickham, Katherine Wheele, July 2nd, 1647.

At the Treaty (2nd meeting) in the afternoone.

*First Paper delivered by our Commissioners (after the alteration made to the exception to the 2d offer).*

Wee desire to treat first upon the first head in the representation of the Army concerning the purging of the Houses, in order to which wee propose:

1. That a speedy and effectuall course may be taken for the purging of the Houses of all such members as, for any delinquency

<sup>a</sup> The rest of the proceedings of the first day of the treaty are printed in the *Lords' Journals*, ix., 313; *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 58, 66; Rushworth, vi., 605.



in relation to the late Warre since his Majestie's setting upp his standard at Nottingham, ought not by Ordinance or Declaration of Parliament to sitt there, by laying some considerable penaltie upon any that being soe guilty shall continue to sitt there.

[*News-letter from London.*]

Sir,

Your removing further from London makes the cittizens smile; yet your freinds knowe not what to thinke on't, and some doubts there be that you are held in play with faire words only, till they be fitt to court you with other language. Wee know not what meanes the eager listing of Horse and auxiliaries in London, under pretence to keepe the lyne, the Preists railing against you in their Pulpitts to purpose, and Mr. Ward Fast day before the House of Commons worse then Edwards his Gangrena.<sup>a</sup> "If the wheeles turnes thus," sayes Ward, "I knowe not whether Jesus Christ or Sir Thomas Fairfax bee the better driver;" gallant doctrine! The House gave him noe thanks for his sermon, nor (which hee better deserved) any cheque that I heare of. Fryday the generall expectation is that you gave in a particular charge against the members. If you strike not that home you will loose much of your credit, or hardly at all be credited for the future. Sir John Maynard swcares you are all rebelles and traytors, and Mr. Recorder they say will plead with the innocentest and bring his accusers to shame. Collonell Massie's former gallantry will acquitt him before all the world, and Hollis and Sir Philipp Stapleton are men beyond your reach to deale withall: these and more are the comon discourses in London. I pray mind well the 9 heads to the King printed,<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Ward's sermon was preached on June 30; Rushworth, vi., 596; *Commons Journals*, v., 228. On incendiary sermons see the Earl of Leicester's Journal, 28 July, 1647, Blencowe, *Sydney Papers*, p. 26. *Gangraena* had been before complained of by the Army, *Army Declarations*, 1647, p. 19.

<sup>b</sup> See Rushworth, vi., 602; *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 61. Propositions falsely stated to be offered to the King by the Army.



something must speedily be done in vindication or you will suffer much.

London, July 3<sup>d</sup>, 1647.

Reading, Generall's Quarters, July 5<sup>o</sup>, 1647.

Ordered by his Excellency and the Councill of Warre that

Lieut. Generall Cromwell.	Capt. Carter.
Col. Lambért.	Col. Pride.
Col. Okey.	Col. Seroope.
Col. Hewson.	Lieut. Col. Bowen.
Col. Barkstead.	Lieut. Col. Goffe.
Col. Thomlinson.	Adjutant Gen. Deane.
Major Bethel.	Major Rainborow.
Capt. Berry.	Capt. Rolfe.
Capt. Clarke.	

with Mr. John Rushworth secretary, and 4 Souldyers Agitators, doe repaire to Colebrooke to meet the Lawyers about the charge and that they or any seaven or more of them (whereof 5 to be Captaines or of superiour quallitie), to agree upon the charge, and to appoint the persons, manner and time for the presenting of it to the House in behalfe of his Excellency and the whole Army.<sup>a</sup>

COL. SCROOPE.	CAPT. BERRY.
COL. OKEY.	CAPT. CLARKE.
COL. HEWSON.	MR. SEXBY.
COL. PRIDE.	MR. GETHINGS.
LIEUT. COL. BOWEN.	CAPT. CARTER.
LIEUT. COL. GOFFE.	CAPT. ROLFE. <sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The charge against the eleven impeached Members is reprinted in the *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 69, which also gives the answer, p. 117.

<sup>b</sup> This second list gives the names of the persons selected to present the charge which took place on July 16, *Commons' Journals*, v., 236.





Information given by Sir Francis Pile a member of the House to Lieutenant Colonel Bowen.

1. That there are 16000 listed for Souldiers in and about the Citty: 2000 of them being listed by a Lieutenant who was this afternoone inquired after and sent for to the House.

2. That the debate this afternoone was about sending out the Reformadoes into Kent, where it is thought the Scotts doe intend to land, and in case they doe not the Apprentices doe purpose to present a Petition in a tumultuous way to inforce them to it. And further they give out that they will have the King to London whether the Army will or noe, and also [prevent] the expulsion of the Members from the House.

That there are persons of quallitie sent into the country for the raising of forces.

July 6, 1647.

Certaine Informations and particular proofes of the late abuses committed by the present Militia of London.<sup>a</sup>

That about the beginning of May last Lieutenant Colonel Petit of Snow Hill being sumoned before the Comittee for the militia of the Citty of London, at which time Mr. Alderman Gibbs had the chayre, who declared unto him that the Committee had conferred the office of a Lieutenant Collonell upon him, and further told him that hee was to take notice hee must fight against all malignants, sects and sectaries and all Godly persons that shall come to oppose the Citty; to which the Lieutenant Collonell replied, Gentlemen, I thought you had all of you professed Godlynesse, for my part I doe, and therefore shall not engage against any godly man. Whereupon Mr. Alderman Gibbs or some

<sup>a</sup> Endorsed July 5.



other of the Militia then answered, that their meaning was, that if any out of pretence of Godlynesse should come to oppose them that hee should fight against such, or words to this effect.

Affirmed by LIEUTENNANT  
COLLONELL PETTITT.

About the 21<sup>th</sup> of June last Lieutennant Colonell Shambrooke was put out of his command by the Militia of the Citty of London upon these grounds that hee differ'd in judgment from them and that hee was of a particular Congregation; this Sir John Wolleston and Collonell West did affirme was the ground.

WILLIAM SHAMBROKE.\*

About the time aforesaid Lieutennant Curtis of Walbrooke Ward was put out of his command for being an Independent, the Militia sayd they would have none of that judgment in comand.

Affirmed by CAPTN. COX.

MR. PARR.

MR. ROSIER.

In the month of June last, Alderman Adams having the chayre, divers Comanders of the Citty were summoned before the Militia, amongst whome was Major Abell, to whome it was propounded whether or noe they would all stand as one man for the safety of the Parliament and the Citty against all tumults and such as should come against them in a hostile manner, the said Major Abell affirming hee knewe of noe Army that would oppose the Parliament or Citty, notwithstanding hee could engage his life for the safetie of the Citty or the just priviledges of Parliament; this being said hee was dismist his Comand, noe cause being showne except for his difference in judgment.\*

Affirmed by EDWARD ABELL.

\* Appointed Lieutenant Colonel of the Tower Guards in August, 1647; killed before Colchester in July, 1648; Rushworth, vii., 1179, 1181.



That the Comittee of the Militia for the Citty of London have put forth of the subcommittee for the Militia of Southwark divers persons of approved fidelitie and trust, only for difference in judgment, and have placed in their roomes such as were and still are looked upon as Malignants.

Witnessed by THOMAS COOPER and  
MR. HIGHLAND.

That the aforesaid Committee did put out of Commission Captaine Thompson, a man of knowne fidelitie adventuring his life at the releife of Gloucester, and have put in his roome one Edward Walles, who being Lieutennant to the said Captaine Thompson laid downe his Commission refusing to goe forth to the releife of Gloucester, and since neither at home or abroad hath done anything for the service of the kingdome. And that the said Walles now being Captaine hath to his Lieutennant one Henry Hardecastle, who said hee would prove that Sir Thomas Fairfax was a Rogue, a Raschall, and base fellowe.

Witness DOCTOR TRIGGE.

WILL JOLLY.

PENNITENT PIGGOTT.

HENRY ROBINSON.

NATHANIELL IBLE.

GIDION ROGERS.

JO: LEVETT.

That Captaine Wane, one who lately deserted this Army, being now put into Commission by the Militia in the Regiment of the blew Auxilleries to be a Captaine, did say there would not be soe much ware in their shoppes if the Army came to London, and said to Will Pepiatt, Ensigne, that if hee would not fight against the Army hee should be noe officer of his; for, hee said, hee knew more of the Army then any there present.

Witness ROBERT BURGIS, Lieut.

JO: FARDIN.



That the Committee of the Militia did put out Colonell George Langham, a man of approved fidelitie in times of greatest difficulty, and put in his place Colonel Thomas Clarke, one that sayd that if the Army should come neere London, if other men were of his mind they should march through their blouds.

Witnes SAMUELL BLAICKLOCKS.  
and E. P.

That by the aforesaid Committee one Captaine Maizy was put forth of his command for stopping and breaking open the Scotch Letters in May last, though the thing was approved and hee acquitted by the House of Commons; yet Alderman Bouch said it was a Jesuetticall plott to kepe him in.

FRANCIS MAZY.

That Captaine Wilkes, one whose fidelitie was approved, hee having twice adventured his life in the feild, but because hee was an Independant, Aldermann Bunch sayd itt was a Jesuetticall plott to keepe him in, therefore hee was voted out of his place by the Committee.

TYMOTHY WILKES.<sup>a</sup>

That upon Fryday the 2d of July there was order given forth by the Militia for the listing of all Prentices and others which were not of the trayned Bands, if fitt to beare armes.

JOHN BRAINE, Constable.

The names of those Members of the Committee of the Tower Hamletts that were putt out by the Committee of the Militia of the City of London, which men were ever approved to be honest,

<sup>a</sup> Governor of Leith and Colonel of a regiment under Monk, 1654-1658; he was also one of the Commissioners appointed by Monk to treat with the English Army in November, 1659. *Baker's Chronicle*, ed. 1670, pp. 686, 694.





active men for the Parliament and faithfull to the state and Kingdome.

Captaine Tailor of Wappinge.

Mr. Townesend }  
Mr. Loton } of White Chappell.

Capt. Gale.

Mr. Clarke.

„ Orbell.

Capt. White.

Mr. Tiler.

Mr. Fasson.

„ Saires.

Capt. King.

Mr. Waterton.

„ Hemings.

Capt. Hackwell.

In their places there are put in

Mr. Mempris of Mile End.

„ Silles of East Smithfeild.

„ Crowder }  
„ Noble } of Shoreditch.

all of them disaffected men that never lent penny unto the publique but what they were forced unto.

Witnessed by JUSTICE HUBBORN.

COLL. WILLOUBY.

MR. WATERTON.

[*News-letter from London.*]<sup>a</sup>

The Members came into the House this day, which some expected. The charge not touched upon, because our freinds expected

<sup>a</sup> *Commons' Journals*, v., 237-8.



that some of the members should begin to them. This afternoon the papers sent up from the Army prevented their debate upon the charge, and the House thus farr proceeded, and they have fully declared, that for the Reformadoes, or such as pretend to be such, that they shall be gone out of Town by the 15th of this instant upon penalty of loosing their Arrears, and 3 months imprisonment.

For Members of the House it's so prepared, that it's likely to pass to morrow morning the first business, with a sound penalty.

For the discharging the Soldiers assigned for Ireland, it's referred to Derby House to dispatch it, and those of that Committee withdraw this afternoon on purpose.

The charge to be taken into debate to morrow morning.

The Lords sent down a Letter to the Commons for their concurrence for removing the Chaplains, and to certify the reasons of the obstructions. This is sent to the Commissioners attending the King. Wee do believe that it's a design to sett us altogether by the ears, which honest men, out of passion are too apt to swallow; and your Letter to that business of the Chaplains &c. being not come to our hand, our freinds (tho' prepared by us according to the directions in Collonell Fleetwood's letter) did not think good to speak against it; some freinds that are temperate and most considerable do allow of the thing, but to be done without your Letter to the House.<sup>a</sup>

Wee can not but think that such is the influence of some persons in the Lords and Commons House, as they will never cease till they have brought you to declare, and so to break you upon one rock or another. 'Tis a good resolution must carry you through this and other difficultys, and in this our own principles give us a full encouragement.

We received your particulars this day and have consulted with

<sup>a</sup> Fairfax's letter of July 8, *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 101; *Lords' Journals*, ix.



your best freinds; if the Commons upon the full debate fall not upon suspition[?] the officers will move it in the name of the Army to morrow.

You must be more speedy in your business, and all men say, that if your dispatch be noe better you will run into infinite hazards.

Your trusty and good freind Lilburne is printing his [letter] against Rich and the Abbott and me, and saith in so many words (to Captaine White of the Tower) that he had rather cutt Sir Harry Vane's throate than Hollis's. It was in some bodys power to have quenched this fire (we speak not as to our own particulars) while it was a spark, which perhaps in time may grow too great to be quenched.

London, Thursday night late [July 8].<sup>a</sup>

[*Letter from the Agitators into Wales.*]

Honoured and Noble Friends and fellow Soldiers,

It being a time of contest for the just libertys of this Kingdom and Dominion annexed, with those unjust persons by whom they have been endeavoured to be subverted, wee, conceiving you lying under many of the same pressures as we doe, and so have just cause

<sup>a</sup> Probably written by Scout-Master Leonard Watson. See Lilburne's *Jonah's Cry out of the Whale's Belly*, 1647, p. 8. In a letter to Cromwell Lilburne says: "Your scoutmaster-general Watson will never uprightly adventure the shaking of his finger either for God, his countrey, or for the Army, further than he may be thereby of the stronger side. As for Dr Stanes, whatever you may think of him, I averre he is a juggling knave . . . . And as for Nat. Rich, you yourselfe knowe him to be a juggling paltry base fellow: remember what you told him to his face in his own chamber in Fleet Street before me and my wife and two more, at the time Manchester's treason was upon examination." Concerning Vane, Lilburne wrote to Cromwell on March 25, 1647, "O Cromwell thou art led by the nose by two unworthy covetous earthworms, Vane and St. John." *Ibid.*, p. 3.



of complaint, and if so as little hopes of being heard as we have had, whose just petitions have been obstructed and we declared against as enemys to the State, and our fellow subjects have had theirs burnt; all which shews how they and we have been slighted in our most humble addresses, which to us seems to be the highest infringement of our undoubted priviledges that ever was by any acted professing to maintain them; and when our most clear and fundamentall priviledges shall be denyed us, what may wee or can we expect? And whether all our lesser rights may not and be not at the present, by the arbitrary acting of these men totally cutt off, we leave you to judge. Especially considering the time when this was done; even immediately after the dear redemption of those precious priviledges out of the hand of our former enemys, with the expence of so much blood and treasure; and that in this very juncture of time, when we were expecting to see and reap the fruit of all our weary travails, they by this should in effect tell us, and the Kingdom with us, we should never reap any of them, but that we who had fought to sett our Selves and a Kingdom free should now in the issue be more compleatly slaves than ever, not having so much liberty as to petition in case of greivances. And thus are we dealt with, and while an Army having power in our hands, and they occasion to make further use of us; therefore you need not wonder tho' you hear of such actings amongst us which at first view may seem strange, yet assure your selves that we are but acted by the very same principall we were at the first, by which we then endeavoured to keep our selves and the kingdom from being ruined by the exorbitant actings of prerogative Power, and shall still oppose the like power in any acting to the like ends; and this is all we aim at and are acting towards at this day, that the unjust oppressions lying upon the subjects of this Kingdom and other parts adjoining might be removed, and that the just rights of all estates and persons therein might be restored, settled, and maintained, and this we desire and endeavour for every individuall person thereof. Which as soon as we have attained, according to the ends





for which we were at first raised, we shall with all readiness and willingness lay down arms, or make use of them elsewhere, as the Parliament shall think fitt; but not till then can we in order to our own and the Kingdom's safety. And thus have we thought fitt to communicate our condition to you (dear Friends) that so you might rightly inform your selves and others to the end you might still, (as formerly to your honour you have had) a share in pleading and maintaining of the just freedom of the nation at such a time when they were so much in question; and (truly) then to come in to assert and defend them, when others were endeavouring to suppress them. It is that which will sett a badge of honour upon such a people to posterity, that you should have your part in redeeming the kingdom of England and Dominion of Wales from oppression and slavery, and your children yet unborn shall bless God for you; which if not, consider what a blott of infamy will lye on you and us to after ages, if we shall sitt still in such a time as this, when it shall be said by them lying under oppression, 'Our predecessors had a prize in their hands, and an opportunity offered to have freed us from it and have made us happy, but woe to us, through their neglects they have lett it slip, and left us in misery.'

Freinds, our earnest desire is that you would seriously weigh and consider things in the ballance of Judgement according to truth, and to that end take heed of all false representations of our persons or actions by the suggestions of any given in to you, and judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgement, and then doubt not but you shall have the assistance of a righteous God, who hath promised to do more for you than all the unrighteous men in the world are able to do against you, and also the concurrent assistance of all just and rational men; and we trust the appearances of God will be such upon us as we shall see those characters of himself engraven upon us, and amongst us, even judgement, truth, and righteousness; and the contrary to these (in his own time) removed, which both by you and us we hope

✱



shall be jointly endeavoured. In the doing of which the Lord direct us, in whom we bid you heartily farewell.

Yours to use, acting in behalf of the Army  
for the good of the Kingdom.

Cambridge,  
12 July, 1647.

ROBERT KIRKBY Capt	RICH <sup>d</sup> . DEAN Capt.	DENNIS PUDMER.
HENRY CANNON Capt.	FRA: ALLEN Capt.	DANIEL HINCHMAN.
HENRY LLOYD Capt.	EVAN MORGAN.	EDWARD GARNE.
JOHN PATERSON.	W <sup>m</sup> . NEAL Capt.	NATH: FOTHERGILL.
FRANCIS WHEELER.	ABR. HOLMES Capt.	W <sup>m</sup> . JONES.
EDM <sup>d</sup> . CHILLENDEEN Lieut.	J <sup>no</sup> . MERRIMAN Capt.	JOSEPH ADAMS.
STEPHEN SHIPMAN Lt.	JOHN CLARKE Capt.	JOHN COOK.
JO: WALLINGTON Lt.	EDW <sup>d</sup> SEXBY.	THO POND.
EDW <sup>d</sup> . SCOTTON Lt.	ARTHUR EVELIN Capt.	EDW <sup>d</sup> . TWIGG.
W <sup>m</sup> . YOUNG.	JOHN TAYLOR.	ROBERT MASON.
THO: KENDALL.	PHILL. EATON.	RICHARD COLEBROOK.
JOHN PLEIGH.	THO: BUTTERSEY.	RALPH PRENTICE.
TOBIAS BOX.	NICH: LOCKYER.	HERBERT FEILD.
JOHN DOVER.	CONST. FOX Lieut.	
W <sup>m</sup> . SYMONDS.	HENRY ANDERSON.	
GEO. STANION.	ROB <sup>t</sup> . STALMAN.	
JOHN BREAMEN.	RICH <sup>d</sup> . SALTER.	
W <sup>m</sup> . WILKINSON.	BARTH: WILCOCK.	
EDWD <sup>d</sup> . VAUGHAN.	RICH <sup>d</sup> . CLARKE.	
	W <sup>m</sup> . CLARKE.	

To our Honoured Freinds our fellow  
Soldiers, and others of the well affected  
in North Wales. These.\*

\* Compare the letter from the Agitators to the Masters of Trinity House, June 18, 1647. *Cary, Memorials*, i., 237; *Lords' Journals*, ix., 284. There is also amongst the Clarke Papers a letter of the Agitators dated 6 July, printed as "*A Declaration from the Agitators in the name of the whole Army under His Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax (to their fellow-soldiers) of their Representations*



[*Sir Thomas Fairfax to the Speaker of the House of Commons.*]

Sir,

I am informed from Bristoll, that Colonel Doyley being lately come thither, and having required the command of the Castle and Port there, hath thereby occasion'd some disturbance in that Citty, and distraction amongst the Soldiers, who have manifested their dislike of him, but have expressed their good affection to Colonel Rolph (who was left Deputy Governour of that garison by Major General Skippon<sup>a</sup>) with expectation of his return unto them impowred with that command; which also the Citty (from their experience of his faithfullness, worth, and sufficiency) do very much desire, as by their petition prepared to the House of Commons to that purpose may appear. I thought it necessary to acquaint you herewith for the present appeasing those distractions, and the settling that garison, and that you would please to take some speedy course for the supply of the Soldiers with moneys who are (as I am informed) 30 weeks in arrear. I remain

Your most humble servant,

THO : FAIRFAX.

To the Honorable W<sup>m</sup>. Lenthall Esq.  
Speaker of the Honorable House  
of Commons.  
Reading, July 16, 1647.

---

and *Desires*," at the end of a pamphlet entitled "*The King's Majesty's most Gracious Letter to his son James, Duke of York*," 1647.

There are also some other papers relating to Wales, and threatened disturbances there, in vol. xli. of the Clarke MSS. A paper delivered to Fairfax at St. Albans by Dr. Basset, on the grievances of Glamorganshire; a letter from Colonel Langhorne to Fairfax, June 18, 1647; the grievances of the County of Pembroke, articles against Colonel John Poyer, etc.

<sup>a</sup> Lieutenant-Colonel William Rolfe, Deputy Governor of Bristol (Skippon's son-in-law), was given leave to come to London on May 28, 1647. *Commons' Journals*, v., 121. The dispute between Doyley and Captain Latimer Sampson, governor in Rolfe's absence, is narrated in one of Rushworth's letters. *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii., 370. Doyley had got a commission from Holles and his party.



*[News-letter from York.]*

Thursday morning<sup>a</sup> our General was taken out of his quarters by a small party, and carryed to Pontefract, where he is now, [and] hath all accomodations, tho' at his going out of town to Pontefract he had a wett doublett not a wett coat; this business hath putt for the present things to stand things at adventure. The Committee sat this afternoon, and have agreed to write to the General to move for a Commander in cheif for their forces. I understand that General Poynts is to be sent to the Generall and it had been base to send him without his tackling, which came so late to my knowledge that these few lines against him, which I sent there inclosed, were prepared. Your Agitators have putt forth a vindication concerning the takeing of them, which I sent therewith. You may be confident this Army is fixed to your[s] great dispute now about the Tower at York, whether Lt. Col. Fairfax or my Lord Mayer commands there; both have sent to the General about it. Accidentally I mett with this enclosed from Lyonell Coply. You may perceive how good a freind he is. I see an order from Darby House to a Colonel dated the 7th July instant wherein the Colonel is required to draw his Regiment with those that were remaining in Cumberland and Westmoreland together, and ship them for Ireland. Be assured they will be in parte . . . under that pretence against you; all the officers came post from London last night, they are all creatures of the accused, especially to Massy. Your remonstrances still are called for, and many weré required to the Army there but . . . . . I can gett nothing done for the Generall yet by reason of this business; it is fitting to be ashured there are many enemys against the Army. Sir, It is very much desired that the town of York be putt into some command; it is

<sup>a</sup> July 8, 1647. See Cary, i., 293, 298, 300.





under a dispute between Lt. Col. Fairfax and the Major. It were well to be speedily resolved on.<sup>a</sup>

[*Letter from the Agitators in Yorkshire to Fairfax.*]

May it please your Excellencie,

Whereas we have had sufficient experience, and the Kingdom's welfare at this day both do certifie, next under God, Your Excellency's care for the preservation and satisfaction both of soldiers and subjects, which every one will acknowledge who hath not shown himself an enemy to the wellbeing of the Nation—yet there remain some obstinate spirits, unwilling to be partakers of the common good, and to this end are not wanting in their endeavours to deprive others of the freedom of the Nation, because their own irregular judgments censure the same as a homage, and as we conceive it is because their wills are not made so predominant—as to acquaint your Excellency that something to this purpose hath been lately acted in the garrison of Clifford's Tower at York, the whole condition of the same standing thus: Whereas your Excellency was pleased to appoint Lieutenant Colonel Fairfax as Governor of the aforesaid garrison, a man of known integrity, he upon some just occasions being absent from the same, in the mean time Colonel General Poynts dispossessed his officers and soldiers of the garrison, and introduced such officers and soldiers as he thought fitt to accomplish his own designs; and the said Lt. Col. Fairfax being now returned to his former command, We humbly desire your Excellency that you would be pleased to issue forth the orders to those officers and soldiers, that were since introduced, that they quitt the garrison, and such officers and soldiers may be entrusted with the same as were formerly belonging to the garrison,

<sup>a</sup> This and the following letters relating to the disturbances in the Northern Army are all undated, but evidently written between 9-16 July. It was therefore thought better to put them together.



under the command of Lt. Col. Fairfax. This wee humbly tender to your Excellency as especiall means for the prevention of the future dangers, and without which we humbly conceive the garrison can not be safe. In the mean time we recommend our selves to your Excellencie's favour, and shall ever remain

Your Excellency's and the Kingdom's  
Servants as acting in the behalf of  
several Regiments.<sup>a</sup>

*[Letter from the Agitators in the Northern Army to Fairfax.]*

May it please Your Excellency,

Whereas we whose names are under subscribed were sent down to inform these forces of the proceedings of your Excellency and the Army more immediately under your command, We humbly tender unto your Excellencies consideration the relation of such things as have lately intervencd to us. Your Excellency being pleased to appoint Lt. Col. Fairfax to come into these parts, and according to his commission to take charge of Clifford's Tower in York, Colonel General Poynts resigned over the command of the Tower to the Lord Mayor, which he accordingly took charge of altho without commission. Now the condition standing so that Colonell Generall Points had been induc'd to this garrison, the citty only upon a vote which passed the Honorable House that he should be Governor of Clifford's Tower after this . . . . . and that he might the better effect what he desired (while Lt. Col. Fairfax was absent) drew forth those officers and soldiers out of the Tower which did belong to Lt. Col. Fairfax, and entrusted such of his own officers and soldiers with the Tower as might comply with him, but at last Col. General Poynts having layd down his commission desired the Lord Mayor to take charge of the Tower, altho Lieut. Col. Fairfax was there, and had com-

<sup>a</sup> Unsigned.



mission for the government of it; but since Colonel Poynts's departure from York the Lord Mayor hath done as much as in him lies to recover the Government of the Tower into his hands, and to this end hath written to Sir William Allison and Alderman Hoyle, burgesses of the City of York, who accordingly [press], as we are credibly informed, the Lord Mayor might be Governor of it, and in the mean time he endeavours to dissuade the soldiers from adhering to Lt. Col. Fairfax, giving them money and promising them more to cleave to him; he hath also presumed to countermand Lieut. Col. Fairfax, and the officers here are very reverse unto your Excellencies proceedings, but it is humbly conceived that the reason is because they are and have been so much Sir Phillip Stapleton's. The soldiers have lately petitioned the Committee for some subsidies, but are deny'd and in great distress for want of pay. We humbly request your Excellency that both they and the garrison may have a place in your Excellencie's care. Colonel Overton desired to recommend his service to your Excellencie's command humbly requesting some [speedy] course for the payment of his garrison, and that a Captain and 2 Lieutenants may be accommodated with commands correspondent either in that army or amongst these forces, and he will wait on your Excellency very shortly. We at present request, and crave leave to remain

Your Excellencies humble Subservients

RICHARD KINGDOM } Lt. General's  
Regiment.

THOMAS DIGGELL—Colonel Harrison's Regiment.

JOHN CASEBY—Colonel Fleetwood's Regiment.

*[Letter from Fairfax to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of York.]*

My Lords and Gentlemen,

I take this your acquainting me with the business of Clifford's Tower as your care to the City and the publick, and from the



experience I have of your good affections to the Kingdom I shall very willingly meet your desires in letting the command of that place rest in your hands, knowing how faithfully you have expressed your selves in things of publick concernment; and I shall remain assured in confidence of those publick dispositions in you, that you will not suffer that place to be an occasion or encouragement to the begetting of new troubles; and therefore I desire, that you my Lord Mayor will take into your care the securing of that place, for the peace of this City, and those parts of the Kingdom, till there be a further settlement of affairs. I am glad that I have this occasion from your selves to write to you. I hope you are no strangers to our papers and proceedings with the Parliament, and how the same necessitys that engaged us all at first hath continued us in pursuit of such things as concern the good and peace of this Kingdom, and that we are the same we ever were to the interest of the Parliament and Kingdom; and I question not but such hath been the transactions of things that you are not to be satisfy'd now in the justice of our proceedings. We shall desire the concurrence of our selves and the Kingdom no farther than we continue faithfull to the peace and safety of this Kingdom; and whatsoever is done by us by and relating to the King, who is now amongst us, is but in order to the first engagements, and to the peaceable settling of that publick affair.

To the Lord Mayor<sup>a</sup> and Aldermen of York.

[*Articles against General Poyntz.*]

The charge against Generall Poynts in reference to what he hath acted against his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, and his Army in the South, and against the Northerne Association now under his Excellencie's command.

1<sup>st</sup>. That Colonell Generall Poynts did very much endeavour to

<sup>a</sup> Thomas Dickenson, Lord Mayor of York, was voted by the House of Commons on 13 July, 1643, to have the custody of Clifford's Tower. *Commons' Journals*, v., 243.





render his Excellency's person and authority contemptible and insufficient for the managing of those affairs which the Honorable Houses have intrusted him withall. Witness the letter written June 27<sup>th</sup> to Colonel Copley, wherein he repeats his Excellency's name double in a very scornful way, and deneyes that the soldiers of those parts are under the command of his Excellency.

2<sup>y</sup>. He labours to render the Army more mediated under your Excellency's command, under the notions of mutineers and necessary arrears, and rebellious Army,<sup>a</sup> as it appears by his letters written from York to Colonel Copley June 6<sup>th</sup>. Another letter written to his officers to be read in the head of each troop, in which he terms some that were sent from the South, with some of our agents, Incendiaries, and that they endeavoured to withdraw these forces from their obedience to the Parliament with other scandalous reproaches to be read in the head of each troop, in reproach and disdain of that Army.

3<sup>y</sup>. That he endeavoured to reibroyle this Kingdom in a 2<sup>d</sup> warr, and to this end laboured to exasperate the spirits of the soldiers in the [north] against that Army as evidently appears; for upon his journey last from London to York, he reported he was come post to draw up his army, to quell the rebellious Army of Sir Thomas Fairfax; and did also endeavour to accomplish his sinister ends to gett into his power places of strength; and caused the Tower of York to be putt in a condition of present resistance meerly against the Army; to this end also he gave special order for the drawing his forces together, putting them in a posture for action against the Southern Army, having no order from the Parliament, as particularly at Selby, Tadcaster, Cawood, and Ferry Bridge, keeping guard for the apprehending of any that should come as he pretended to distemper the Northern Army.

4<sup>y</sup>. He threatned the Agitators from the Army with ours, to hang them if he could meet with them..

5<sup>y</sup>. He endeavoured to justify the 11 accused Members and

<sup>a</sup> So in MS. These papers are from very corrupt transcripts.



kept correspondence with them, received divers letters from them, and wrote to them, acting what he did from their principles, and by their advice; for he can not deny, but that Sir Philip Stapylton desired him to keep his army in a posture ready for action till they should have occasion for them, which he did accordingly.

6<sup>ly</sup>. His arbitrary committing some officers for speaking in the behalf of the Army, and hanging one soldier without a council of warr.

7<sup>ly</sup>. His arming of a reduced company under Captain Peppar, who refused any engagement save against the Army.

8<sup>ly</sup>. That he used all means possible to make both the Army and their Officers odious, as appears by his printed papers, which was not only to be read at the head of every troop, but likewise by his order putt upon many posts in marketts, rendring us and the Army unparalleld men, in taking the King by force, and likewise falsely reporting therein, that his Majesty was so farr from compliance with the Army, that he struck both his Excellency, Cromwell, and Whaly. This he printed at York purposely to divide us, and to make us odious to the whole Kingdom.

9<sup>ly</sup>. That he threatened to disturb our nests, if we did continue to associate our selves with his Excellencie's Army, and that he would use the Parliaments power in the apprehending of us.

JOHN HOBGSON	}	Colonel Copley's Regiment.
W <sup>m</sup> . BEGYTS		

JOHN DRAKE	}	Colonel Bright's Regiment.
JOHN MARK		

JOHN PENNINGTON	}	Colonel Overton's Regiment.
ROBERT MORRIS		

THO: ARTHUR	}	Colonel Ponsonby's Regiment.
THO: WHALERTON		

ROBERT SHARBY	}	Colonel Collingworth's Regiment. <sup>a</sup>
THO: MALLETT		

<sup>a</sup> Poyntz was brought under a guard to Fairfax's headquarters at Reading, and was immediately released by the General. The Agitators presented a charge



REPRESENTATION OF THE AGITATORS PRESENTED AT THE  
GENERALL COUNCILL OF WARR JULY 16, 1647.

To his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax Knight Captain  
General of all the Forces raised and to be raised for  
the defence of the Kingdom, and to his Councill of  
Warr assembled at Cambridge July 16, 1647.

The humble petition and representation of the Agitators of  
Your Excellencies Army,  
Humbly Sheweth

That your petitioners out of their deep sence of the sad and heavy pressures, great distractions, continual fears, and eminent dangers, under which this poor and bleeding Kingdom groans, expecting to be delivered and eased, whose peace, safety, and freedom from oppression, violence, and tyranny we tenderly and earnestly desire even above our own lives, are enforced to present these our humble requests in the name of the whole Army as their sence and desire, unto Your Excellency and this Honourable Councill, to be considered of, (if need be) corrected, and forthwith exhibited to the Parliament; And that for the reasons annexed to these ensuing desires, the Army may be immediately march'd to or near London, thereby to enable and assist the Parliament acting for the Kingdom's ease and preservation, and to oppose all those that shall act the contrary.

For the accomplishment whereof we are fully resolved (by the assistance of God and his strength with Your Excellency and Your Councill of Warr's concurrence) to putt a speedy period to these present distractions.

1<sup>st</sup>. That by Order of the House the 11 Members by his Excellency and his Army impeached, and charged of high mis-against him which is evidently that here printed. Cary, i., 306, 308; *Fairfax Correspondence*, lii., 370. Compare the papers from the Northern Army, printed by Rushworth, vi., 620-625.



demeanors be forthwith sequestred, and disenabled from sitting in the House.

2<sup>y</sup>. That the Militia of the Citty of London be immediately returned into the hands of those in whom it lately was, who did approve themselves faithfull to the Kingdom and Citty in times of greatest dangers, an answer whereof we expect within two days.

3<sup>y</sup>. That there be an effectual Declaration forthwith published to the whole Kingdom, against the inviteing or coming in of forreign, or raising of intestine forces under any pretence whatsoever, except such as shall be by the Parliaments appointments, receive their commissions are and be at the disposall and command of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax,<sup>a</sup> upon pain of being proceeded against as enemies and traitors to the State, disturbers of the publick peace, and invaders of this Kingdom.

4<sup>y</sup>. That all Prisoners who have been illegally committed in any part of the Kingdom of England or Dominion of Wales, may be forthwith sett at liberty, and reparation given them for their false imprisonment, as namely :—Lieutenant Collonel John Lilburn, Mr. Musgrave, Mr. Overton's wife and brother, Mr. Larner, his two Lieutenants, Mr. Tew, Mr. Prest, and all others which have been in like manner wrongfully imprisoned ; and for a more speedy effecting thereof there may be a Declaration published to the whole Kingdom and Dominion of Wales thereby commanding all Judges of Assizes, of Oyer and Terminer, Justices of Coram, and of the Peace, Mayors, Sheriffs, Bayliffs, and all other Officers and Ministers of State whatsoever (upon pain of severest punishment if they shall neglect to putt the same in execution) for the freeing of such as are in prison, and preventing the like for the future, upon the meanest subjects of the Kingdom.<sup>b</sup>

5<sup>y</sup>. That we may be speedily pay'd up equall with the Deserters

<sup>a</sup> "Except such as shall by the Parliament's appointment receive their commission from, and be at the disposal, etc.?"

<sup>b</sup> An earlier paper on the subject of the release of these prisoners had been presented by the Agitators on July 6. Clarke MSS. xli.





of the Army, according to the Parliaments former Votes, whereby the Army may not be so burthensome and oppressive to the Country. And for the more speedy performance hereof, [that] the House of Peers would without delay concur with the desires of the House of Commons for the reviving of the Committee of the Army, so many times urged by them to be done, that so the arrears of the Citty, which as we are credibly informed is 120,000<sup>l</sup> or more, besides what is in several countys, may be by their authority gathered up; and all this to be done within 4 days for these reasons following viz:—

- 1<sup>st</sup>. Because nothing hath been done in reference to what we have proposed and they promised, but two or three votes; which if the latitude thereof be fully understood and their little endeavours weighed for the fullfilling of them hitherto, may give us just grounds to believe that we by them are little regarded, nor these never to be performed.
- 2<sup>dy</sup>. Because all those are countenanced, and some of them intrusted with places of preferment who have deserted the Army, and also summs of money to them pay'd; notwithstanding their votes to pay us up equall with those that deserted that we are left unpay'd, and thereby become burthensome to those whose burthens we desire earnestly to remove.
- 3<sup>dy</sup>. Because that those that were by the Army impeach'd and charged, (both which impeachment and charge was by the House so accepted) yet are they still countenanced, and large summs of money since then for some of them not only by the House voted, but also fully pay'd; whereby they are fully enabled to manage their designs, and do the Kingdom greater disservice.
- 4<sup>th</sup>. Because that we by protracting of time impoverish the Country, which may alienate their affection from us, being the design of the obstructors of justice, thereby to destroy us and secure themselves.
- 5<sup>th</sup>. Because by delays we give them advantage to improve all



their interest in raising of forces, to the disturbance and involving the poor Kingdom in a new and more bloody warr.

6<sup>ly</sup>. Because this is the only expedient to know assuredly whether they will do what they have pretended and also promised, or otherwise all men may see and judge what they have intended and do endeavour.

7<sup>ly</sup>. Because we see justice more perverted now than ever, and violent illegall proceedings of corrupt magistrates, against the most cordiall and well affected people in the Kingdom, who are wrongfully imprisoned, fined, &c., and as yet left remedyless.

These recited grounds and reasons with the additional annexed being seriously considered, we can not but earnestly and submissively desire Your Excellency and this Honourable Councill so to dispose of the Army as may conduce to the accomplishment of those our humble requests, which we conceive will greatly advantage the Army and Kingdom.

DANIEL ABBOT (Major).

JOHN CLARKE, Capt.

EDM<sup>d</sup>. ROLF, Capt.<sup>a</sup>

Additional Reasons more fully explaining our desires for a speedy march towards London.

1<sup>st</sup>. The Armys removal to this distance from London hath given liberty and opportunity to an adverse party in that City to scandalize our persons and actions by pamphletts and otherwise, whereby they prejudice the spirits of many against us, they being depriv'd of opportunitys to understand personally from our selves both our actions and intentions by reason of our distance from them.

<sup>a</sup> Edmund Rolfe was Captain in Hammond's regiment, and accused in 1648 of a design against the King's life. The papers respecting this accusation are printed at length in the *Lords' Journals*, in Rushworth, and in *Cary's Memorials*. A petition of Rolfe's is in Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1654, 352.



2<sup>ly</sup>. Our adversaries by our removal farr from them have taken advantage to induce many thousands to list themselves (under such new Commanders as the new committee for the Militia hath judged fitt to prosecute their ends), under pretence of being auxiliary forces to the Trained Bands ; And tho pretences may be specious, yet, considering that the principles of the actors have a natural tendency to oppose the Army, and that those whose principles did not concur with theirs were displaced in order to these proceedings, who can imagine that any reason of such preparations, when no visible power appears against them, unless their thoughts and intentions be to oppose this Army? And indeed some lately have boasted that they have many thousands ready to fight with this Army, if they were commanded.

3<sup>ly</sup>. Upon the Army's drawing back from the Citty, the Parliament's proceedings for the good of the people and Army hath been slack'd. Whilst the Army was drawing near, the Excise was lessened and eased, the injuries done to the Army considered, some moneys provided for them; but since its drawing back no moneys have been allowed them to pay their Quarters for the peoples ease and the Army's content, there hath been no care to prevent the scandalizing of us, no discountenance of those that by pamphletts asperse as with mutinying, treason, and rebellion. And whether these neglects of us may not proceed from their confidence in those pretended auxiliaries, we leave to your wisdom to judge.

4<sup>ly</sup>. The Votes of Parliament whereupon we drew back appear to have been intended to delude us, as:

1. Tho' they declared that none should desert the Army from that time being they owned the Army, yet their first declaration that invited to desert the Army and promised their Arrears to those that should desert, it is not recalled; and tho' the last seems to cross the first yet there is no penalty in their last vote putt upon those that shall desert us, and a promise is made in the first to those that shall desert it, and which of these discover the affections and intentions of the Parliament we must leave to their wisdom to determine.



2. Nothing hath been done to shew the mistake and error of those that did desert us, or to dissipate or discountenance them, tho' it hath been much pressed since those votes.
3. They voted that the Army should be payd equally to those that deserted it, yet it was only when money could be raised conveniently; whereas they could find present moneys to pay them, on purpose to preffer them to us, and to abett and encourage them.
4. The Vote by this means is but a snare, seing they shall intimate to the Kingdom, that they are necessitated to tax them farther for our satisfaction.
5. They have since payd the Arrears of one of the impeach'd Members by 2000*l* at once, altho' the House was inform'd that he was in debt to the State 15000*l*.

The removal of the Army to this distance necessitates such delays, as give further opportunity to the adverse party to make overtures of plausible advantage to the King's party, and also to insinuate that our principles are against civil government; and certainly these endeavours may be well presumed by the overtures made to the Queen and Prince, and by the Parliament's not declaring against all invitations of foreign force, after intelligence given of this design.

6. The removal of the Army to such a distance from London hath much dissatisfyed the well affected Commons throughout the Kingdom, especially because nothing was insisted upon for the present ease of the oppressed Commons, as expedient to be done before their drawing back, which considered together with the present delays and the thoughts of the delatory Treaty, hath abated their expectations in some measure of that precious freedom that they hoped should be the issue of the Army's endeavours. And we cannot but observe that no country hath made their addresses to the Generall since their drawing back.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> On the petitions presented to the General and Army see *Whitlock's Memorials*, ed. 1853, ii., 164; *Holles, Memoirs*, § 110.





Att a Generall Councell of Warre held att Reading.  
July 16, 1647.

Present.

His Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax.

L <sup>t</sup> . Gen. Cromwell.	Adj. Gen. Tulidah.
Cofñ. Gen. Ireton.	Major Waade.
L <sup>t</sup> . Gen. Hamond.	Q <sup>r</sup> . Master Gen. Grosvenor.
Col. Whalley.	Major White.
Col. Rainborow.	Capt. Blackwell.
Col. Lambert.	Capt. Pretty.
Col. Sir Hardresse Waller.	Capt. Kirkby.
Col. Okey.	Capt. Lloyde.
Col. Scroope.	Capt. Merriman,
Col. Tomlinson.	Capt. Neale.
Col. Fleetwood.	Capt. Rolf.
Col. Harrison.	„ Orpin.
Col. Pride.	„ Clarke.
Col. Barkestead.	„ A. Younge.
Col. Horton.	„ Wolfe.
Col. Rich.	„ Deane.
Adjutant Generall Deane.	„ Miller.
L <sup>t</sup> . Col. Bowen.	„ Lughton.
L <sup>t</sup> . Col. Cowell.	„ Hodden.
L <sup>t</sup> . Col. Goffe.	„ Audley.
Major Disbrow.	„ Lagoe.
Major Huntington.	„ Rawlinson.
Major Gregson.	„ Watson.
Major Rainborow.	
Major Abbott.	L <sup>t</sup> . Chillenden,
Adj. Gen. Evelyn.	„ Scotton.



Lieut. Generall.

Moved for a Committee, many thinges then nott being fitt for debate, and the Councill of Warre to bee adjourn'd till the after-noone.

L<sup>d</sup>. Chillenden.

Answered and gives the consideration which moved them to every proposall or desire.

Commissary Ireton.

Objects, that itt's desired this paper should be sent to London.

Answer. This paper first consider'd, and when consider'd noe body found that the paper should goe uppe to London, that thinges may bee had.

Col. Harrison.

That itt bee resolved whether to have a present debate or noe.

Comiss. Ireton.

That the end of the meeting was nott to have a paper brought in and read, when most of those that heare itt are the presenters.

I would wee were once cleare to consider in what condition wee stand as to that point.

I am, as all are, ready for the consideration of that, soe farre as my owne opinion serves, and soe every man heere may bee.

Delays, as they are hurtfull in bussinesse and soe most prejudiciall to those that are most hasty, so delusive, and I would nott have any such tendencie towards a Delusion as a delay; <sup>a</sup> therfore I desire wee may consider whether the Army should march to London in order to those thinges.

\* *i.e.* As delays are prejudicial so haste is delusive, I wish to avoid both.



Major Tulida.

That all center in one thinge, that all the proposalls [will] bee of noe effect without a march to London.

Comptroller.

If any man bee satisfied in what hath bin [proposed] others heere are nott.

Lieut. Gen.

Marching uppe to London is a single proposall, yett itt does not droppe from Jupiter, as that itt should bee presently received and debated without considering our Reasons. For I hope this [temper] will ever bee in the Agitators, I would bee very sorry to flatter them, I hope they will bee willing that nothing should bee done butt with the best Reason, and with the best and most unanimous concurrence. Though wee have this desire back't with such reasons, certainly itt was nott intended [to say] wee had noe reason to weigh those Reasons; for I thinke wee shall bee left to weigh these Reasons. All this paper is fill'd with Reasons: the dissatisfaction in particulars; the disadvantages of removall from London; the advantages of marching towards London. You are ripe for a Conclusion, and gett a Conclusion; but lett this bee offer'd to the Generall and Councill of Warre.

Col. Rainborow.

That what hath bin spoken to the votes if other Gentlemen are not satisfied, itt is growne very hard if one will nott beleive another, and [will] adde much delay to our businesse, and therefore I am nott uppon intending of the Debate till 5 or 6 a clock upon that ground too.\* That other ground in a bussinesse of such weight as this is, that if there can bee more reasons given, action will bee soe much the better accepted. Therefore I doe humbly move that

\* *i.e.* I am not in favour of beginning the debate till—



since itt is a businesse of that consequence, privately and for our owne satisfaction, wee may have some little time to satisfie our judgements in itt, and to come prepar'd to give other Reasons in itt.

Com: Gen:

Wee act as if wee did [would?] gett the power into our owne hands.

To give the Kingdome satisfaction in the thinges that wee desire, itt is not the getting power into one man's hands more then another, butt it is the settling and securing their liberties in order to a peace; though, as that Gentleman said, That noe body should withstand. There are some thinges prepared for that purpose if any know any particulars to bee added.

Before we doe bring ourselves into scandall and dishonour by putting it upon new Puntillios and quarrelling more, one is what itt is that wee intend to doe with that power when we have it.<sup>a</sup>

Lient. Gen.

I desire we may withdraw and consider. Discourses of this nature will I see putt power into the hands of any that cannot tell how to use it, of those that are like to use it ill.<sup>b</sup> I wish itt with all my heart in better hands, and I shall be glad to contribute to gett itt into better hands. If any man or companie of men will

<sup>a</sup> The confused report of Ireton's speech may be thus paraphrased :—

"We act as if we sought only to get power into our own hands. It is not getting power into one man's hands more than another's, but the settling and securing the liberties of the kingdom, we ought to seek. Before we bring ourselves into scandall and dishonour by raising new points of dispute and quarrelling more, the one thing necessary is to satisfy the kingdom what it is we want, and what we intend to do with that power when we get it. Some particulars have been prepared by me for that purpose, etc."

<sup>b</sup> Cromwell's remarks may be thus paraphrased : "Let us withdraw and consider. Discourses of this kind serve no useful purpose. I see power put in the hands of many that cannot tell me how to use it, of those that are likely to use it ill;" meaning the London Militia Commissioners.





say that wee doe seeke ourselves in doing this, much good may it doe him with his thoughts. Itt shail nott putt mee out of my way.

The meeting att 6 a clock. Itt is nott to putt an end to this businesse of meeting, but I must consult with myself before I consent to such a thinge,<sup>a</sup> butt really to doe such a thinge [I must consult] before I doe itt. And wheras the Commissary does offer that these thinges were desired before satisfaction bee given to the publike settlement,<sup>b</sup> there may bee a conveniencie of bringing in that to the Councill of Warre next sitting, if itt bee ready, and thought fitt to be brought in. If these other things bee in preparation wee may bringe them in, that wee may nott bee to seeke for a Councill of Warre if wee had our businesse ready.

Capt. Clarke.

I humbly conceive that the sence of these Gentlemen present is noe other then what is for the good of the Kingdome, and that none of us have an intention to begin a new Warre. The [causes of] Warres in parties are noe other then the misplacing of the power of the Kingdome, and wee have as much reason as them, if itt bee misplaced, to misplace itt.<sup>c</sup>

Mr. Allen.

I wish that while wee have bin propounding of that which does tend to preservation, and the avoiding the Destruction that wee are confident is intended to the Kingdome and Army, that while wee are acting unto that end wee should take power out of men's hands, and doe what wee may that wee may nott soe longe stand. Instead of getting a power to quarrell wee may nott doe any thinge that

<sup>a</sup> i.e. marching on London.

<sup>b</sup> i.e. that satisfaction be given as to the public settlement before these new things are desired.

<sup>c</sup> i.e. to place it in better hands.



is our duty to doe. Itt is the desire of those that have the power, or the greatest parte of itt, in their hands to carry on thinges that they may have power.<sup>a</sup> Whether this bee a picking a quarrell I shall leave itt to your consideration.

Mr. Lockyer.

Itt is the great dissatisfaction of all the well-affected in the Kingdome [to see power in the hands of men] who have indeavoured to their utmost against us.

Com: Ireton.

Itt was partly intimated by the Gentleman that sitts neere your Excellency, and uppon that occasion itt is further apprehended by a Gentleman that sitts on that side, as if there were an expression to that purpose, that this was done<sup>b</sup> with an intent to pick a Quarrell. I hope itt is nott, butt I neither know other men's intents neither will I sweare for them. I must tell you againe, that I doe verily believe that all in this Companie heere have heard of some designes of the Enemy, to sett men a worke amongst themselves, some to worke one way and some another.<sup>c</sup> If there bee any such men thrust in amongst them, or any that are see wrought uppon, which is a possibility, itt may bee suggested from them by precipitancie, nott uppon such a thinge.<sup>d</sup> I am farr from beleiving that itt is in the hearts or

\* Allen's argument seems to be: "I wish, do whatever we may, that we may not stand idle while we are propounding these proposals for the preservation of the kingdom, etc. While we are making these preparations we must take power out of the hands of these men. It is not a case of quarrelling to get power, but doing a thing that it is our duty to do. The people now in power desire so to carry things that they may have power to destroy us and the kingdom. Whether to deprive them of that power be picking a quarrell, etc."

<sup>b</sup> *i.e.* this paper presented.

<sup>c</sup> Several words are here omitted.

<sup>d</sup> For such a design.



intentions of the generality, or for ought that I know, of any of these Gentlemen, to picke a Quarrell. My meaning is, itt carries the appearance of picking a Quarrell; and I thinke itt is a Rule of concernement to this Army, that, as we are just in our intentions, and doe nott intend knavery, soe wee should nott act like knaves, or any appearance of that nature.

[We should give the kingdom first] some reall tast of that which wee intend for the satisfaccion of the Kingdome, and what wee would doe with that power if we had itt in our hands [after] the putting of itt out of soe many hands. I have mov'd itt, and soe must again. Butt whether itt should bee putt out of these men's hands [or not], itt should bee putt into those hands uppon whome in the matter they intend . . . . .

Cornett Joyce.

The Commissary Generall speakes of things which hee gives as lawes to the Kingdome. Itt is too hard for us to give out lawes before the Kingdome is in a possibility of being settled, and itt is a great disadvantage for us to prescribe lawes when wee know not whether ever [we shall be able] to accomplish [a settlement].

Col. Harrison.

Names severall Committees to propose what things may bee answer'd, and what nott; and the rest of the things offer'd to bee consider'd by that time, to give some reasonable answer to that that is proposed to you.

Col. Rainborow.

That things might be manag'd as to your wisdomes shall bee thought fitt. For my parte I shall bee weary of the Meeting.



## Committee appointed to looke over Engagements.

Lt. Generall	Col. Scrope.	Mr. Sexby.
Com̃. Generall.	„ Thomlinson.	„ Allen.
Col. Rainborow.	„ Overton.	„ Lockyer.
Sir Hardresse Waller.	„ Okey.	„ Clarke.
Col. Rich.	„ Titchborne.	„ Stenson.
Adj. Gen. Deane.	Lieut. Gen. Hamond.	„ Underwood.

---

## Afternoone.

Lieut. Gen.

If you remember there are in your paper 5 particulars that you insist uppon. Two of them are thinges new, that is to say, thinges that yett have nott bin at all offer'd to the Parliament or their Commissioners, that is the 2<sup>d</sup> and the 4<sup>th</sup>.<sup>a</sup> The 2<sup>d</sup>, which concernes the Militia of the Citty, and the 4<sup>th</sup>, which concernes the Release of those prisoners that you have named in your paper, and those that are imprisoned in the severall parts of the Kingdome, of whome likewise you desire a consideration might bee had now the Judges are riding their circuites.

To the first [we give you] this Account: That upon your former paper delivered,<sup>b</sup> and uppon the weight and necessity of the thinge, there has bin a very serious care taken by the Generall, hee having, as I told you to day, referr'd the preparing of somewhat for the Parliament concerning that to Col. Lambert and myself; and an account of that has bin given to the Generall att our meeting in the inner Roome; and, if itt please you, that which has bin in preparation may be read together with the Reasons of itt.

<sup>a</sup> See p. 171.

<sup>b</sup> The paper on the London Militia presented on July 6.





That paper that now itt is desired may bee read to you is parte of itt an answer to a former paper that was sent to the Commissioners concerning the excluding of the Reformadoes out of the lines of communication, and the purging of the House of Commons, and the discharging or sending away into Ireland the men that had deserted the Army. The Generall did order a paper to that purpose to bee sent to the Commissioners; and that paper, that now is to bee read to you of a reply to the Commissioners; and there is an addition of this businesse concerning the Militia with the Reasons to inforce the desire of itt.

The papers read.<sup>a</sup>

Lieut. Gen.

Care taken of all them only two, which are concerning the suspending of the 11 Members and the discharging of prisoners.

I am commanded by the Generall to lett you know in what state affaires stand betweene us and the Parliament, and into what way all thinges are putt. 'Tis very true, that you urge in your papers concerning that effect that an advancing towards London may have, and of some supposed inconveniences that our drawing back thus farre may bringe uppon us; butt I shall speake to that presently. Our businesses they are putt into this way, and the state of our businesse is this: Wee are now indeavouring as the maine of our worke to make a preparation of somewhat that may tend to a generall settlement of the peace of the Kingdome and of the rights of the subject that Justice and Righteousnesse may peaceably flow out uppon us. That's the maine of our businesse. These things are butt preparatory thinges to that that is the maine; and you remember very well that this, that is the maine worke of all,

<sup>a</sup> *Army Declarations*, p. 77, paper entitled *An Answer of the Commissioners of the Army to the Paper of the Commissioners of Parliament about a speedy proceeding*. Cf. *ibid.*, p. 49, paper of July 15.



was brought to some ripenesse. The way that our businesse is in is this : for the redressing of all these things, itt [is] a Treaty, a Treaty with Commissioners sent from the Parliament downe hither to the end that an happy issue may be putt to all these matters that soe much concerne the good of the Kingdome, and therein our good is soe that they must bee finished in the way of a Treatie. The truth of itt is, you are all very reasonably sensible, that if those things were nott removed that wee thinke may loose us the fruite of a Treaty, and the fruite of all our labours, itt's in vaine to goe on with a Treaty, and its dangerous to bee deluded by a Treaty. And therefore I am confident of itt, that lest this inconveniencie should come to us, lest there should come a second warre, lest wee should bee deluded by a longe Treatie, your zeal hath bin stirr'd uppe to expresse in your paper that there is a necessity of a speedy marching towards London to accomplish all these things. Truly I thinke that possibly that may bee that that wee shall bee necessiated to doe [in the end]. Possibly itt may bee soe; but yett I thinke itt will be for our honour and our honesty to doe what wee can to accomplish this worke in the way of a Treaty; and if I were able to give you all those Reasons that lie in the case, I thinke itt would satisfie any rationall man heere. For certainly that is the most desirable way, and the other a way of necessity, and nott to bee done butt in [a] way of necessity. And truly, instead of all reasons lett this [one] serve: that whatsoever wee gett by a Treaty, whatsoever comes to bee settled uppon us in that way, itt will be firme and durable, itt will bee conveyed over to posterity, as that that will bee the greatest honour to us that ever poore creatures had that wee may obtaine such things as these are which wee are now about. And itt will have this in itt too, that whatsoever is granted in that way itt will have firmenesse in itt. Wee shall avoide that great objection that will lie against us, that wee have gott things of the Parliament by force; and wee knowe what itt is to have that staine lie uppon us. Things, though never soe good, obtain'd in that way, itt will exceedingly weaken the things, both



to our selves and to all posteritie; and therefore I say, uppon that consideration, I wish wee may bee well advis'd what to doe. I speake nott this that I should perswade you to goe about to cozen one another, itt was not in the Generall's, nor any of our hearts.

For the other two things that they yett take nce care of, that's the members impeached [and the prisoners], these are two additionall which will bee likewise taken care of to be considered, and answered nott with words and votes, but with content and action. In effect there hath bin consideration had of the matters in your papers, for there needs no more of our representing of them than these papers that have bin read. I believe that wee that are Commissioners should bee very positive and peremptory to have these things imediately granted, within the compass of time which your papers mention; within so many days. And if these be not granted in a convenient time, and answer given by the way proposed, you are yett putt in such a way in taking such a course of doing things as you have proposed sooner then that wee could nott have putt ourselves into a posture of doing.<sup>a</sup>

I hope in God that if wee obtaine these thinges in this way wee propose to you, and [in] this convenient time, that wee shall thinke our selves very happy that wee have nott gone any other way for the obtayning them. That which wee seeke [is] to avoide the having of a 2<sup>d</sup> warre and the defeating of those [things] that are soe deare to us, whose interest ought to bee above our lives to us. If wee finde any thinge tending that way to delay us or disappoint us of those honest thinges wee are to insist uppon, I hope itt cannott nor shall nott bee doubted that the Generall nor any of us will bee backward for the accomplishment of those thinges wee have proposed. It remaines that you have some short account as the time will beare of that that has bin soe longe in preparation, which is that that tends to the Generall Settlement; and the Generall hath

<sup>a</sup> In this paragraph the order of the clauses as given in the MS. has been altered, excepting in the case of the last three lines, which are past mending.



commanded the Commissary to lett you have a breif state of that.

Capt. Clarke.

I only offer this to your Excellency, whether the presenting of those things by way of Treaty will nott bee more dilatorie, and wanting of that virtue and vigour, than when itt comes from the hands of the Army more immediatlie, which though itt bee [from the Army] by way of Treatie [is] yett nott soe immediatlie [from it] ?

And further, whether those propositions<sup>a</sup> in order to the rights and liberties of the subject may nott prove in some measure obstructive to our present proceedings, when they shall propose such things as the Kingdome shall nott bee satisfied in, or [not] soe necessary as these particulars which are very necessary in order to itt ? For my owne parte I conceive thus much, that wee have very good and wholesome lawes already, if wee had butt good and wholsome Executors of them ; and that's the thinge wee insist uppon, to remove such persons that are most corrupt out of power and trust, and that such persons as are of knowne integritie may bee plac't in their roomes. And wheras the Lieutenant Generall was pleased to move, that itt was the best way to compose the differences betweene the Parliament and Army by way of Treaty, I presume to say in the name of these Gentlemen, they likewise wish itt might bee soe. Butt truly, Sir, wee have great feares and jealousies that these Treaties, managed by a power soe adverse [?] to us, will prove rather destructive and delusive to us then any wayes certaine for our security and [for] the settlement of the Kingdom. If your Excellency please wee are very desirous that the paper presented to you might bee represented [to Parliament] as immediatly from us and from this honourable Councill, and by the Agitators, which wee conceive will putt vigour and strength

<sup>a</sup> MS. "preparations."







to the businesse, and wee hope effect that which [is] soe earnestly desired.

Lieut. Gen.

I may very easily mistake that which the other Officer offer'd to your Excellency. Two particulars which might receive retardecment or obstruction by carrying them on in a way of Treatie, I mentioned indeed, particulars which were that of the 11 Members and that of the prisoners, and meant that those<sup>a</sup> should goe as the sence of the whole Army. Hee conceives itt will adde vigour and strength to the desire and make our desires more easily granted [to] present not only those but all the rest [as the sence of the whole Army.]

If it bee soe all the rest will bee obstructed if they goe by way of Treatie. There may bee perhaps some mistake or forgetfulnesse in that which I offer'd to you. I thinke truly there is no objection lies in that which is said. For, soe farre as I know and discern of these thinges and the way of management of them, if wee convey [this paper] to the Commissioners and by them to the Parliament as the sence of the whole [Army] represented by the Agitators to the Generall and assented to by the Councill of Warre, and [it] soe becomes the sence; nott only of the Armie that is the offended parte butt alsoe [of] the commanding parte of itt; and [if] wee represent itt to them with that positivenesse that hath bin spoken of, to be sent up to London, to which we desire an answer, and expect an answer within some few days, that is to say, within so short a time as they can have itt consulted, wee may call this a Treaty, butt I thinke itt signifies nothing else butt what that Gentleman speakes of.<sup>b</sup> Therefore for my parte I think they<sup>c</sup> differ in nothing but in words, and not in substance.

<sup>a</sup> MS. "means by those that."

<sup>b</sup> The report is here very confused and I have altered the position of several clauses to make the sense clearer.

<sup>c</sup> Our proposals.



I suppose there are resolutions nott to enter uppon a further Treaty till wee have an answer to these thinges, and if you have patience to heare that which is offer'd you to bee acquainted with from the Commissary Generall, I suppose that businesse may bee soe disposed of.<sup>a</sup> Therefore I shall desire that if itt please the Generall, that you may<sup>b</sup> have an account of that other businesse by the Commissary Generall.

Mr. Allen.

May itt please your Excellency, I desire to offer one word. The Lieut. Generall hath bin pleased to give us an account that your Excellency together with your Councill have travel'd hard in the transacting and managing of thinges in order to the weale both of the Kingdome and Army, in which I hope wee are satisfied<sup>c</sup> as concerning your care and fidelity therein. Butt truly wee cannott bee soe fully satisfied in the apprehension of your care in the managing and transacting of thinges for us, butt wee are as much sadded that those<sup>c</sup> with whome you are transacting and endeavouring to manage these great affaires for us are taking soe little care of us while you in transacting are soe carefull of them, soe little care either to save your expence [of labour] or ours. Truly [as to] that which the Lieutennant Generall hath spoken, to conclude thinges in the way of Treatie, you conceive itt would bee singularly honourable to conclude them soe if possible. Itt hath bin our thoughts soe too, and therfore [we] have waited longe that wee might if possible have thinges ended in such a way; butt truly wee have waited soe longe as our patience is expended. The Lieutennant Generall hath exprest, that if things bee not ended in such a way then there is a ground to goe on in some other way.

<sup>a</sup> Here follows in the MS. "As that it may be seen to all the world that itt is an effectuall meanes to procure these things to bee granted as marching to London would doe." This sentence evidently belongs to the end of the preceding paragraph.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "that the Commissioners General may by you."

<sup>c</sup> *i.e.* the Parliament.



How farre that way hath falne short, and how farre that has<sup>a</sup> presented us with a cleere ground to proccede in further, I shall leave itt to this honourable Councill to judge. And truly itt is that which is in most of our thoughts, that those who have bin treating with us are nott intended to conclude thinges in such a way. That when wee see God soe carried forth, or soe suffering mens spiritts to bee acted, that they shall refuse those peaceable thinges desir'd, that is the great thing observed by us.<sup>b</sup> And whether or noe proved once [God] hath nott pointed out some other way to us?<sup>c</sup> I thinke itt is most of our thoughts that hee has. And whether or noe nott such a way as this, namely, the proposall of these desires, those new ones, and those former that hath bin presented to them, [but] nott by them yet answered?<sup>d</sup> That which hath encouraged them rather nott to grant them hath bin our distance from them which our advancing towards them [will remove]. Itt is our thoughts that the proposall of these to them, and our speedy advance towards them, would be a preparation to attaine a speedy and a most effectuall answer to those thinges which wee desire, [in] which (if nott such a course taken) wee doe extreamely question that wee shall have nothing done. That now wee see delays prove soe dangerous that they are almost every day expected to run into confusion, which [it] is the desire of you and of us to prevent, and wee have named those thinges that they may bee offer'd to the House, and that wee may march in order to a speedy procuring of an answer to them.

Lieut. Gen.

If that that I say of the Treaty bee applied to one thinge which

<sup>a</sup> MS. "was."

<sup>b</sup> Clause transposed.

<sup>c</sup> Proved once, *i.e.* when this is once proved.

<sup>d</sup> The speaker's meaning seems to be that God has purposely prevented the parliament from accepting the terms of the army and thus pointed out to the army the necessity of using another way to obtain them.



I meane of another, then there may haply<sup>a</sup> bee a very great misunderstanding of mee; butt that which I speake of Treaty, that relates to those thinges that are prepared for a generall Settlement of the Kingdome, bee applyed to the obtayning of these thinges which are to precede a Treaty, is that that I have said to you hath bin mistaken throughout, and instead of giving mee satisfaction of that point which stickes on so with every one of danger and delay butt that which I say of Treatie in answer to that is offer'd in your paper that wee should obtaine these by positive demand within a circumscribed time and going of the Commissioners. Yett using the name will nott offend if wee doe nott the thinges, that is [if] wee doe nott treate of those thinges.<sup>b</sup>

Give mee leave to offer one thinge to your consideration which I see you make to bee your ground of marching towards London; because itt came in my minde, I am sorry I did itt, butt this came in my minde, and I would nott offer itt to you butt because I really know itt is a truth. Wee are, as our friends are elsewhere, very swift in our affections and desires; and truly I am very often judged for one that goes too fast that way, and itt is the property of men that are as I am to bee full of apprehensions that dangers are nott soe reall as imaginary, to bee always making hast, and more some times perhaps then good speede; wee

<sup>a</sup> MS. "happily."

<sup>b</sup> Though the reporter has irreparably confused Cromwell's actual words his meaning is plain enough.

"That which I speak of the advantages of a treaty relates only to the propositions for a general settlement of the kingdom. What I said to you on that point has been mistaken throughout if it be applied to the obtaining of the things which are to precede a treaty. You keep on misapplying that instead of giving me satisfaction as to the question of the danger of delay. That which I say in answer to the proposal in your paper is that we should obtain these things by a positive demand, and within a circumscribed time, forwarding them through the Commissioners the Parliament has appointed to treat. There is no harm in nominally using the Commissioners for this purpose if we do not treat with them, but merely turn them into messengers."





are apt to misapprehensions that wee shall bee deluded through delay, and that there are noe good intentions in the parliament towards us, and that wee gather from the manifold bearing [?] of those words that wee have represented to them. Give mee leave to say this to you, for my owne parte perhaps I have as few extravagant thoughts, overweaning [thoughts] of obtaining great thinges from the Parliament as any man; yett itt hath bin in most of our thoughtes that this Parliament might bee a reformed and purged Parliament, that wee might see [there] men looking att publique and common interests only. This was the great principall wee had gone uppon, and certainly this is the principle wee did march uppon when wee were att Uxbridge, and when wee were att St. Alban's, and surely the thing was wise, and honourable, and just, and wee see that providence hath led us into that way. Itt's thought that the Parliament does nott mend—what's the meaning of that? That is to say, that company of men that sitts there does nott meane well to us. There is a partie there that have bin faithfull from the sitting of the Parliament to this very day; and wee know their interests, and they have ventured their lives through soe many hazards, they came nott to the House butt under the apprehension of having their throats cutt every day. If wee well consider what difficulties they have past that wee may not run into that extreme of thinking too hardly of the Parliament. If wee shall consider that their businesse of holding their heads above water is the common worke, and every other day [s work] and to day that which wee desire is that which they have struggled for as for life, and sometimes they have bin able to carry itt, others nott, and yett daily they gett ground.

Iff wee [wish to] see a purged Parliament, I pray lett mee perswade every man that hee would be a little apt to hope the best; and I speake this to you as out of a cleare conscience before the Lord, I doe thinke, that [that part of] the Parliament is uppon the gaining hand, and that this worke that wee are now uppon



tends to make them gaine more; and I would wish that wee might remember this alwayes, that [what] wee and they gaine in a free way, itt is better then twice so much in a forc't, and will bee more truly our's and our posterities; and therfore I desire nott to perswade any man to bee of my minde, butt I wish that every man would seriously weigh these thinges.

Mr. Allen.

May itt please your Excellency and this honourable Councill, I suppose your Honour hath att this time spoke those good hopes and thoughts that you have of the Parliament; and truly they are the same thoughts and hopes that wee have longe had, and are loath to lay downe or to deviate from, did not too visible testimonie take us off, or wee would willingly see, and itt would bee the rejoicing of our spiritts to see, as possibly might be,<sup>a</sup> a Parliament soe reformed as might back this present power, and that power and auctority might goe hand in hand to carry on that great worke in order to the Kingdomes welfare; which could they doe, I thinke itt would much facilitate your carrying of itt on. Your Honour is pleased to tell us (I suppose speaking your hopes therin) that the Parliament or the prevailing parte of itt is a gaining parte, and like to gaine more. Truly I could wish wee could say soe too; butt soe farre as wee are able to judge of ourselves wee must speake our feares. That wee conceive they<sup>b</sup> are a loosing partie, and losers rather then gainers. I think very few of us [believe] that they are at the present gainers, or like to be gainers. Whether our marching towards London may nott conduce to such an end, namely to the quelling of the spiritts of those who are acting as much as in them lies to make them and us and the kingdome be losers? That they are losers, and truly, if such a course bee nott taken to suppress those persons, that I fear itt will

<sup>a</sup> Clause transposed.

<sup>b</sup> Our friends in the Parliament.



bee past our recovery to make them gainers, if wee lett them go on.<sup>a</sup>

Com. Generall.

I suppose this debate depends upon these two thinges; First, whether those desires read bee likely soe effectually to bee sent uppe to London in the way as they are, or in the other deliver'd in to day; and the other [thing] is, whether itt bee nott fitt, whether you send [them] the one [way]<sup>b</sup> or the other, to resolve upon a marching of the Army towards London. I conceive<sup>c</sup> the effect of what was said to your Excellency last was, to my understanding, butt meerly an answer of one reason that seem'd to have bin urg'd against the marching of the Army towards London.

And first I cannott butt take notice of what was said upon that point, soe as to give the Gentleman that hath spoke and the rest some satisfaction too, or att least to shew how little reason they have to bee unsatisfied. It is suppos'd that those who appeare, who wee account to bee friends of the Commonalty, as to the Kingdome, and of Justice and righteousnesse, which do professe as wee to<sup>d</sup> seeke after itt, itt is suppos'd they are rather of the loosing then of the gaining hand; and I expected to have had some reasons why wee should thinke soe; butt the maine [reason given] was, that they didd nott soe fully nor soe wholly comply with this Army in all the thinges that they desire [as we think they ought to do].

I cannott blame [them] nor cannott see [how] any man [can] that walkes by that rule of doing to another as hee would bee done to, which is the only rule of justice. I doe nott understand how wee can thinke that of necessity they must satisfie us in all these thinges wee desire, and those [things] tending still to putt power

<sup>a</sup> The report is here amended by transposing several clauses.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "partie."

<sup>c</sup> MS. "perceive."

<sup>d</sup> MS. "as wee professe doe."



into our hands, and to put all power too out of any other hands; I cannott expect itt reasonably from men. For what reason have I to expect that other men should trust mee more then I should trust to them? or that I should give them better testimonie of my fidelitie to them then they of their's to mee, and especially of the fidelity and clearnesse of my intentions? Truly I thinke wee have some intimations<sup>a</sup> that they are rather of the gaining hand, though I shall offer some [more]. You cannot but see they have prevail'd. We heare [that] there are daily upon those votes many that doe discover themselves, and others that are discovered by others, that doe leave the House; and unlesse wee should thinke that those men of injustice and pusillanimity<sup>b</sup> may bee better friends to us then those that stay behinde, I cannott see how wee should thinke otherwise but *they* must needs bee by that of the gayning hand—I meane those that are friends to our interest, for the going against which, or betraying of which these men are cast out—and therefore I thinke that parte that was used of their being of the gaining hand, together with the consideration of the difficultie by which they doe carry these thinges daily—and att present they are struggling and striving with a partie that would carry all thinges with the worst to the Kingdome—I thinke [that consideration] ought to bee of [such] weight with us that wee should have some love towards them, as wee would expect that others should have the like towards us, if wee were in the like case.

I shall proceede to speake concerning the marching of the Army towards London for the inforcing of these desires, and concerning the way of sending uppe these desires of the Army. I cannott butt deliver my opinion, that itt would bee more effectuall if itt doe come as a paper agreed upon by your Excellency, by your Councill of Warre, and by all the Agitators. [It] cannott butt bee more effectuall, then iff itt came in by the

<sup>a</sup> MS. "intentions."

<sup>b</sup> Clause transposed.







Commissioners that are appointed to treat, and soe I hope itt will bee satisfactory to them; and truly when wee have any thinge to say to the Parliament, and [it is] nott deliver'd [directly] to them, I thinke itt is a great incivility. Sir, I shall speake but a word or two concerning those apprehensions that I perceive there are of after troubles. For my owne parte I expect noe great matter, nor [do I desire] to putt much upon the way of the Treaty; I should rather desire to shorten the worke, and if men doe understand your Excellency they may know that that which only hath occasioned the hope of any thinge in the Treatie is that wee would nott goe soe much in the way of Treatie, but the rather thinke of another way to drawe out all thinges out of our own proposalls;<sup>a</sup> and soe to make a short worke of itt without any longe proposall by way of debate. And wheras itt hath bin said, by any way of Treatie at all, there is little hopes expected, [but] if any[thing] discouragement,<sup>b</sup> because itt hath continued soe longe, and soe little done, I must deale freely and cleerly in that particular, that there is noe cause that I can apprehend for the starting of itt. Wee have noe reason to blame the Commissioners of Parliament, because they have still called upon us to goe on in that Treatie, and they have sat still and bin content because wee have putt little into their hands.<sup>c</sup> And I must desire all these Gentlemen to consider that [in] the concluding of this by way of Treatie in order to the Settlement of the Kingdome, if there bee any delay, the fault of itt, if there bee any fault, itt lies wholly amongst our selves whatever itt bee; and I thinke much fault hath bin in none, [but there hath bin] a

<sup>a</sup> To draw out our own proposals of all things.

<sup>b</sup> Two clauses transposed.

<sup>c</sup> See the letters of the Parliamentary Commissioners dated July 6, July 8, July 10, and July 18, and the paper delivered by them to the Commissioners of the Army on July 7, in which they complain that the proceedings of the Army Commissioners in the treaty have been very slow. *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., pp. 93, 95, 97, 107, 115; printed also in the *Lords' Journals*, and in the *Collection of Army Declarations*.



choice rather to present all thinges for the settlement of the Kingdom [together]. The other [reason] was because itt was nott [thought] soe fitt to proceede in itt till some other thinges for present securitie were satisfied, soe that there is noe reason indeed that those that have bin employed in the Treatie should bee blam'd for itt as att this time; and I cannot butt adde one word more, that those Gentlemen that seeme to bee unsatisfied have little reason to blame any att all.

This preparation of an entire proposall of particulars they have bin desir'd, and I shall appeale to as many as have spoken to mee if I have nott made itt knowne that wee were upon this worke of drawing all thinges for a proposall to the setting of the Kingdome.<sup>a</sup> Therefore [it was desired that] any man that had leasure and freedome and a minde to further the worke would thinke of any particulars to give in to my self and another that was sequestred or sett apart for that worke; and truly Sir, I thinke if noe man else hath prepared any other particulars, I thinke those that have prepared some particulars [deserve thanks]. Wee propose thus. Wee doe thinke that the settlement of peace is by having a settlement of itt in our hands; if ever itt doe come to settle, itt must bee by setting downe some thinge that may bee a rule to lay a foundation for the common rights and liberties of the people, and for an established peace in the Nation. I know nott [that] any of those Gentlemen that seeme to bee sensible of delayes, that any of them have tendred any thinge to the Commissioners that have satt, or have proposed<sup>b</sup> any termes wherein the settlement is.

I shall say no more to these, but [speak] to one [thing only] as to drawe the Army towards London. Truly Sir I should bee

<sup>a</sup> On the history of the drawing up of the Heads of the Proposals agreed on by the Army, see *Memoirs of Sir John Berkeley*, Maseres, *Select Tracts*, i., 353, and Wildman's *Putney Projects*, 1647, p. 13. The other person mentioned as set apart for that work appears to have been Lambert, v. post. p. 212, and Whitelock, ii., 163 ed. 1853.

<sup>b</sup>MS. "of proposing." The order of the sentences in this paragraph is evidently wrong.



against it altogether, unlesse wee had proposed those thinges for setting the peace of the Kingdome, and doe finde a profest preparation against you. Butt I am the more against you because those thinges are not proposed, and nott the more because att present you propose such a thinge which may justly receive a deniall, I meane to those whom you do nott give such a full satisfaction in. I do not knowe that there is a thinge agreed upon to bee propos'd, I mean the proposall of the Militia in those hands.<sup>a</sup> I am concluded by the Councell soe farre as nott to speake any thinge att all against itt, only soe farre as nott to that wee should nott faile for that as to march uppe to London,<sup>b</sup> and I wish when wee doe itt wee should have a more reasonable thinge then for that. And, Sir, I shall say noe more to itt, but adde some inforcement, and that is, the consequence of seeking to gaine such thinges as these are by force. Truly I know nothing that can make any man to scruple the weight of that, except itt bee that hee thinkes there hath bin force offer'd already, and [that] therefore wee shall thinke of nothing heerafter butt force, and nott make account of any thinge that can bee obtain'd any other way. If a man hath nott that apprehension this argument must bee a very weighty one.<sup>c</sup> I should butt desire to minde that which is visible and apparent in the papers, which was the only appearance of any kinde of threat-

<sup>a</sup> The last two sentences should probably run thus, "But I am the more against you because those things are not proposed—I do not know that there is a thing agreed upon to be proposed—and not the less because at present you propose to those to whom you do not give such a full satisfaction a thing which may justly receive a deniall. I mean the proposal of returning the Militia into the hands of those in whom it lately was." On the Militia, v., pp. 152, 171, 174.

<sup>b</sup> This may be thus paraphrased and emended, "I am bound by the opinion of the rest of the Councell so far as not to speak anything against that proposal itself, but I may go so far as to say that I would not have you for that fall to march up to London."

<sup>c</sup> Ireton's words perhaps were as follows: "I should but desire to remind you that that which is visible and apparent in your papers now is only the appearance of a kind of threatening."



ning. And I say yett, my ground then<sup>a</sup> was that this Army stood as it were proscib'd; you stood butt as outlawes, all that were amongst you were invited to come away from you, and you were putt out of protection, and noe body owning of you as their Army. That was one Reason. Another Reason [was that those] who were the profest, open, knowne Enemies of the Army, who had (according to those thinges wee have impeached them for) indeavoured to engage in a Warre, they had place in Parliament, and such place and power in all Committees of Parliament as did give them a cleere advantage openly and aboveboard to carry on thinges for a Warre, and we saw very visible effects of that. Truly from that time [we have] seere an alteration as to that, and that is first of all that they are withdrawne from the House, and they are nott suffer'd to appeare that I can heere upon action as members of the House. There is nothing wanting butt a positive order for the sequestring of them the House, and that I thinke there is a greate deale of Justice to demand, and to demand with a further inforcement.

I speake all to this purpose, that wee had uppon our former march to London better grounds, and now wee have nott any left us. Wee were in all probability butt as ruin'd men, under noe acknowledgement nor own'd by noe body, by noe auctoritie in the Kingdome. In that the case is very clearly alter'd, and for my owne parte I doe nott understand how we can have the same ground to goe agen now; but I apply all to this conclusion, that before wee had such a cleare ground for our going uppe that all might conclude that wee had reason to doe that, or else to have wholly laid downe our armes, and deserted the cause and interest wee have taken, for wee could nott continue in armes till that wee done.

Mr. Allen.

The Commissary Generall's discourse hath bin large, and truly

<sup>a</sup> When the Army first marched on London early in June, 1647.







my memory and the time is something short. I shall nott speake butt only to one particular, and that the last, because itt is most fresh in my memory, and perhaps some heere have had thoughts of the former. Concerning our marching uppe to London, I take itt itt is waiv'd uppon this ground, that wee have nott now that reason as formerly wee had when wee did before march uppe towards itt; and the reason that then wee had was this, wee lay as a disown'd Army and wee had a House unpurg'd. Truly to that I shall only breiflie reply, that I doe confesse wee are own'd in name, butt I doubt nott in nature, to bee the Parliaments Army. And truly I will only hinte att some thinges in order to that, that give mee some grounds soe to suspect that we are nott own'd as their Army. Meerly the reason is, if wee were they would never suffer us to bee traduc't, revil'd, and rail'd uppon both in pulpitts and presses continually as wee are, butt itt would bee a little laid to heart by a Parliament owning us as their Army, and itt would reflect uppon their honour as well as ours. I conceive that they ought to doe some thinge in vindication both of our owne and their Honour in that particular; butt seing them silent and all this while wee should lie under itt, and I feare this is only that that they would putt upon us that wee are in name the Parliament's Army. Butt I will say noe more to that. As to the purging of the House [it is said that] there have been great thinges done. The Members<sup>a</sup> they are att present debarr'd of sitting there, and there wants butt'an ordinance or something to that purpose—which is almost all—to the sequestring of them wholly. I feare yett they are in a capacitie of doing too much, and till they shall more fully declare themselves as to that, I question if wee looke nott uppon thinges in a multiplying glasse. And truly as those were the reasons uppon which the weight of our marching laid, as that our intentions might bee made knowne to the Kingdome that soe wee might have

<sup>a</sup> The eleven impeached members.



a cleare and undoubted way to gett swords out of mens hands that will cutt our throates with them. To mee itt seemes strange that this should bee a sufficient ground. I wish that while wee are laying to our selves a full ground, by a full foundation for a large structure, some body does nott interpose betweene us. If when we have presented ourselves and mindes to the view of the Kingdome as intending to satisfaction to satisfie, whether or noe this is nott that which wee expected and wee know what they doe intend, wee'll seeke to helpe our selves in another, and soe the other and the other way, and truly if you have noe power in your hands, why truly of what a consequence such a thinge may bee I leave itt to you to judge.<sup>a</sup>

Lieut. Gen.

This I wish in the generall, that wee may all of us soe demeanse our selves in this businesse that wee speake those thinges that tend to the uniting of us, and that wee doe none of us exercise our parts to straine thinges, and to lett in thinges to a longe dispute, or to unnecessary contradictions, or to the stirring uppe of any such seede of dissatisfaction in one anothers mindes as may in the least render us unsatisfied one in another. I doe nott speake this that any body does doe itt, butt I say this ought to *become* both you and mee, that wee soe speake and act as that the end may bee union and a right understanding one with another.

<sup>a</sup> The minor speakers are not so well reported as the more important ones. Allen's argument appears to be, "As for the reasons on which the weight of the argument against our immediate marching is laid, viz., that we might make our intentions known to the kingdom, etc.—it seems strange to me that these should be thought sufficient grounds. I fear that while we are preparing our scheme for a settlement some one may step in between us and the settlement of the kingdome. What if when we have presented our heads of a settlement to the people, as intending to satisfy them whether they will or no, we fail to satisfy them? What if they say 'this is not what we expected, now we know what they mean we'll help ourselves some other way,' and so some take one way, some another way? If in such confusion you have no power in your hands what will the consequences be?"



Truly, if I thought that which was last spoken by Mr. Allen had bin satisfactory to that end for which hee spake itt, I should nott have said any thinge to you. Butt for that [answer] which hee made to the Commissary [General's argument] of the Parliament's owning of us, and what a thinge that was to us, and how much tending to the settlement of the peace of the Kingdome, to say or to thinke 'itt is butt a titular thinge that, and butt in name only that they doe owne [us,]' I thinke is a very great mistake. For really itt did att that time lay the best foundation could bee expected for the preventing an absolute confusion in this Kingdome; and I thinke if wee had nott bin satisfied in that, wee should nott have bin satisfied in any thinge. And [it is a very great mistake] to thinke that this is any weighty argument, 'itt is butt titular, because they suffer scandalous bookes flock uppe and downe,'—I would nott looke they should love us better then they love themselves, and how many scandalous bookes goe out of them. Wee have given them and the Parliament more to doe then attend [to] scandalous bookes. I hope that will not weigh with any man; and I desire wee may putt this debate to a conclusion, or else lett us answer those thinges that are really and weightily objected, as truly that was [not]. They have given us as reall a testimonie that they cannott give more. They cannott disowne us without the loosing of all rationall and honest people in the Kingdome; and therfore lett us take itt as a very great and high owning of us; lett nott us disown that owning. If any man would by that which was objected wee would have peace, a perfect settlement of all wee seek and we would march to London to say wee forc't them.<sup>a</sup>—Really, Really, Have what you will have, that you have by force I looke uppon itt as nothing. I doe nott knowe that force is to bee used, except wee cannott gett what is for the good of the Kingdome without force. All the arguments must tend to this, that itt is necessary to use force, to

<sup>a</sup> May be paraphrased thus, "If any man urges, we would have a perfect settlement of all we seek, and would therefore march to London. Say we did force them to grant what we ask."



march uppe with the Army, and nott to tarry 4 dayes. [Was not the argument thus]<sup>a</sup> wee shall bee baffled, denied, and shall never march uppe, butt still bee patient and suffer, even to have the ruine of the Kingdome as hath bin imagin'd [if we do not march within four days]. Expect a speedy answer which hath bin offer'd, and to make that criticall to us whether they owne us or intend to perfect the settlement as wee expect. The Kingdome would bee sav'd [even] if wee doe not march within 4 dayes, if wee had these things granted to us. If these things bee granted to us wee may march to Yorke. I wish wee may respite our determination till that 4 or 5 dayes bee over, till wee see how thinges will bee, except you will urge reasons to show itt to bee of absolute necessity to all those ends to determine just now that wee will march uppe to London to morrow or next day. I am sorry that wee bee nott satisfied with that which hath bin propos'd as to this very thinge, and [hope] that<sup>b</sup> having had assurance these things were putt into such a way as hath bin offer'd to you that you will rest contented with this as att this time, except you will show us some absolute reasons.

Major Tulida.

The Lieutennant Generall hath putt itt to a good issue, for the weight of the businesse lies heere. That those proposalls presented to your Excellency to day, and those thinges wee all doe conclude on to be necessary, but there seems a difference in the way.<sup>c</sup> I cannot butt adde that there is a great deale of faith in this, that wee doe [all] conclude our owne [way] as the accomplishing of the thinges. Whether you should represent that wee cannott probably obtaine them? And really Sir to my apprehension the

<sup>a</sup> MS. "if the argument was not thus." This clause is transferred from the line below.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "if."

<sup>c</sup> Clause transposed from two lines below.







representation of a swete and honourable way of Treating is as much wish't and desir'd by mee as by any. If I shall cast my eye on<sup>a</sup> what is represented by these Treaties, and by the consequence of them, I should stand att a distance from them. I shall nott putt the fault uppon the Commissioners [of the Parliament] or uppon those that were your Excellencie's Commissioners, butt in the conclusion wee are noe further then where wee were att Uxbridge; nay, nott soe farre, and the same thinges press<sup>b</sup> uppon us. And therefore —, though some have mentioned [as] to the Parliament, that wee should [not] expect from them any thinge that they could nott accomplish, — therefore, Sir, as our advancing to Uxbridge putt them into [such] a way that they had liberty to speake, if our advance to Uxbridge sett them on the legges, nothing will expedite them to putt them into the same [way] of boldly speaking for the Kingdomes interest [like our advance] towards the City.<sup>c</sup> Wee seeme to bee startled att the expression of forcing thinges—Doe wee force, or doe wee desire by forcing [anything] butt that with [once] forcing there should bee noe more forcing? That by the sword wee may take the sword out of those hands that are enemies to justice, to equity? Itt was by forcing this, and soe wee conceiving the emergent necessity that without an advance to London wee cannott have any other accomplishment to these proposalls I desire that all may bee putt to this issue. As to the thinge propounded by the Lieutenannt Generall, I doe nott know that wee can promise our selves soe as that wee can have itt,<sup>d</sup> when they doe nott owne us to bee their Army; and for the Militia of London there is

<sup>a</sup> MS. "in."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "prest."

<sup>c</sup> Clause transposed.

<sup>d</sup> MS. "I do not know as to the thing propounded by the Lieutenant General, I do not know that wee cannot promise ourselves soe as that wee cannot have it, nor then."



as great necessity for us to advance to London. Wee cannott have any thinge unlesse by the way of advancing to London.

Lieut. Gen.

Truly the words spoken by Major Tulidah were [spoken] with affection, butt wee are rationall [men]. I would faine know with what reason or colour of reason hee did urge any reason but only with affirmation of earnest words. For that Declaration of the Parliament, the Parliament hath own'd us, and taken off that that any man can loyally or rationally charge us with. If uppon his apprehensions or any man's else, wee shall quarrel with every dogge in the streete that barks att us, and suffer the Kingdome to bee lost with such a fantastick thinge? I desire that nothing of heate or earnestnesse may carry us heere, nor nothing of affirmation, nor nothing of that kinde may lead us, butt that which is truly reason, and that which hath life and argument in itt.

To that which was alledged that by our marching<sup>a</sup> to Uxbridge wee open'd those honest mens mouthes to speake for us. This is nott to be answer'd with reason, butt this is matter of fact, and better knowne to some of us then itt is to Major Tulida or any of you. 'Tis true there was [a] feare and an awe uppon the Parliament by our marching to Uxbridge, there was some thinge of that, for those 11 Members were afraid to bee in the House. If you will beleive that which is nott a fancie, they have voted very essentiall thinges to their owne purging, and I believe, this, iff we will believe that which is the truth in fact,<sup>b</sup> uppon that very one vote that

<sup>a</sup> MS. "By that which was alledged of our marching."

<sup>b</sup> On July 5 a vote was passed that no persons who had been in actual war against the Parliament, or accepted pardons from the King, or taken any part in bringing about the cessation or otherwise assisting the Rebellion in Ireland, or were sequestered by Parliament for delinquency should presume to sit in the House of Commons. *Commons' Journals*, v. 233. Those who infringed this order were by a second vote of July 9 to be liable to the penalties imposed in the Newcastle propositions on those who had sat in the Oxford Parliament, i.e., to be guilty of high treason and their estates to be sequestered (*ibid.*, p. 238; Gardiner, *Constitutional Documents*, p. 217).



was pas't,—concerning the putting a fine or penalty [on those] that knew themselves to bee guilty, and that if they did nott goe out should accuse themselves to bee liable to sequestration<sup>a</sup>—I believe there will goe 20 or 30 men out of the House of Commons. And if this bee [not] an effect and demonstration of the happy progresse, [they have made] and that by use of that libertie that they have had by our [not] drawing neere, I appeale to any man? And if they shall, as I said before, disowne us, and wee give them noe cause to doe itt, butt pressing only just, and honourable, and honest thinges from them, judge you what can the world thinke of them and of us? Butt [what can the world think if] wee shall doe that, whilst wee are uppon the gayning hand, that shall really stoppe their mouthes, to open their mouthes in a title for us. That whilst they are, as fast as they can, gayning the thinges wee desire, if wee shall bee soe impatient that whilst they are struggling for life that they are unable to helpe us and gain'd more within these 3 dayes then in 10 dayes for aught I know wee may by advancing stoppe their mouthes.<sup>b</sup> They will nott have wherewithall to answer that middle partie in the House who is answer'd with this reason, “you see the Army is contented to goe backward, you see the Army is willing, to make faire representations<sup>c</sup> of that they have from us.” I professe, I speake itt in my conscience, that if wee should move untill wee had made these proposals to them, and see what answer they will give them, wee shall

<sup>a</sup> The report is here very confused. What Cromwell said was probably this, “If we will believe that which is the Truth in Fact, not that that which is a fancy, they have voted very essential things to their own purging.”

<sup>b</sup> Cromwell's argument seems to be this: “Shall we do that whilst they are upon the gaining hand in order to open their mouths in a title for us, that shall really stop their mouths? If we shall be so impatient—and that whilst they are as fast as they can gaining us the things we desire and have gained us more in the last 3 days than in 10 days whilst they were struggling for life and could not help us—for aught I know we may by advancing stop their mouths.” ‘In a title’ should perhaps be in a ‘title’ or may refer to the proposed declaration against foreign forces.

<sup>c</sup> MS. “fancie representations.”



nott only disable them butt divide among our selves; and I as much feare that as any thinge; and if wee should speake to your satisfactions you must speake to our satisfactions though there bee great feares of others I shall very much question the integritie of any man, I would nott have itt spoken.<sup>a</sup>

Cornett Joyce.

What I shall speake is nott against that which is prepared and are to be presented to the House, butt I should thus offer [this] unto the Lieutenantt Generall and likewise to the Commissary Generall; whether or noe when the Parliament did vote or declare us to bee their Army [they] did owne our act in fighting of the Kinge? Againe, if in case they have left out that, and doe nott owne that, there may bee some thing that may cause a . . . . . to neglect this Army.

Mr. Sexby.

To mee this seemes very cleare, and I cannott see yet any satisfaction to itt. I conceive that what the Parliament has done in reference to their declaring us their Army was uppon this ground, that they did [it] rather out of feare then love. My reasons are these: first, because to this day those that deserted us are [better] look't uppon, countenane't, and abundantly better paid then wee. 2<sup>ndly</sup>. Because as yett they looke uppon us as Enemies for this reason, that they send to treat with us; for truly Parliaments or Armies never treat with friends butt Enemies, and truly wee cannott butt looke uppon our selves soe.

Major Disbrow.

Soe farre as I understand, a great deale of this last is farre from the businesse in hand. Most men cry out for expedition, and this

<sup>a</sup> This might be rearranged thus: "And though there be great feares of other things I fear dividing as much as anything, and I shall very much question the integrity of any man that does not. I would not have the word spoken."







is nott the way to itt. One [point] that the Commissary Generall answer'd them fully in [was] the manner of presenting this paper. Another was a speedy marching, . . . . . and to itt many have rather offer'd their owne fancies then any expedient. Some for a speedy marching and others to march within 4 dayes. I humbly offer this, that if there were reason to resolve now to march to London, [whether] preparations would nott last soe longe [as four days]? I conceive this, that the chief ground of difference [is] of marching to London or nott marching to London; and itt is prest uppon this consideration, because there is noe expectation of [obtaining] what is propounded without the Army goes to backe itt. I only offer this to all reasonable men, whether itt bee nott an unreasonable way? Itt hath bin often agen and agen moved that there may bee an answer [obtained] by Munday night or Tuesday morning; and truly you could nott sett forward a march before; and therefore I offer itt to your Excellency that wee might nott take pleasure in speaking our own [fancies] butt to minde the businesse in hand, if any man hath any thinge to speake.

Lieut. Scotton.

One of the great ones was,<sup>a</sup> since wee see that your Excellency and the Councill of Warre hath bin pleas'd to take itt into consideration as to proceede to a Treaty, and truly I hope that reason that I have heard observ'd. Wee are soe farre satisfied to bring our desires about and waive the marching to London. I have one word [to say] that it does lie uppon our spiritts that there may bee a reall and effectuall course taken that [Lt.-Col. Lilburne] is freed.

Cornett Spencer.

I am now come from the Citty. There is this day many Officers of the Militia to take the names of every Apprentice and to cause

<sup>a</sup> One of the greatest reasons for marching was removed.



them to bee ready uppon an houres warning. That yesterday uppon the Kinges coming to Maidenhead.<sup>a</sup> That you and all of your Army I thinke wee may as well goe alonge with them as with our Army, as the Scotts did, and were justified, and therefore if wee bee right —

Lieut. Gen.

Truly Sir I thinke neither of these 2 thinges that Gentleman spoke last are any great newes. For the one of them, the listing of Apprentices, I doubt they have listed them twice over ; I am sure wee have heard [it] more then twice over. For the other [that our friends in London] would rejoyce to see us come uppe, what if wee [be] better able to consult what is for their good then themselves ? Itt is the generall good of them and all the people in the Kingdome [we ought to consult]. That's the question, what's for their good, nott what pleases them. I doe nott know that all these considerations are arguments to have satisfaction in these thinges that wee have in proposition. If you bee in the right, and I in the wronge, if we wee bee divided I doubt wee shall all bee in the wronge. . . . Whether of them will doe our worke, lett them speake without declaring.<sup>b</sup> Lett us nott thinke that this is a greater argument that they love those that deserted, that they have paid them and nott us, which was Mr. Sexbye's argument, which if itt had weight in itt I should have submitted to itt. The Question is singly this : whether or noe wee shall nott in a positive way desire the answer to these thinges before wee march towards London, when perhaps wee may have the same thinges in the time that wee can march. Heere is the strictnesse of the Question.

<sup>a</sup> Spencer refers to the King's coming to Maidenhead to meet the Duke of York, July 15. Rushworth, vi. 625. His argument seems to be, "Our friends wished we had come with the King and would march up to London with them."

<sup>b</sup> Cromwell's meaning appears to be : "Let us call on the Parliament to declare without delay whether they will do our work or not."



Major Tulida.

That if any thinge bee spoken, to say itt is out of zeale, that wee should abound in our sence — I humbly desire there may bee libertie to speake, and that a providence may carry thinges, and nott that way.

Col. Rich.

There has bin a longe debate. There are only two thinges in Question: whether the paper and 5 particulars should goe as they are, or that this paper should bee first insisted uppon? and then whether this paper should bee presented to the Commissioners [of the Parliament] heere as from the Councill [of the Army] or from the Commissioners [of the Army]? Itt is well that itt should goe as from this Councill. The second is for the march to London. As for our marching to London the Lieut. Generall putts itt uppon this issue; whether wee shall march now or stay 4 dayes? To decide itt with a Question whether wee shall march to London, or noe.

Lieut. Chillenden.

That that proposall which my Lieutenant Generall propos'd to your Excellency concerning the proposall of this, for my parte to mee itt gives great satisfaction in my spiritt for to see itt, and I hope there will bee the like uppon my parte. And alsoe for the other concerning the prisoners, itt lies soe weighty uppon my spiritt, and truly I hope your Excellency and this Councill of Warre are those [that will insist upon it] . . . . [But] that att this juncture of time the Judges are going the Circuites I should nott trouble your Excellency and this Councill of Warre concerning itt. That that paper may goe concluding all thinges in itt.

Commissary Gen.

That hee would have the 5 particulars in itt goe, butt nott the



paper [itself], for [in] that itt is propos'd the Army should march towards or to London. If wee have friends in the Parliament or Citty that wish well to the Army or Kingdome, I could nott butt expect to loose them by itt, if they should butt see such a spiritt in this Army that they putt [force uppon] them . . . . . uppon such thinges [to] which some of them were never oppos'd.

Another expression, 'that they should nott only bee sequestred butt disabled.' I confesse I doe nott understand the justice of that ground, and I pray God this Army may avoide itt.<sup>a</sup>

Att a Generall Councill of Warre att Reading. July 17,  
1647.

Commissary Ireton.

That those papers<sup>b</sup> doe nott concerne the Army in particular butt the whole Kingdome in generall.

Lieut. Gen.

That all prejudices might bee removed.

Cofm. Ireton.

There could bee butt 2 wayes: either by Treatie, or else to have such an intire proposall of particulars prepared, as might neede the lesse delay in way of Treatie. The Commissioners are those that your Excellency was pleased to appoint. Itt was offer'd to us by the Commissioners of the Parliament parte, whether wee would draw out particulars, or [make] an intire proposall of all together? Though there was noe publique proposall [ready], yett wee did satisfie our selves how longe and teadious itt would have

<sup>a</sup> Referring to the case of the eleven impeached members.

<sup>b</sup> The papers in question are the heads of the Army's proposals.





bin to draw out particulars by way of debate by the Commissioners there; and therefore truly I was, with the consent of your Excellency and the rest of the Commissioners, sequestred from that employment of the Treatie to make some preparation of particulars fitt to tender to your Excellency and the Army as were declared in itt.<sup>a</sup> That if any body could thinke of any other particulars that concern'd the Kingdome every man was as free to doe as my selfe or any other, and would have bin as well accepted; and for my owne parte I should have bin glad that any other would have sett himselfe on worke as I did.

One thinge, the Parliament have sent propositions to the Kinge; wee have nott had any from them.

*The propositions read.<sup>b</sup>*

Lieut. Gen.

Butt you would nott have a Parliament dissolved without the consent of the Houses in 120 dayes?

Col. Lambert.

[They may sit] longer then that, that except the Councill of State, and the Kinge shall thinke fitt; if you involve themselves in itt if they may sitt without the consent of both Houses.

Lieut. Gen.

They may bee adjourn'd if the King and Councill of State thinke fitt; itt may bee as convenient to have a Parliament continued as to [have it] out itself whether it will or noe.

<sup>a</sup> The last words seem to belong to the next sentence. "That as was declared in the vote appointing me, if anybody, etc."

<sup>b</sup> The propositions are printed in Rushworth, vii., 731. *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 212; Gardiner, *Constitutional Documents*, p. 232. The present discussion is on the second clause of the first head. Parliament might sit 240 days at the outside, and must sit at least 120 days.



If itt does nott conclude itt publique, as that itt bee heare read or noe. If there bee any thing afterwards that shall bee desired to bee offer'd for any addition the Councill of Warre will meete, and the Agitators [may] send soe many as they shall select to gett any alteration ; butt itt would nott bee read heere butt that itt bee passed by with silence.

Com. Ireton.

For either the passing those particulars heere read or such a particular as you last offer'd without a further weighing or consideration itt might bee inconvenient ; and therefore I shall desire, that though there is noe man that findes anythinge of exception against any parte of the thinge that is read, yett that it may be referred to a less number that may weigh or consider all things.\*

[These particulars are offered] nott for a present conclusion butt consideration ; for I cannott say the thinges have bin soe consider'd as to satisfie my self in them.

Mr. Allen.

I shall only offer one worde. I thinke that the thinges in hand bee names are things of great weight, having relation to the setling of a Kingdome, which is a great worke ; truly the worke wee all expect to have a share in, and desire that others may alsoe. I suppose itt is nott unknowne to you that wee are most of us butt young Statesmen, and nott well able to judge how longe such thinges which wee heare now read to us may bee to the ends for which they are presented ; and for us out of judgment to give our assents to itt must take uppe some time that wee may deliberate uppon itt ; and therefore I shall desire that wee may nott only name them [*i.e.* a committee] now, butt spend some time [in debate], when wee heare thinges unsatisfactory to the ends for which they are proposed.

\* Clause transposed.



Coñ. Ireton.

If that debate or consideration that is intended or desired [be that] that is most requir'd in such a Councill as this, I thinke itt cannott bee with soe much conveniencie butt when all men have heard [them] read, and had time to weigh them in their thoughts. I think that when we are never so well satisfied in the matter, such a select number are requisite for the perfecting of them in order and forme, soe as they may bee tendred for the service of the Kingdome.

Itt is proposed heere in order to a Councill of State, that there should bee a Councill of State to have the cheif command, both to have the command of the standing forces and of the Militia by sea or the Navy. Butt this Councill of State which commands them all to have noe dependancy of any of them by way of appointing officers. For the standing Militia of the Kingdome the [county] Committee[s are] to have power to name officers over them. Likewise for the Navy. The Councill of State [is to] have power to command the Navy, butt there are particular Commissioners to bee appointed for the *ordering* and regulating of itt, and appointing officers for the severall parts of the Navy.<sup>a</sup>

[*News-letter from head-quarters.*]

Reading, 17<sup>th</sup> July, 1647.<sup>b</sup>

Yesterday there was a great Councill of Warre call'd, it held till 12 a clock at night, consisted of above 100 Officers, besides Agitators, who now in prudence we admitt to debate; and it is not more than necessary they should be, considering the influence they have upon the souldiers, and the officer we hope hath such interest in

<sup>a</sup> At this point the report of the debate ends abruptly. The particular parts of the Army proposals referred to in Ireton's last remarks are—Head III., clauses 1—6.

<sup>b</sup> This letter is probably by John Rushworth. At least it very much resembles those from him to Lord Fairfax, dated July 13 and July 20. *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii., 367-371.



them, as if any of more fierce disposition amongst them moderate not their reason, the officers can command it; and I assure you, it is the singularest part of wisdom in the General and the officers so to carry themselves considering the present temper of the Army, so as to be unanimous in Councils, including the new persons into their number. It keeps a good accord, and obtains ready obedience, for to this hour never any troop or company yet mutiny'd, and if a man consider the alterations of officers that are now admitted, and interests of officers that are gone, it is the greatest wonder, that there is that unanimity still. It is the hand of God that doth it, I hope for a good end. It is not proper to relate particular debates yesterday, yet accept of a word in general, and think it not strange, if it should be advised to march nearer to London, as an expedient to obtain satisfaction in those particulars, which have been long desired by the Army of the Parliament, as in particular declaring against forreign forces coming in, the putting reformado's out of the line, and suspending the 11 Members, but more especially to desire the Parliament to putt the Militia of the Cittie of London into the same hands it was before, without which we can not hold our selves secure in proceeding to treat, but that those persons being still in power who granted commissions to Dalbeere and such kind of soldiers of fortune may upon any encouragement from the designing parte be apt to doe the like again. Tho' this was much prest with reasons and earnestness by the Agitators, yet the Generall and the Officers after many hours debate so satisfied them with arguments and reasons to the contrary, that they submitted it to the Generall and Officers, no man gainsaying it; and so it is resolved to send to the Parliament to desire these particulars, especially the Militia, and receive a positive answer within 4 days. These thinges being granted, the Treaty, all things being prepared to be debated on, will proceed; but till the Parliament be thoroughly purged, which is in a way, and the city Militia altered as aforesaid, we expect nothing but delays upon results of the Treaty, when ever they send them. And be assured you will find by those propositions that





came from the Army, they take care for the Parliament and the interest of their party in a sufficient manner, and yet in order to the speedy settlement of the Peace of the Kingdome, make it their humble desires for some way of mediation for the King and his party, but so as not to prejudice the subjects liberty. Monarchy may be so settled, but not to be hurtfull as formerly. The King's party do flock from London hither, not to be entertained in the Army, for I assure you there is not a man of that party suffered to be listed, but they come to see the King, and that civility is connived at, but that party not comply'd with. When the Army was in their greatest glory, and the enemy under their foot, yet we were ever humane and Christian to them, and now being so near a reconciliation, we should not shew any aversion or indisposition. Besides it does begett more confidence in the King than before that we are those that mean to make good our selves, and I hope he is so assured of it as he will not much stop at what shall be propounded for the peace of the Kingdom. It is now our resolution to follow the bussiness day and night, till there be a speedy end putt to this great affair of finishing a peace so much expected by the Kingdom; and indeed it must not be delay'd, for else the odium will lye as much upon the army as it hath of late upon others. Quartering is burthesome to the country and the more where the soldiers are uncivill and rude, which in so great an army doth sometimes happen, especially where we have but one months pay in 18 weeks, and how we shall do to order things well without money will go hard with us, the 200,000<sup>l</sup> being all expended, no man knows how.

*[Order appointing certain Officers to perfect the proposals  
of the Army.]*

I do appoint Commissary Generall Ireton, Collonel Fleetwood, Collonel Rich, Collonel Harrison, Collonel Horton, and Major Disborow of the Horse Officers, and Collonel Rainborow, Collonel



Hammond, Sir Hardress Waller, Collonel Lambert, Lieutenant Collonel Cowell, and Adjutant General Deane of the Foot Officers to meet, consult, and proceed with the 12 Agitators according to the appointment made at the General Councill of Warr yesterday, for the perfecting of the proposals then read, in order to the settling of the Liberties and Peace of the Kingdom; and to adjourn from time to time, and place to place, till the same be perfected, and Lieutenant Generall Cromwell to be present with the said Councill when he can. Given under my hand and seal at Reading the 18th day of July, 1647.

T. FAIRFAX.

[*Order for appointing a Committee of Officers.*]

I do appoint Lieutenant Generall Hammond, Collonel Thomlinson, Collonel Scroop, Collonel Pride, Lieutenant Collonel Goffe, and Lieutenant Collonel Read to attend dayly at my Quarters to advise upon all emergencys of the affairs of the Army. Given under my hand and seal at Reading the 18th of July 1647.

T. FAIRFAX.

[*Letter from London, July, 26.*]

Sir,

Since the writeing of my former Letter, attending neere Westminster and some scouts abroad, wee are informed the Comon Councill (all pure Malignants) are gone back from Westminster without any answere, leaving the managment of their bussinesse to the Apprentice Petitioners, and they have soe well followed it that the House of Peeres past a vote<sup>a</sup> to recall the Declaration against them and to crosse it out of the Journall Booke; and that the more Creditt might be given to it, caused one of their Clerkes to read the order of their house publicly in the Painted Chamber, the Clerke

<sup>a</sup> July 26. *Lords' Journals*, ix. 355; Whitelock, *Memorials*, ii. 182, ed. 1853.



standing upon the Table whilst he read it. Upon this they left the Lords house and fell more close then before to the Commons house, the Lords in the meane time quietly riseing 5 at night. The Comons still are close prisoners, and a private message being sent to the Collonell Campfeild<sup>a</sup> to assist the Guard at the Commons House, that the Members might have libertie to goe out, his Lieutenant in the Collonell's absence keeping the Guard at the Pallace, returned a slight answere, that the carriage of the Apprentices was more warrantable then the House's. I cannott forgett to tell you that just now Scout Master Generall Watson<sup>b</sup> was seized on by the Apprentices and some Reformadoes, and is in the charge of Captaine White and his Company; 'tis said the cause of his Committment was for that upon discourse he told some of the Petitioners, that if they held this course they would bring upon them the Plundering of the Citty. There is a pretty storie of one of them who said he had been one of your Army, and in that time hee was much against the Common Prayer Booke, and he had with his owne hands torne some of them, but that if it were to doe againe hee would rather have his hand cutt off. This was soe well taken that they prevailed with him to make this Recantation aloud in the head of the Hall at the King's bench, which he did accordingly standing aloft. As I am writeing theis Lynes downe comes the Shereiffes of London on Horseback to Westminster and many Halberteers with them to allay the tumult.<sup>c</sup>

[*Speaker Lenthall to Sir Thomas Fairfax.*]

May it please your Excellence

Sir Arthur Haslerigg can informe you of my condition. I found the many inconveniencies I was like to have falne into, not in

<sup>a</sup> One of the London Militia Committee. Rushworth, vi. 472.

<sup>b</sup> Leonard Watson, see *Fairfax Correspondence*, iii., 381.

<sup>c</sup> Unsigned and undated, probably written by Gilbert Mabbot, certainly July 26.



respect of my selfe, but in regard of the Kingdome's Co . . of your Army. I am assured it will be strange to your Excellencie to heare of my being at Windsor where I intend to stay untill I find the Parliament in a better condition, if in case it be my fortune to sitt any more. I pray God blesse your Excellencie and all the rest there, that you may be, under God, the Saviour of the Parliament and people's libertie, which I wish may be perfected by your selfe, which hath always been soe wished by

Your Excellencies humble servant.

WM. LENTHALL.

[July 29 ?.]<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> This letter was obviously written between July 26 and August 4, 1647. On the former day the House of Commons adjourned till July 30, and on July 30 it was informed that Lenthall had left London on the morning of the 29th. The engagement of Lenthall, Manchester, and other members of Parliament to live and die with the army was dated August 4. According to Holles this was done "upon pretence of a force and violence that had been offered to the Parliament, but in truth, by a conspiracy with the Army, designed and laid principally by Mr. St. John, the solicitor; as appears by a letter sent from Rushworth (Sir Thomas Fairfax's Secretary) to the Speaker, with no name on it, but the latter part of it written with his own hand, advising him not to appear at the House on Friday morning, but to take counsel of Mr. Solicitor, who would tell him what was fit to be done, assuring him that the Army would all lie in the dirt, or protect them who were their friends. This, as I remember, was the purport of the letter yet remaining in one of the Houses: which no doubt came from Sir Thomas Fairfax, and Mr. Cromwell and the rest of those governors," etc. (Holles, *Memoirs*, § 144). Ludlow says "we resolved to betake ourselves to the Army for protection, Sir Arthur Haselrig undertaking to persuade the Speaker to go thither, to which he consented with some difficulty" (*Memoirs*, i., 207). Lenthall's reasons are given in his own declaration, printed at the time at Oxford and London, and reprinted in the *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 196. He complains of the violence offered to the Parliament and himself on Monday, June 26, and that there has been no effectual course taken to prevent the like for the future. "But on the contrary, it is generally voiced in the town, that there will be a far greater confluence of apprentices, reformadoes, and others on Friday at the Parliament doors; and particularly notice was given to me that after they had made the House vote what they pleased they would destroy me." See also Walker's *History of Independency*, ed. 1661, pt. i., p. 41.







[*News-letter from the Army.*]

Thistleworth, 5 August, 1647.

After a longe threatned storme to engage us in a new and bloody warre by Reformadoes and Cittizens,<sup>a</sup> God hath soe blest our indeavours in the preventing soe wicked a designe as to bringe the wicked designers and contrivers uppon their knees, and the great ones are fled. The Citty this day delivers uppe to us the forts which were to be possesst by our armes. The forts in Southwarke were yesterday deliver'd uppe to Col. Rainborow. The Army marches in to guard the Earle of Manchester and Mr. Lenthall, Speakers of both Houses, and the Earle of Northumberland and some 14 Lords more of the House of Peeres, and all those of the House of Commons who were enforc't to flic by reason of the tumults, and to guard them uppe to the Parliament to see their Speakers sett in the chaire and the Parliament sett free; which was the acclamation of all the souldiers, horse and foote, uppon Tuesday att the Randezvous on Hounsloe Heath,<sup>b</sup> when the Generall, Lords, and Commons rode through the army, being a mile and a half in length putt in Battalia, every man cried out, "Lords and Commons and a free Parliament," expressing their willingnesse and Resolution to lay downe their lives butt to sett the Parliament free. Wee have demanded of the Citty the delivery uppe of the 11 members, whose

<sup>a</sup> A news-letter amongst the Clarke Papers gives the following note on the designs in the city. "The Militia of the Citty have given forth double commissions to the same officers, the one in parchment very moderate, the other in paper very high and furious, to force, kill, slay, and destroy, etc. On Friday night last my Lord Mayor came from the Common Council into the Militia then sitting, and said, "how now gentlemen, be of good courage, I will be your Captain and stand by you," or words to that effect . . . . Presently Ryley, the City scoutmaster came in and spoke encouraging words to the same purpose, and told them that he had received good intelligences that 30,000 Scots were upon their march for their assistance, that Morgan was their friend and was gone down to raise forces, and that he doubted not but that shortly considerable strength would be upon the back of the Army."

<sup>b</sup> Rushworth, viii., 750.



actions have now made good the charge against them of indeavouring to raise a new warre, butt wee heare they are all fled. Wee have sent to all the ports in Kent and Sussex to seize upon them, if they come that way. There is Major Generall Poyntz,<sup>a</sup> Col. Wiltshire, and divers other Reformadoes and others are likewise demanded; Poyntz gott away yesterday. Such is the suddaine turne of affaires in the Citty that they who before threatned nothing butt ruine to the army and to the Kingdome, by putting the sworde into bloody minded mens hands and ungodly wretches, doe now begin to repent, nay are ashamed to show their heads, or to owne the least action, and have recalled their Declaration in the Common Counsell against the Army. Happy is that Commander that laid downe his commission butt two dayes since, hoping itt will save his stake, as Col. Campfeild and others. When the Parliament sitts this day, I suppose you will heare what great ones in the Citty they will demande, beginning with my Lord Mayor, Alderman Bunce &c., butt that's more proper for the Parliament who received the affront of the Citty to take cognizance of then for the Army, otherwise itt had nott bin omitted in the demands yesterday. In breif wee may have what wee will desire, soe hath God humbled them and brought them downe, and be assured the crushing of this horrid designe in the egge will have [no] little influence upon any parte of the Kingdome where itt was intended to have had a correspondence. The first worke will bee now to bringe to justice offenders, and to settle the Militia of the Citty in such hands as our friends may for the future remaine secure, and then the army may back and apply ourselves for the relief of Ireland. Our Declarations and proposalls now in print will satisfie you more particularly of our proceedings. I hope when Charles D'oyley and those which are dissaffected to the army, heare how their freinds in London are fled, they will nott bee very apt to stirre in the Country; and if [you light upon] any of the impeached

<sup>a</sup> Rushworth, viii., 741, 765, 774



Members or Reformadoes that you can learne have had an hand in the tumults against the Parliament or the killing the Cittizens att Guildhall, that you [will] make stay of them. Our freinds in London all yesterday went about to gett the well-affected apprentices together to seize uppon as many of the most active Reformadoes as they could light uppon; an example of these and some Cittizens must bee made in time. Wee shall speedily soe disperse our horse into the Westernne parts as that there will bee noe neede for the well affected in the Country any longer to continue together.

[*The Earl of Warwick to Sir T. Fairfax.*]

I received your Excellencie's letter, dated the 2d of this instant, this day, wherein you expresse the great sence you have of the indignity offer'd to the Parliament on Monday sennight last, which must needs oblige us the members of that body for your great care of the safety, and honour of the houses; and lett these assure you for my particuler I shall ever bee ready to contribute all assistance I may to the vindication of their privileges and honour of the House. The metinge [of] Listenants held not by reason of a miscaridge of my letter sent to somon them, which I did by the Clerke of the peace of the County, and he being from home my letter came not to his hand till the same daye; so as very few mett, and those I beleve have given your Excellencie an account of their metting. I myselfe, being on my journey towards you, was stayed on the way towards London by some of my Deputy Listenants that duell in the Citty, who informed mee of some malignants and souldiers that were come downe into our Contrey and they feared might breed some disturbance in their parts neare Loundon, and desired my presence in the Country for a few dayes, that, if need had bin, I might have bin in some posture to have resisted those that would have disturbed the peace of this County. Sir, I doubt not but as this County hath allwaies been most



forward to serve the Parliament in their best assistances, so they will be most ready to vindicate their honor whensoever their is occasion; and for my selfe I shalbe ever ready to pay that due respect to your merritt which you deserve by being instrumentall under God to protect the Parleiment, and for your favoures to me I shall remaine

Your Excellencies humble servant,

WARWICKE.<sup>a</sup>

Leez this 5 of August  
1647.

Putney, August 29  
1647.

Commission for the Generall's Committee of Officers.

To Lieutenant Generall Cromwell, Lieut. Generall Hamond, Commissary Generall Ireton, Colonell Rainborow, Colonell Fleetwood, Colonell Hamond, Colonell Sir Hardresse Waller, Colonell Rich, Commissary Generall Stane, Scout Master Generall Watson, Quartermaster Generall Ireton, and Adjutant Generall Deane.

I doe heerby appoint you or any three or more of you; whereof Lieutenant Generall Cromwell, Lieut. Generall Hammond, Com-

<sup>a</sup> Rushworth, quoting the "Perfect Diurnal," notes under Aug. 2, that "the Earl of Warwick and Earl of Manchester sent to the General intimating that they had quit the Houses as most of the members likewise had; for that there could be no free parliament as things went; and that their Lordships were retired unto Essex, and intended, as there should be occasion, to wait on the General, casting themselves upon his protection," Rushworth, viii. 742. Sir William Waller gives an account of the consultations of the Lords who thus joined the Army, and of the origin of the engagement of Aug. 4. *Vindication*, pp. 191-5. In addition to these preparations to assist the Army in Essex, the counties of Hertford and Kent also sent their trained bands to support it. (Rushworth, viii. 755, 772; *Tanner MSS.*, lviii. p. 435. *Draught of a Letter from the Speaker (Pelham) to the Commissioners of the County of Herts.*)







missary Generall Ireton, or Colonell Rainborow to bee one, to bee a Generall Committee to receive and take into consideration all Businesses which shall by mee bee referred or shall otherwise bee tendred unto you, that are of publike and common concernement to the Army or Kingedome, or any considerable partie therin, or to any Garrisons or Fortes of this Kingedome, or to the affaires of Ireland.

And of all such Businesses soe receiv'd to consider whether they bee fitt for my cognizance or to bee intermedled in by my self and the Army or noe ; and (if they be), then to consider of, and propose to mee, what you conceive may bee fitt to bee done uppon the same ; and what you have nott time soe to consider of your selves, you are to transmitt to some such particular Committee as is heer-after mentioned to bee by them considered of. And for that purpose you the said Generall Committee or any three or more of you (whereof Lieut. Generall Cromwell, Lieut. Generall Hamond, Commissary Generall Ireton, or Colonell Rainborow to bee one), are heerby enabled out of the Officers or Agitators that doe or shall attend the Head Quarter to appoint such particular and severall Committees for severall businesses, as there shall bee occasion; every such Committee to consist of three persons or more as the matter shall deserve, (whereof one to bee named of the Quorum), and to have power to consider of such Businesses as shall by you bee transmitted to them as before, and to resolve what they conceive may bee fitt to bee done thereuppon, an Account whereof they are from time to time to returne to you the said Generall Committee, to bee tendred and proposed unto mee with your approbacion, if you shall approve of the same.

And you are to appoint a Clarke to keepe Account of the respective businesse, soe receiv'd, or to bee receiv'd, and of the Resolutions or proposalls thereuppon. Given under my hand and seale att Putney the 30th day of August, 1647.

THOMAS FAIRFAX.



I doe appoynt Colonell Fleetwood, Sir Hardresse Waller and Colonell Rich to be of the Quorum in pursuance of the afforesaid Comission, this 3d September, 1647.

THOMAS FAIRFAX.<sup>a</sup>

[*Major Huntington to Sir T. Fairfax.*]

May itt please your Excellency,

Upon the deliverie of his Majesty's answer<sup>b</sup> to the propossitions of both kingdoms sent by Commissioners on Tewsday last, this afternoone, his Majestie layd his commands on mee to speed away this inclosed to yourselfe (which is the same delivered to the Commissioners in answer to the propossitions brought by them), with these words, that hee was engaged to bee soe civell to the Generall as to send his answer to the propossitions to him at the same tyme hee delivered them to the others, sayeing that in them he had put a great trust upon the army, not doubteing but that the Generall would stand by him in procureing a personall treaty with his two houses. This is all which is to be offered to the knowledg of your Excellencie by the meanest of

Your Excellencies servants

ROBT: HUNTINGTON.

Hampton Court, Sept. 9<sup>th</sup>, '47.

<sup>a</sup> The proceedings of this Committee from August 29 to November 11, 1647, are contained in vol. lxvi. of the Clarke MSS. at Worcester College. Questions concerning the movement of troops, military discipline, promotions, and the pay of the Army came under their jurisdiction. The cases of persons claiming the benefit of capitulations made with the Army were considered by them; see for instance the reports on the cases of Sir John Munson and Peter Scot under October 6, and October 22.

<sup>b</sup> Huntington states in his "Reasons for laying down his Commission," that the King's answer to the propositions was shown privately to both Cromwell and Ireton "in a garden-house at Putney, and in some part amended to their own minds." Berkeley says that Charles "followed the advice of all the leading part of the Independent Party both in the Parliament and the Army, by refusing the articles and desiring a personal treaty;" adding "we gave our friends in the Army a sight of this the day before it was sent, with which they seemed infinitely satisfied." (Masere's *Tracts*, i., 372, 403.)



Att the Generall Council of Officers att Putney. 28 October, 1647.

The Officers being mett, first said,

Lieutennant General Cromwell.<sup>a</sup>

That the Meeting was for publique] businesses. Those that had anything to say concerning the publique busnesse might have libertie to speake.

Mr. Edward Sexby.

Mr. Allen, Mr. Lockyer, and my self are three.

They have sent two Souldiers, one of your owne Regiment and one of Col. Whalley's, with two other Gentlemen, Mr. Wildman and Mr. Petty.

Commissary General Ireton.

That hee had nott the paper of what was done uppon all of them.

Itt was referr'd to the Committee, that they should consider of the paper that was printed, "The Case of the Army Stated," and to examine the particulars in itt, and to represent and offer somethinge to this Council about itt.<sup>b</sup> They were likewise appointed

<sup>a</sup> Fairfax was not present, "being not well, and at Turnham Green" (Rushworth, viii. 857).

<sup>b</sup> "The case of the Army truly stated, together with the mischiefs and dangers that are imminent, and some suitable remedies, and humbly proposed by the Agents of five Regiments of Horse, to the respective Regiments and the whole Army." This paper (filling twenty pages of a quarto pamphlet) is dated Guildford, October 9, 1647, and signed by agents representing the regiments of Cromwell, Ireton, Fleetwood, Rich and Whalley. It is accompanied by a letter from the agent to Fairfax, dated October 15, and was presented to the General on October 18. It is stated on the last page that "Upon the presentation to, and serious perusal thereof by his Excellency, the sum of his answer was to this effect. That he judged their intentions were honest, and desired that everyone of publique spirit would be acting for the publique, and that for his part he had freely ventured his life for common right and freedom, and should freely engage it againe, adding further that he



to send for those persons concern'd in the paper. The Committee mett according to appointment that night. Itt was only then Resolv'd on, That there should bee some sent in a freindlie way (nott by command, or summons) to invite some of those Gentlemen to come in with us, I thinke.

Mr. Sexby.

I was desired by the Lieutennant Generall to [let him] know the bottome of their desires. They gave us this answer, that they would willinglie draw them uppe, and represent them unto you. They are come att this time to tender them to your considerations with their resolutions to maintaine them.

Wee have bin by providence putt upon strange thinges, such as the ancientist heere doth scarce remember. The Army acting to these ends, providence hath bin with us, and yett wee have found little [fruit] of our indeavours; and really I thinke all heere both great and small (both Officers and Souldiers), wee may say wee have lean'd on, and gone to Egypt for helpe. The Kingdomes cause requires expedition, and truely our miseries with [those of] our fellow souldiers' cry out for present helpe. I thinke, att this time, this is your businesse, and I thinke itt is in all your hearts to releive the one and satisfie the other. You resolv'd if any thinge [reasonable] should bee propounded to you, you would joyne and goe alonge with us.

The cause of our misery [is] uppon two thinges. We sought to satisfie all men, and itt was well; butt in going [about] to doe itt wee have dissatisfied all men. Wee have labour'd to please a Kinge, and I thinke, except wee goe about to cutt all our thrcates,

thought it meet it should be presented to the Generall Councell." See also Rushworth, viii., 845, 849, 850, 857. In the meeting of the General Council of the Army on October 22 the paper was discussed, and a committee appointed to meet the next day, to consider the case of the Army and present their conclusions to the next General Council on October 28. In the meantime the agitators put forth a new paper vindicating themselves from the charge of dividing the Army. (Rushworth, viii., 845, 849, 850, 856, 857; Godwin, *Commonwealth*, ii. 445-451).







wee shall nott please him ; and wee have gone to support an house which will prove rotten studds,<sup>a</sup> I meane the Parliament which consists of a Company of rotten Members.

And therefore wee beseech you that you will take these thinges into your consideration.

I shall speake to the Lieut. Generall and Commissary Generall concerning one thinge. Your creditts and reputation hath bin much blasted uppon these two considerations. The one is for seeking to settle this Kingdome in such a way wherein wee thought to have satisfied all men, and wee have dissatisfied them—I meane in relation to the Kinge—The other is in reference to a Parliamentarie authoritie (which most heere would loose their lives for), to see<sup>b</sup> those powers to which wee will subject our selves loyally called. These two things are as I thinke conscientiously the cause of all those blemishes that have bin cast uppon either the one or the other. You are convinc't God will have you to act on, butt [ask] onelie to consider how you shall act, and [take] those [ways] that will secure you and the whole Kingdome. I desire you will consider those thinges that shall bee offer'd to you ; and, if you see any thinge of reason, you will joyne with us that the Kingdome may bee eas'd, and our fellow souldiers may bee quieted in spirit. These thinges I have represented as my thoughts. I desire your pardon.

<sup>a</sup> "Studds," *i.e.* the upright in a lath and plaster wall. Halliwell quotes the following passage from Harrison's *England*. "Our houses are commonly strong and well timbered, so as in many places there are not above four, six, or nine inches between stud and stud."

Major Francis White had used a similar metaphor in describing the intended agreement with the King. "Being at the convention, I spoke some words which gave distrust, that they were repairing an old house, and that when they were laying the top stone it would fall about their ears."

The Copy of a Letter sent to his Excellency Sir T. Fairfax, by Francis White, Nov. 1647. British Museum, E. 413, 17.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "bee."



Lieut. Generall.

I thinke itt is good for us to proceede to our businesse in some order, and that will bee if wee consider some things that are latelie past. There hath bin a booke printed, called, "The Case of the Armie Stated," and that hath bin taken into consideration, and there hath bin somewhat drawne uppe by way of exception to thinges contain'd in that booke; and I suppose there was an Answer brought to that which was taken by way of exception, and yesterday the Gentleman that brought the Answer hee was dealt honestly and plainly withall, and hee was told, that there were new designes a driving, and nothing would bee a clearer discovery of the sincerity of [their] intentions, as their willingnesse that were active to bringe what they had to say to bee judg'd of by the Generall Officers, and by this Generall Councill, that wee might discern what the intentions were. Now itt seemes there bee divers that are come hither to manifest those intentions according to what was offer'd yesterday, and truly I thinke, that the best way of our proceeding will bee to receive what they have to offer. Onely this, Mr. Sexby, you were speaking to us two. [I do not know why you named us two,] except you thinke that wee have done somewhat or acted somewhat different from the sence and resolution of the Generall Councill. Truly, that that you speake to, was the thinges that related to the Kinge and thinges that related to the Parliament; and if there bee a fault I may say itt, and I dare say, itt hath bin the fault of the Generall Councill, and that which you doe speake both in relation to the one and the other, you speake to the Generall Councill I hope, though you nam'd us two, Therefore truly I thinke itt sufficient for us to say, and 'tis that wee say—I can speake for my selfe, lett others speake for them selves—I dare maintaine itt, and I dare avowe I have acted nothing butt what I have done with the publique consent, and approbation and allowance of the Generall Councill. That I dare say for my self, both in relation to the one, and to the other. What I have acted in Parliament in the name of the Councill or of the Army I have



had my warrant for from hence. What I have spoken in another capacitie, as a Member of the House, that was free for mee to doe ; and I am confident, that I have nott used the name of the Army, or interest of the Army to anythinge butt what I have had allowance from the Generall Councill for, and [what they] thought itt fitt to move the House in. I doe the rather give you this account, because I heare there are some slanderous reports going uppe and downe uppon somewhat that hath bin offer'd to the House of Commons [by me], as being the sence and opinion of this Armie, and in the name of this Army, which, I dare bee confident to speake itt, hath bin as false and slanderous a report as could bee raised of a man. And that was this ; That I should say to the Parliament and deliver itt as the desire of this Armie, and the sence of this Armie, that there should bee a second addresse to the Kinge by way of propositions. I dare bee confident to speake itt, what I deliver'd there I deliver'd as my owne sence, and what I deliver'd as my owne sence I am nott ashamed of. What I deliver'd as your sence, I never deliver'd butt what I had as your sence.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> This must refer to the debate of September 23, 1647, on which day the House of Commons resolved "that the House will once again make application to the King, for those things which the Houses shall judge necessary for the welfare and safety of the Kingdom." (*Commons' Journals*, v. 314.) Cromwell and Rainborough were both present on September 22, when the question of "the whole matter concerning the King was discussed in a Committee of the whole House, and they told against each other on the proposal to resolve the House into a Committee for that purpose. (*Ib.* v. 312.) September 23 was a Thursday, on which day the general council of the Army usually met, which explains the absence of Cromwell and Rainborough. Of Cromwell's speeches in this debate news-letters give the only record. One of September 27 (*Clarendon MS.* 2602) says "The last week his Majesty's answers to the propositions being considered of in the House was voted to be a denial, and that the King's drift therein was to put a difference between the Parliament and the Army, and between the English and Scottish nation ; whereupon a sharp debate grew whether the King should be sent unto any more, or whether they should forthwith proceed to the settlement of the kingdom ; to the latter most of the orators inclined, and in likelihood would have led the house that way, but that it was opposed by Cromwell and Ireton, who said it was no fit time to proceed with such vigour, the King having gotten so great a reputation in the Army, and therefore advised them to proceed in



Col. Rainborow.

For this the Lieutenant Generall was pleas'd to speake of last, a way towards the satisfaction of the kingdom and army; and so they went to review the propositions, having first voted that they should be carried to the King as ordinances, not as propositions. There have been in the prosecution of this business some desperate motions; as, that the King, in regard that many who give him ill counsel and are professed enemies to the Parliament resort unto him, should be restrained; that they should think no more of the King, but proceed as if there were no such thing in the world; for that he is always an impediment to all good resolutions; some calling him Ahab, others Coloquintida. But all those speeches have been stopped by Cromwell and Ireton, whose civilities are visible, but the reality of their intentions not clearly discerned."

Sir Edward Ford writes on 28 September: "It was moved earnestly in the House that the malignants might be removed from Court, and also that the King might be removed further off from the headquarters because of the confluence of people to him. . . . might beget an ill influence and danger in the Army, but it was opposed by Cromwell and Ireton; of late they have spoken much in the King's behalf, seconded by young Harry Vane, Mr. Solicitor, and Mr. Fienes. Cromwell, applying himself to the Speaker, told him that it was worth his consideration, how that there was a party in the army labouring for the King, and a great one; how the City was endeavouring underhand to get another party in the Army; and that there was a third party who was little dreamt of, that were endeavouring to have no other power to rule but the sword." (*Clarendon MS.*, 2694.) A news-letter addressed to Sir Richard Leveson, September 27, 1647, adds: "There has been snapping lately in the House between some of the root-and-branch men and the officers of the Army that are members. Ireton, moving the Army's proposals might be considered there, and sent to the King, gave occasion to one Scot (an insolent fellow and enemy to the proposals, as all of that spirit are) to let the House know there had been underhand treaties between the officers of the Army and the King, to which end Ashburnham and Sir John Berkeley were continually at the headquarters, agents for the King, which he desired might be examined; to which Cromwell by way of reply took occasion to vindicate his own innocency and to declare his readiness to obey the Parliament's commands, but if the House should think fit to examine that business, he desired it might be examined withal, which members of the House had been at head-quarters likewise, endeavouring to debauch the Army and seduce them from their principles" (*Fifth Report of Hist. MSS. Comm.* p. 173; cf. p. 179.) Scot was arrested by Fairfax on November 15, 1647, for inciting the soldiers to mutiny at the rendezvous at Corkbush-field, near Ware, for which he was suspended from sitting in the House of Commons. (Rushworth, viii. 875; *Commons' Journals*, v. 362.) He was member for Aldborough in Yorkshire, and should be distinguished from Thomas Scot, the regicide, member for Aylesbury. Scot, the leveller, died in January, 1648. (*Cal. Clarendon Papers*, i. 408.) It is probable that he was a royalist agent. (*Clarendon MS.* 2534.)







itt was moved, that day the propositions were brought in. That itt was carried for making a second addresse to the Kinge, itt was when both the Lieutenant Generall and my selfe were last heere, and where wee broke off heere, and when wee came uppon the Bill itt was told us, That the House had carried itt for a second addresse; and therfore the Lieutenant Generall must needes bee cleare of itt. Butt itt was urged in the House that itt was the sence of the Army that itt should bee soe.

Cofm. Gen. Ireton.

I desire nott to speake of these thinges, butt onely to putt thinges into an orderly way, which would lead to what the occasion is that hath brought these Gentlemen hither that are now call'd in; yett I cannott butt speake a worde to that that was last touch't uppon.

If I had told any man soe (which I know I did nott) if I did, I did tell him what I thought; and if I thought otherwise of the Army, I protest I should have bin ashamed of the Armie and detested itt; that is, if I had thought the Army had bin of that minde, they would lett those propositions sent from both Kingdomes bee the thinges which should bee [final] whether peace or noe, without any farther offers; and when I doe finde itt, I shall bee asham'd on't, and detest any dayes condescention with itt. And yett for that which Mr. Sexby tells us hath bin one of the great businesses [cast] uppon the Lieutenant Generall and my self, I doe detest and defie the thought of that thinge, of any indeavour, or designe, or purpose, or desire to sett uppe the Kinge; and I thinke I have demonstrated, and I hope I shall doe still, [that] itt is the interest of the Kingdome that I have suffer'd for. As for the Parliament too, I thinke those that know the beginniges of these principles, that wee [set forth] in our Declarations of late for clearing and vindicating the Liberties of the people, even in relation to Parliament will have reason [to acquit me]. And whoever doe know how wee were led to the declaring of that point



as wee have, as [a fundamental] one, will bee able to acquitt mee that I have bin farre from a designe of setting uppe the persons of these men, or of any men whatsoever to bee our Law Makers. Soe likewise for the Kinge; though I am cleare, as from the other, from setting uppe the person of one or other, yett I shall declare itt againe; I doe nott seeke, or would nott seeke, nor will joyne with them that doe seeke the destruction either of Parliament or Kinge. Neither will I consent with those or concurre with them who will nott attempt all the wayes that are possible to preserve both, and to make good use, and the best use that can bee of both for the Kingedome; and I did nott heare any thinge from that Gentleman (Mr. Sexby) that could induce or incline mee to that resolution. To that point I stand cleare as I have exprest. Butt I shall nott speake any more concerning myself.

The Committee<sup>a</sup> mett att my lodgings assoone as they parted from hence; and the first thinge they resolved on hearing there was a meeting of the Agitators [was, that] though itt was thought fitt by the Generall Councill heere they should bee sent for to the Regiment[s], yett itt was thought fitt to lett them know what the Generall Councill had done, and to goe on in a way that might tend to unitie; and [this] being resolved on wee were desired by one of those Gentlemen that were desired to goe, that least they should mistake the matter they went about, itt might bee drawne in writing, and this is itt:

That the Generall Councill, etc. [*blank*].

This is the substance of what was deliver'd. Mr. Allen, Mr. Lockyer, and Mr. Sexby were sent with itt, and I thinke itt is fitt that the Councill should bee acquainted with the Answer.

Mr. Allen.

As to the Answer itt was short (truly I shall give itt as shorte).

<sup>a</sup> A brief account of the proceedings of the Committee is given in Rushworth; viii., 849, 850.



Wee gave them the paper, and read itt amongst them, and to my best remembrance they then told us, that they were nott all come together whome itt did concerne, and soe were nott in a capacitie att the present to returne us an Answer; butt that they would take itt into consideration, and would send itt as speedily as might bee. I thinke itt was neare their Sence.

The Answer of the Agitators read.<sup>a</sup>

Com. Generall.

Wheras itt was appointed by the Councill and wee of the Committee did accordingly desire, that these Gentlemen, being Members of the Army and engaged with the Army, might have come to communicate with the Generall Councill of the Army and those that were appointed by them for a mutuall satisfaction: by this paper they seeme to bee of a fix't resolution, setting themselves to bee a divided partie or distinct Councill from the Generall Councill of the Army, and [seem to say] that there was nothing to bee done as single persons to declare their dissatisfaction, or the grounds for informing themselves better or us better, butt that they as all the rest should concurre soe as to hold together as a form'd and settled partie distinct and divided from others; and withall seem'd to sett downe these resolutions to [as things] which they expect the compliance of any others, rather then their compliance with others to give satisfaction. Butt itt seemes uppon some thinge that the Lieutenant Generall and some others of that Committee did thinke fitt [to offer] the Gentlemen that brought that paper have bin since induced to descend a little from the height, and to send some of them to come as agents particularlie, or Messengers from that Meeting or from that Councill, to heare what wee have to say to there, or to offer somethinge to us relating to the matters in that paper. I beleive there are Gentlemen<sup>b</sup> sent with them that though

<sup>a</sup> A portion of an answer of the agitators to the charge of attempting to divide the Army is given by Rushworth, viii., 857.

<sup>b</sup> Wildman and Petty.



perhaps the persons of them that are Members of the Army may nott give the passages in itt they may bee better able to observe them; and therefore if you please that they may proceede.

Buffe-Coate.

May itt please your Honour, to give you satisfaccion in that there was such a willingnesse that wee might have a conference, whereuppon I did engage that interest that was in mee that I would procure some to come hither both of the souldiers and of others for assistance; and in order thereunto heere are two souldiers sent from the Agents, and two of our freinds alsoe, and to present this to your considerations, and desire<sup>a</sup> your advice. [We believe that] according to my<sup>b</sup> expectations and your engagement you are resolved every one to purchase our inheritances which have bin lost, and free this Nation from the tyranny that lies uppon us. I question nott butt that itt is all your desires: and for that purpose wee desire to doe nothing butt what wee present to your consideration, and if you conceive itt that itt must bee for us to bee instruments, that wee might shelter our selves like wise men before the Storme comes. Wee desire that all carping uppon words might bee laid aside, and [that you may] fall directly uppon the matter presented to you.

Wee have heere met on purpose<sup>c</sup> according to my Engagement that whatsoever may bee thought to bee necessary for our satisfaction, for the right understanding one of another [may be done] that wee might goe on together. For, though our ends and aimes bee the same, if one thinks this way, another another way—butt that way which is the best for the subject [is] that they [both] may bee hearkned unto.

<sup>a</sup> MS. "desiring."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "your expectations and my engagements."

<sup>c</sup> MS., two lines below, gives "we have here men on purpose."





The Answer of the Agitators, the 2<sup>d</sup> time read.<sup>a</sup>

Buffecoate.

I thinke itt will bee strange that wee that are souldiers cannott have them [for] our selves, if nott for the whole Kingedome; and therefore wee beseech you consider of itt.

Lieut. Generall.

These things that you have now offered they are new to us; they are things that wee have nott att all (att least in this method and thus circumstantially) had any opportunity to consider of them, because they came to us butt thus as you see; this is the first time wee had a view of them.

Truly this paper does containe in itt very great alterations of the very Governement of the Kingedome, alterations from that Governement that itt hath bin under, I beleive I may almost say since itt was a Nation, I say I thinke I may almost say soe, and

<sup>a</sup> The answer of the agitators here mentioned is evidently the document known as "the Agreement of the People," as the contents of Cromwell's speech prove, and the reference made to it by name by Ireton on p. 244. It is printed in Rushworth, viii., §59. It demands, (1) Equal electoral districts. (2) The dissolution of the Long Parliament on September 30, 1648. (3) Biennial Parliaments to be elected every March and sit for five months. (4) The limitation of the powers of future parliaments so as to guarantee complete toleration; a full indemnity for acts done during the late public differences, and good and equal laws. In one point it attacks the privileges of the peerage, demanding "That in all laws made, or to be made, every person may be bound alike, and that tenure, estates, charter, degree, birth, or place, do not confer any exception from the ordinary course of legal proceedings, wherunto others are subjected." In conclusion it protests against the proposed treaty with the King. "These things we declare to be our native rights, and therefore are agreed and resolved to maintain them with our utmost possibilities, against all opposition whatsoever; being compelled threunto, not only by the examples of our ancestors, whose blood was often spent in vain for the recovery of their freedoms, suffering themselves, through fraudulent accommodations, to be still deluded of the fruit of their victory, but also by our own woful experience, who having long expected, and dearly earned the establishment of those certain rules of government, are yet made to depend for the settlement of our peace and freedom upon him that intended our bondage, and brought a cruel war upon us."



what the consequences of such an alteration as this would bee, if there were nothing else to be consider'd, wise men and godly men ought to consider. I say if there were nothing else [to be considered] butt the very weight and nature of the thinges contain'd in this paper. Therefore, although the pretensions in itt, and the expressions in itt are very plausible, and if wee could leape out of one condition into another, that had soe specious thinges in itt as this hath, I suppose there would nott bee much dispute, though perhaps some of these thinges may bee very well disputed—How doe wee know if whilst wee are disputing these thinges another companie of men shall gather together, and they shall putt out a paper as plausible perhaps as this? I doe nott know why itt might nott bee done by that time you have agreed upon this, or gott hands to itt, if that bee the way. And not onely another, and another, butt many of this kinde. And if soe, what doe you thinke the consequence of that would bee? Would itt nott bee confusion? Would itt nott bee utter confusion? Would itt nott make England like the Switzerland Country, one Canton of the Switz against another, and one County against another? I aske you whether itt bee nott fitt for every honest man seriouslie to lay that upon his heart? And if soe, what would that produce butt an absolute desolation—an absolute desolation to the Nation—and wee in the meane time tell the Nation, “It is for your Libertie, 'Tis for your priviledge,” “'Tis for your good.” Pray God itt prove soe whatsoever course wee run. Butt truly, I thinke wee are nott onely to consider what the consequences are (if there were nothing else butt this paper), butt wee are to consider the probability of the wayes and meanes to accomplish: that is to say [to consider] whether,<sup>a</sup> according to reason and judgement, the spiritts and temper of the people of this Nation are prepared to receive and to goe on alonge with itt, and [whether] those great difficulties [that] lie in our way [are] in a likelihood to bee either overcome or removed. Truly, to anythinge that's good, there's noe doubt on

<sup>a</sup> MS. “that.”



itt, objections may bee made and fram'd; butt lett every honest man consider, whether or noe there bee nott very reall objections [to this] in point of difficulty. I know a man may answer all difficulties with faith, and faith will answer all difficulties really where itt is, but<sup>a</sup> wee are very apt all of us to call that faith, that perhaps may bee butt carnall imagination, and carnall reasonings. Give mee leave to say this, There will bee very great mountaines in the way of this, if this were the thinge in present consideration; and therefore wee ought to consider the consequences, and God hath given us our reason that wee may doe this. Itt is nott enough to propose thinges that are good in the end, butt suppose this modell were an excellent modell, and fitt for England, and the Kingedome to receive, itt is our duty as Christians and men to consider consequences, and to consider the way.<sup>b</sup>

Butt really I shall speake to nothing butt that that, as before the Lord, I am perswaded in my heart tends to uniting of us in one to that that God will manifest to us to bee the thinge that hee would have us prosecute; and hee that meetes nott heere with that heart, and dares nott say hee will stand to that, I thinke hee is a deceivour. I say itt to you againe, and I professe unto you, I shall offer nothing to you butt that I thinke in my heart and conscience tends to the uniting of us, and to the begetting a right understanding amonge us, and therefore this is that I would insist uppon, and have itt clear'd amonge us.

Itt is nott enough for us to insist uppon good thinges; that every one would doe—there is nott 40 of us butt wee could prescribe many thinges exceeding plausible, and hardly anythinge worse then our present condition, take itt with all the troubles that are uppon us. Itt is nott enough for us to propose good thinges, butt itt behoves honest men and Christians that really will approve themselves soe before God and men, to see whether or noe they bee in a condition, [to attempt] whether, taking all thinges into consideration, they may honestly indeavour and attempt that that is fairly

<sup>a</sup> MS. "and."

<sup>b</sup> Clause transposed.



and plausibly proposed. For my owne parte I know nothing that wee are to consider first butt that, before wee would come to debate the evill or good of this [paper], or to adde to itt or substract from itt;<sup>a</sup> which I am confident, if your hearts bee upright as ours are—and God will bee judge betweene you and us—if wee should come to any thinge, you doe nott bringe this paper with peremptorinesse of minde, butt to receive amendements to have any thinge taken from itt that may bee made apparent by cleare reason to bee inconvenient or dishonest. This ought to bee our consideration and yours, saving [that] in this you have the advantage of us—you that are the souldiers you have nott—butt you that are nott [soldiers] you reckon your selves att a loose and att a liberty, as men that have noe obligation uppon you. Perhaps wee conceive wee have; and therefore this is that I may say—both to those that come with you, and to my fellow officers and all others that heare mee—that it concernes us as wee would approve our selves [as honest men] before God, and before men that are able to judge of us, if wee doe nott make good engagements, if wee doe nott make good that that the world expects wee should make good. I doe nott speake to determine what that is, butt if I bee nott much mistaken wee have in the time of our danger issued out Declarations; wee have bin requir'd by the Parliament, because our Declarations were generall, to declare particularly what wee meant; and having done that how farre that obliges or nott obliges [us] that is by us to bee consider'd, if wee meane honestly and sincerely and to approve our selves to God as honest men. And therefore having heard this paper read, this remaines to us; that wee againe review what wee have engaged in, and what wee have that lies uppon us. Hee that departs from that that is a reall engagement and a reall tie uppon him, I thinke hee transgresses without faith, for faith will beare uppe men in

<sup>a</sup> May be paraphrased, "which paper I am confident if your hearts be upright as ours you do not bring with peremptoriness of mind, etc." The words "if we should come to anything" seem to belong to the previous clause.







every honest obligation, and God does expect from men the performance of every honest obligation. Therefore I have noe more to say butt this; wee having received your paper shall amongst our selves consider what to doe; and before wee take this into consideration, itt is fitt for us to consider how farre wee are obliged, and how farre wee are free; and I hope wee shall prove our selves honest men where wee are free to tender any thinge to the good of the publike. And this is that I thought good to offer to you uppon this paper.

Mr. Wildman.

Being yesterday att a Meeting where divers Country-Gentlemen, and souldiers and others were, and amongst the rest the Agents of the five Regiments, and having weigh'd their papers, I must freely confesse I did declare my agreement with them. Uppon that they were pleas'd to declare their sence in most particulars of their proceedinges to mee, and desir'd mee that I would bee their mouth, and in their names to represent their sence unto you; and uppon that ground I shall speake something in answer to that which your Honour last spake.

I shall nott reply any thinge att present till itt come to bee further debated, either concerning the consequences of what is propounded, or [the contents] of this paper; butt I conceive the cheif weight of your Honour's speech lay in this, that you were first to consider what obligations lay uppon you, and how farre you were engaged, before you could consider what was just in this paper now propounded; adding, that God would protect men in keeping honest promises. To that I must only offer this, that according to the best knowledge [I have] of their apprehensions, they doe apprehend that what ever obligation is past must bee consider'd afterwards, when itt is urged whether itt were honest or just or noe; and if [the obligation<sup>a</sup>] were nott just itt doth nott oblige the persons, if itt bee an oath itt self. Butt if, while there

<sup>a</sup> MS. "it."



is nott soe cleare a light, any person passes an Engagement, itt is judged by them, (and I soe judge itt), to bee an act of honesty for that man to recede from his former judgement, and to abhorre itt. And therefore I conceive the first thing is to consider the honesty of what is offer'd, otherwise itt cannott bee consider'd of any obligation that doth preposse. By the consideration of the justice of what is offer'd that obligation shall appeare whether itt was just or noe. If itt were nott just, I cannott butt bee confident of the searinges of your consciences. I conceive this to bee their sence ; and uppon this account, uppon a more serious review of all Declarations past, they see noe obligations which are just that they contradict by proceeding in this way.

Commissary Gen. Ireton.

Sure this Gentleman hath nott bin acquainted with our Engagements, for hee that will cry out of breach of Engagement in slight and triviall thinges, and thinges necessitated to, that is soe tender of an Engagement as to frame or concurre with this Booke<sup>a</sup> in their insisting uppon every punctilio of Engagement, I can hardly thinke that man<sup>b</sup> can bee of that principle that noe Engagement is binding further then that hee thinkes itt just or noc. For itt hints that, if hee that makes an Engagement (bee itt what itt will bee) have further light that this engagement was nott good or honest, then hee is free from itt. Truly if the sence were putt thus, that a man that findes hee hath entred into an engagement and thinkes that itt was nott a just Engagement, I confesse some thinge might bee said that [such] a man might declare himself for his parte to suffer some penalty uppon their persons, or uppon their partie.

<sup>a</sup> The text should probably run, "as to concur with the framers of this book."

<sup>b</sup> In "The Case of the Army" it was asserted "that the Army's Engagement, Representations, Declarations, and Remonstrances, and promises in them contained, are declined, and more and more dayly broken, and not only in some smaller matters wherein the Army and Kingdom are not neerly concerned, but in divers particulars of dangerous consequence to the Army and the whole nation." Ten points in which these engagements had been broken were then enumerated.



The question is, whether itt bee an Engagement to another partie. Now if a man venture into an Engagement from him [self] to another, and find<sup>a</sup> that Engagement [not] just and honest, hee must apply himself to the other partie, and say "I cannott actively performe itt, I will make you amends as neere as I can." Uppon the same ground men are nott obliged to [be obedient to] any auctoritic that is sett uppe, though itt were this auctority that is proposed heere, I am nott engaged to bee soe actively to that auctority. Yett if I have engag'd that they shall binde mee by Law, though afterwards, I finde that they doe require mee to a thinge that is nott just or honest, I am bound soe farre to my Engagement that I must submitt and suffer, though I cannott act and doe that which their Lawes doe impose upon mee. If that caution were putt in where a performance of an Engagement might bee expected from another, and hee could nott doe itt because hee thought itt was nott honest to bee performed; if such a thinge were putt into the case, itt is possible there might bee some reason for itt. Butt to take itt as itt is deliver'd in generall, whatever Engagement wee have entred into, though itt bee a promise of somethinge to another partie, wherein that other partie is concerned, wherein hee hath a benefitt, if wee make itt good, wherein hee hath a prejudice if wee make itt nott good [that we are free to break it if it be not just]: this is a principle that will take away all Commonwealth[s], and will take away the fruite of this Engagement if itt were entred into; and men of this principle would thinke themselves as little as may bee [obliged by any law] if in their apprehensions itt bee nott a good Law. I thinke they would thinke themselves as little obliged to thinke of standing to that auctority [that is proposed in this paper].

Truly Sir I have little to say att the present to that matter of the paper that is tendred to us. I confesse there are plausible thinges in itt, and there are thinges really good in itt, and there are those thinges that I doe with my heart desire, and there are

<sup>a</sup> MS. "finding."



those things for the most parte of itt [that] I shall bee soe free as to say, if these Gentlemen, and other Gentlemen that will joyne with them can obtaine, I would nott oppose, I should rejoyce to see obtayn'd. There are those things in itt, divers [of them]; and, if wee were as hath bin urged now, free; if wee were first free from consideration of all the dangers and miseries that wee may bringe uppon this people, [the danger] that when wee goe to cry out for the libertie of itt wee may nott leave a being [in it], free from all [those] Engagements that doe lie uppon us, and that were honest when they were entred into, I should concurre with this paper further then as the case doth stand I can. Butt truly I doe account wee are under Engagements; and I suppose that whatsoever this Gentleman that spoke last doth seeme to deliver to us, holding himself absolved from all Engagements, if hee thinkes itt, yett those men that came with him (that are in the case of the Armie,)\* hold themselves more obliged; and therfore that they will nott perswade us to lay aside all our former Engagements and Declarations, if there bee any thing in them, and to concurre in this, if there bee any thing in itt that is contrary to those Engagements which they call uppon us to confirme. Therfore I doe wish that wee may have a consideration of our former Engagements, of things which are the Engagements of the Army generallie. Those wee are to take notice of, and sure wee are nott to recede from them till wee are convinct of them that they are unjust. And when wee are convinc't of them that they are unjust, truly yett I must nott fully concurre with that Gentleman's principle, that presently wee are, as hee sayes, absolv'd from them, that wee are nott bound to them, or wee are nott bound to make them good. Yett I should thinke att least, if the breach of that Engagement bee to the prejudice of another whome wee have perswaded to beleive by our Declaring such thinges [so] that wee made them and led them to a confidence of itt, to a dependance uppon itt, to

\* i.e., "The soldier agitators contrasted with those who did not belong to the Army."







a disadvantage to themselves or the loosing of advantages to them, though wee were convinc't they were unjust, and satisfied in this Gentleman's principle, and free, and disengag'd from them, yett wee who made that engagement should nott make itt our act to breake itt. Though wee were convinc't that wee are nott bound to performe itt, yett wee should nott make itt our act to breake [it]. And soe uppon the whole matter I speake this to inforce. As uppon the particulars of this Agreement; whether they have that goodnesse that they hold forth in shew? or whether are nott some defects in them which are nott seene? that if wee should rest in this Agreement without somethinge more [whether] they would nott deceive us? and whether there bee nott some considerations that would tend to union? And withall [I wish] that wee who are the Armie and are engag'd with publike Declarations may consider how farre those publike Declarations, which wee then thought to bee just, doe oblige, that wee may either resolve to make them good if wee can in honest wayes, or att least nott make itt our worke to breake them. And for this purpose I wish—unlesse the Councill please to meete from time to time, from day to day and to consider itt themselves—to goe over our papers and declarations and take the heads of them, I wish there may bee some specially appointed for itt; and I shall bee very glad if itt may bee soe that I my self may bee none of them.

Col. Rainborow.

I shall crave your pardon if I may speake something freelie, and I thinke itt will bee the last time I shall speake heere, and from such a way that I never look't for. The consideration that I had in this Army and amongst honest men—nott that itt is an addition of honour and profit to mee butt rather a detriment in both—is the reason that I speake somethinge by way of apologic. I saw this paper first by chance and had noe resolution to have bin att this Councill nor any other since I tooke this imployment uppon



mee, butt to doe my duty.<sup>a</sup> I mett with a Letter (which truly was soe strange to mee that I have bin a little troubled, and truly I have soe many sparkes of honour and honesty in mee) to lett mee know that my Regiment should bee imediately disposed from mee. I hope that none in the Army will say butt that I have perform'd my duty, and that with some successe, as well as others. I am loath to leave the Army with whome I will live and die, insomuch that rather then I will loose this Regiment of mine the Parliament shall exclude mee the House, [or] imprison mee; for truly while I am [employed] abroad I will nott bee undone att home. This was itt that call'd mee hither, and nott any thinge of this paper. Butt now I shall speake somethinge of itt.

I shall speake my minde; that whoever hee bee that hath done this hee hath done it with much respect to the Good of his Country. Itt is said there are many plausible thinges in itt. Truly, many thinges have engaged mee, which, if I had nott knowne they should have bin nothing butt Good, I would nott have engag'd in. Itt hath bin said, that if a man bee Engag'd hee must performe his Engagements. I am wholly confident that every honest man is bound in duty to God and his Conscience, lett him bee engag'd in what hee will, to decline itt when hee is engag'd and clearly convinc't to discharge his duty to God as ever hee was for itt;

<sup>a</sup> Rainborowe had been added to the Committee of the Navy on 9 September, 1647, and appointed Vice-Admiral on September 27. (*Commons' Journals*, v., 297, 318.) On October 2 the Commons voted that he should be at once despatched to sea, and on October 8 that he should be commander-in-chief of the ships appointed for the winter guard. (*Ibid.*, 324, 328.) On September 29 the committee of general officers voted that Deane should succeed to the command of Rainborowe's regiment when the latter went to sea, which seems to be one of the causes of the discontent shown in Rainborowe's speech. Cromwell and Rainborowe had before this fallen out on the question of treating with the King. A news-letter of September 20 (*Clarendon MS.* 2577) says, "The Parliament is not well pleased with the Army's proposals, and the Army is as much displeased with them for disliking them; and upon Thursday last there was a resolution amongst them to send to the Houses that they should treat with the King upon the proposals. High language passed at the Council of War between Cromwell and Rainsborough, so high that Rainsborough told him that one of them must not live."



and that I shall make good out of the Scripture, and cleare itt by that if that bee any thinge. There are two objections are made against itt.

The one is Division. Truly I thinke wee are utterly undone if wee devide, butt I hope that honest things have carried us on thus longe, and will keepe us together, and I hope that wee shall nott devide. Another thinge is Difficulties. Oh unhappy men are wee that ever began this warre; if ever wee [had] look't uppon difficulties I doe nott know that ever wee should have look't an enemy in the face. Truly I thinke the Parliament were very indiscreete to contest with the Kinge if they did nott consider first that they should goe through difficulties; and I thinke there was noe man that entred into this warre that did nott engage [to go through difficulties]. And I shall humbly offer unto you—itt may bee the last time I shall offer—itt may bee soe, butt I shall discharge my conscience in itt—itt is this; that truly I thinke that lett the difficulties bee round about you, have you death before you, the sea on each side of you and behinde you, are you convinc't that the thinge is just I thinke you are bound in conscience to carry itt on; and I thinke att the last day itt can never bee answer'd to God that you did nott doe itt. For I thinke itt is a poore service to God and the Kingedome to take their pay and to decline their worke. I heare itt said, "Itt's a huge alteration, itt's a bringing in of New Lawes," and that this Kingedome hath bin under this Governement ever since itt was a Kingdome. If writings bee true there hath bin many scufflings betweene the honest men of England and those that have tyranniz'd over them; and iff itt bee [true what I have] read, there is none of those just and equitable lawes that the people of England are borne to butt that they are intrenchment altogether.<sup>a</sup> Butt if they were those which the people have bin alwayes under, if the people finde that they are [not] suitable to freemen as they are, I know noe reason

<sup>a</sup> *i.e.*, "All the good laws we now enjoy were innovations once, and intrenchments on the rights of the King or the Lords."



should deterre mee, either in what I must answer before God or the world, from indeavouring by all meanes to gaine any thinge that might bee of more advantage to them then the Governement under which they live. I doe nott presse that you should goe on with this thinge, for I thinke that every man that would speake to itt will bee lesse able till hee hath some time to consider itt. I doe make itt my Motion, that two or three dayes time may bee sett for every man to consider, and all that is to bee consider'd is the justnesse of the thinge—and if that bee consider'd then all thinges are—that there may bee nothing to deterre us from itt, butt that wee may doe that which is just to the people.

Lieut. Generall.

Truly I am very glad, that this Gentleman that spoke last is heere, and nott sorry for the occasion that brought him hither ; because itt argues wee shall enjoy his company longer then I thought wee should have done.

Col. Rainborow.

If I should nott bee kick't out.

Lieut. Generall.

And truly then I thinke itt shall nott bee longe enough. Butt truly I doe nott know what the meaning of that expression is, nor what the meaning of any hatefull worde is heere. For wee are all heere with the same integrity to the publique; and perhaps wee have all of us done our parts nott affrighted with difficulties, one as well as another; and I hope have all purposes henceforward, through the Grace of God, nott resolving in our owne strength, to doe soe still. And therefore truly I thinke all the consideration is, That amongst us wee are almost all souldiers; all considerations [of not fearing difficulties] or wordes of that kinde doe wonderfully please us, all words of courage animate us to carry on our businesse, to doe God's businesse, [and] that which is the will of







God. I say itt againe, I doe nott thinke that any man heere wants courage to doe that which becomes an honest man and an English-man to doe. Butt wee speake as men that desire to have the feare of God before our eyes, and men that may nott resolve to doe that which wee doe in the power of a fleshly strength, butt to lay this as the foundation of all our actions, to doe that which is the will of God. And if any man have a false deceit—on the one hand, deccitfulnesse, that which hee doth nott intend, or a perswasion on the other hand, I thinke hee will nott prosper.

Butt to that which was mov'd by Col. Rainborow, of the objections of difficulty and danger [and] of the consequences, they are nott proposed to any other end, butt [as] thinges fitting consideration, nott forged to deterre from the consideration of the businesse. In the consideration of the thinge that is new to us, and of every thinge that shall bee new that is of such importance as this is, I thinke that hee that wishes the most serious advice to bee taken of such a change as this is,—soe evident and cleare [a change]—who ever offers that there may bee most serious consideration, I thinke hee does nott speake impertinently. And truly itt was offer'd to noe other end then what I speake. I shall say noe more to that.

Butt to the other, concerning Engagements and breaking of them. I doe nott thinke that itt was att all offer'd by any body, that though an Engagement were never soe unrighteous itt ought to bee kept. Noe man offer'd a syllable or tittle [to that purpose]. For certainly itt's an act of duty to breake an unrighteous Engagement; hee that keepes itt does a double sin, in that hee made an unrighteous Engagement, and [in] that he goes about to keepe itt. Butt this was onely offer'd; and I know nott what can bee more fit, that before wee can consider of this [paper] wee labour to know where wee are, and where wee stand. Perhaps wee are uppon Engagements that wee cannott with honesty breake, Butt lett mee tell you this, that hee that speakes to you of Engagements heere, is as free from Engagements to the Kinge as



any man in all the world ; and I know that <sup>a</sup> if itt were otherwise I believe my future actions would provoke some to declare itt. Butt I thanke God I stand uppon the bottome of my owne innocence in this particular ; through the Grace of God I feare nott the face of any man, I doe nott. I say wee are to consider what Engagements wee have made, and if our Engagements have bin unrighteous why should wee nott make itt our indeavours to breake them. Yett if unrighteous Engagements<sup>b</sup> itt is nott a present breach of them unlesse there bee a consideration of circumstances. Circumstances may bee such as I may nott now breake an unrighteous Engagement, or else I may doe that which I did scandalously, if the thinge bee good.<sup>c</sup> If that bee true concerning the breaking of an unrighteous Engagement itt is much more verified concerning Engagements disputable whether they bee righteous or unrighteous. If soe, I am sure itt is fitt wee should dispute [them], and if, when wee have disputed them, wee see the goodnesse of God inlightening us to see our liberties, I thinke wee are to doe what wee can, to give satisfaction to men. Butt if itt were soe, as wee made an Engagement in judgement and knowledge, soe wee goe off from itt in judgement and knowledge. Butt there may be just Engagements uppon us such as perhaps itt will bee our duty to keepe ; and if soe itt is fitt wee should consider, and all that I said [was] that wee should consider our Engagements, and there is nothing else offer'd, and therefore what neede anybody bee angry or offended. Perhaps wee have made such Engagements as may in the matter of them nott binde us, in some circumstances they may. Our Engagements are publique Engagements. They are to the Kingedome, and to every one in the Kingdome that could looke uppon what wee did publicquely declare, could read or heare itt read. They are to the

<sup>a</sup> MS. "itt."

<sup>b</sup> *i.e.*, "if our engagements are unrighteous."

<sup>c</sup> Perhaps Cromwell means "though the engagement may be unrighteous, and it may be good in the abstract to break it, circumstances may render it scandalous to do so now."



Parliament, and itt is a very fitting thinge that wee doe seriously consider of the thinges. And shortly this is that I shall offer: that because the Kingedome is in the danger itt is in, because the Kingdome is in that condition itt is in, and time may bee ill spent in debates, and itt is necessary for thinges to bee putt to an issue, if ever itt was necessary in the world itt is now, I should desire this may bee done.

That this Generall Councill may bee appointed [to meet] against a very short time, two dayes, Thursday, if you would, against Saturday, or, att furthest against Munday: that there might bee a Committee out of this Councill appointed to debate and consider with those two Gentlemen, and with any others that are nott of the Army that they shall bringe, and with the Agitators of those five Regiments: that soe there may bee a liberall and free debate had amongst us, that wee may understand really as before God the bottome of our desires, and that wee may seeke God together, and see if God will give us an uniting spiritt. Give mee leave to tell itt you againe, I am confident there sitts nott a man in this place that cannott soe freely act with you, but if hee sees that God hath shutt uppe his way that hee cannott doe any service hee will bee glad to withdraw himself, and wish you all prosperity in that way as may bee good for the Kingedome.<sup>a</sup> And if this heart bee in us, as is knowne to God that searches our hearts and tryeth the reines, God will discover whether our hearts bee nott cleare in this businesse. Therefore I shall move that wee may have a Committee amongst our selves [to consider] of the Engagements, and this Committee to dispute thinges with others, and a short day [to be appointed] for the Generall Councill. I doubt nott butt if in sincerity wee are willing to submitt to that light that God shall cast in amonge us God will unite us, and make us of one heart and one minde. Doe the plausiblest thinges you can doe, doe that which hath the most appearance of reason in itt that tends to change, att this conjuncture of time you will finde difficulties. Butt if God satisfie our spiritts this will bee a ground of confidence to every

<sup>a</sup> Clause transposed.



good man, and hee that goes uppon other grounds hee shall fall like a beast. I shall desire this, that you or any other of the Agitators or Gentlemen that can bee heere will bee heere, that wee may have free discourses amongst our selves of thinges, and you will bee able to satisfie each other. And really, rather then I would have this Kingedome breake in pieces before some company of men bee united together to a settlement, I will withdraw my self from the Army tomorrow, and lay downe my Commission; I will perish before I hinder itt.<sup>a</sup>

Bedfordshire Man.

May itt please your Honour,

I was desired by some of the Agents to accompanie this paper, manifesting my approbation of itt after I had heard itt read severall times, and they desir'd that itt might bee offer'd to this Councill, for the concurrence of the Councill if itt might bee. I finde that the Engagements of the Army are att present the thinges which is insisted to bee consider'd. I confesse my ignorance in those Engagements, butt I apprehend, att least I hope, that those Engagements have given away nothing from the people that is the people's Right. Itt may bee they have promised the King his Right, or any other persons their Right, butt noe more. If they have promised more then their Right to any person or persons, and have given away any thinge from the people that is their Right, then I conceive they are unjust. And if they are unjust [they should be broken], though I confesse for my owne parte I am very tender of breaking an Engagement when itt concernes a particular person—I thinke that a particular person ought rather to sett downe and loose then to breake an Engagement—butt if any man have given away any thinge from another whose Right itt was to one or more whose Right itt was nott, I conceive these men may [break that engagement]—at least many of them thinke themselves

<sup>a</sup> Cromwell's dread of division is commented on in Berkeley's *Memoirs, Mascre's Tracts*, i., 364.







bound nott onely to breake this Engagement, butt to place<sup>a</sup> to give every one his due. I conceive that for the substance of the paper itt is the peoples due ; and for the change of the Governement which is soe dangerous, I apprehend that there may bee many dangers in itt, and truly I apprehend there may bee more dangers without itt. For I conceive if you keepe the Governement as itt is and bringe in the Kinge, there may bee more dangers then in changing the Governement. Butt however, because from those things that I heard of the Agents they conceive that this conjuncture of time may almost destroy them, they have taken uppon them a libertie of acting to higher things, as they hope, for the freedome of the Nation, then yett this Generall Councill have acted to. And therefore as their sences I must make this motion ; that all those that uppon a due consideration of the thinge doe finde itt to bee just and honest, and doe finde that if they have engaged any thinge to the contrary of this itt is unjust and giving away the people's Rights, I desire that they and all others may have a free libertie of acting to any thinge in this nature, or any other nature, that may bee for the peoples good, by petitioning or otherwise ; wherby the fundamentalls for a well-ordered Governement for the people's Rights may bee established. And I shall desire that those that conceive themselves bound uppe would desist, and satisfie themselves in that, and bee noe hinderances to hinder the people in a more perfect way then hath bin [yet] indeavour'd.

Capt. Awdeley.

I suppose you have nott thought fitt, that there should bee a dispute concerning things att this time. I desire that other things may bee taken into consideration, delays and debates. Delays have undone us, and itt must bee a great expedition that must further us, and therefore I desire that there may bee a Committee appointed.

<sup>a</sup> The sense requires, "to replace it by a new engagement."



Lieut. Col. Goffe.

I shall butt humbly take the boldnesse to put you in minde of one thinge which you moved enow.<sup>a</sup> The Motion is, that there might bee a seeking of God in the thinges that now lie before us.

I shall humbly desire, that that Motion may nott die. Itt may bee there are or may bee some particular opinions amonge us concerning the use of ordinances and of publike seeking of God. Noe doubt formes have bin rested uppon too much; butt yett since there are soe many of us that have had soe many and soe large experiences of an extraordinarie manifestation of God's presence, when wee have bin in such extraordinarie wayes mett together, I shall desire that those who are that way [inclined] will take the present opportunity to doe itt. For certainly those thinges that are now presented, as they are, are well accepted by most of us; and though I am nott prepared to say any thinge either consenting or dissenting to the paper, as nott thinking itt wisdome to answer a matter before I have consider'd, yett when I doe consider how much ground there is to conceive there hath bin a withdrawing of the presence of God from us that have mett in this place—I doe nott say a totall withdrawing; I hope God is with us and amongst us. Itt hath bin our trouble night and day that God hath nott bin with us as formerly, as many within us soe without us [have told us], men that were sent from God in an extraordinarie manner to us. I meane [that though] the Ministers may take too much uppon them, yett there have bin those that have preached to us in this place, [in]<sup>b</sup> severall places, wee know very well that they spake to our hearts and consciences, and told us of our wandringes from God, and told us in the name of the Lord, that God would bee with us noe longer then wee were with him. Wee have in some thinges wandred from God, and as wee have heard

<sup>a</sup> enow. Halliwell gives "enow" as meaning even now and "anowe" as "now."

<sup>b</sup> Goffe perhaps was referring to what took place on October 7, when the Council "gave audience to an High German, who pretended to be a prophet, and would prescribe a way for the settling of a firm and lasting peace." Rushworth, viii., 836.



this from them in this place, soe have wee had itt very frequently prest uppon our spiritts [elsewhere], prest uppon us in the City and the Country. I speake this to this end, that our hearts may bee deeply and thoroughly affected with this matter. For if God bee departed from us hee is some where else. If wee have nott the will of God in these Councils God may bee found amonge some other Councils. Therefore I say, lett us shew the spiritt of Christians, and lett us nott bee ashamed to declare to all the world, that our Councils, and our wisdom, and our wayes they are nott altogether such as the world hath walked in; butt that wee have had a dependencie uppon God, and that our desires are to follow God (though never soe much to our disadvantage in the world) if God may have the glory by itt. And I pray lett us consider this: God does seeme evidently to bee throwing downe the glory of all flesh; the greatest powers in the Kingdome have bin shaken. God hath throwne downe the glory of the Kinge and that partie; hee hath throwne downe a partie in the City; I doe nott say, that God will throw us downe—I hope better things—butt hee will have the glory; lett us nott stand uppon our glory and reputation in the world. If wee have done some thinges through ignorance, or feare, or unbeleif, in the day of our straights, and could nott give God that glory by beleiving as wee ought to have done, I hope God hath a way for to humble us for that, and to keepe us as instruments in his hand still. There are two wayes that God doth take uppon those that walke obstinately against him; if they bee obstinate and continue obstinate hee breakes them in peeces with a rod of iron; if they bee his people and wander from him hee takes that glory from them, and takes itt to himself. I speake itt I hope from a divine impression. If wee would continue to bee instruments in his hand, lett us seriously sett our selves before the Lord, and seeke to him and waite uppon him for conviction of spiritts. Itt is nott enough for us to say, “if wee have offended wee will leave the world, wee will goe and confesse to the Lord what wee have done amisse, butt wee will doe noe more soe.”



Aaron went uppe to Hur and died, and Moses was favour'd to see the land of Canaan, hee did nott voluntarily lay himself aside. I hope our strayings from God are nott soe great, butt that a conversion and true humiliation may recover us againe; and I desire that wee may bee serious in this, and not despise any other instruments that God will use. God will have his worke done; itt may bee wee thinke wee are the onely instruments that God hath in his hands. I shall onely adde these two thinges. First, that wee bee warie how wee lett forth any thinge against his people, and that which is for the whole Kingedome and Nation. I would move, that wee may nott lett our spiritts act too freely against them till wee have throughly weighed the matter, and considered our own wayes too. The second is to draw us uppe to a serious consideration of the weightiness of the worke that lies before us, and seriously to sett our selves to seeke the Lord; and I wish itt might bee consider'd of a way and manner that itt should be conveniently done, and I thinke to morrow will bee the [best] day.

Lieut Generall.

I know nott what Lieut. Col. Goffe meanes for to morrow for the time of seeking God. I thinke itt will bee requisite that wee doe itt speedily, and doe itt the first thinge, and that wee doe itt as unitedly as wee can, as many of us as well may meeete together. For my parte I shall lay aside all businesse for this businesse, either to convince or bee convinc't as God shall please. I thinke itt would bee good that to morrow morning may bee spent in prayer, and the afternoone might bee the time of our businesse. I doe nott know that these Gentlemen doe assent to itt that to morrow in the afternoone might bee the time.

Lieut. Col. Goffe.

I thinke wee have a great deale of businesse to doe, and wee have bin doing of itt these ten weekes. Itt is an ordinance that







God hath blest to this end. I say goe about what you will, for my parte I shall nott thinke any thinge can prosper, unlesse God bee first sought.

If that bee approved of, that to morrow shall bee a time of seeking the Lord, and that the afternoone shall bee the time of businesse, if that doth agree with your opinion and the generall sence, lett that bee first order'd.

Cofm. Gen. Ireton.

That which Lieut. Col. Goffe offer'd hath [made] a very great impression uppon mee; and indeed I must acknowledge to God through him, that, as hee hath severall times spoke in this place, and elsewhere to this purpose, hee hath never spoke butt hee hath touched my heart; and that especially in the point that hee hintes. That one thinge is, that in the time of our straights and difficulties, I thinke wee none of us—I feare wee none of us—I am sure I have nctt—walked soe closely with God, and kept soe close with him, [as] to trust wholly uppon him, as nott to bee led too much with considerations of danger and difficulty, and from that consideration to waive some thinges, and perhaps to doe some thinges, that otherwise I should nott have thought fitt to have done. Every one hath a spiritt within him—especially [he] who has that communion indeed with that spirit that is the only searcher of hearts—that can best search out and discover to him the errours of his owne wayes, and of the workinges of his owne heart. And though I thinke that publique actinges, publique departings from God are the frutes of unbeleif and distrust, and nott honouring God by sanctifying him in our wayes; they doe more publicquely engage God to vindicate his honour by a departing from them that doe soe, and if there bee any such thinge in the Army that is to bee look't uppon with a publique eye in relation to the Army.<sup>a</sup> I thinke the maine thinge is for every one

<sup>a</sup> The sentence should probably read thus: "Public departings from God (if there be any such thing in the Army that is to be looked upon with a public eye in relation



to waite uppon God, for the errours, deceits, and weaknesses of his owne heart, and I pray God to bee present with us in that. Butt withall I would nott have that seasonable and good Motion that hath come from Lieut. Col. Goffe to bee neglected, of a publique seeking of God, and seeking to God, as for other thinges soe especially for the discovery of any publique deserting of God, or dishonouring of him, or declining from him, that does lie as the fault and blemish uppon the Army. Therefore I wish his Motion may bee pursued, that the thinge may bee done, and for point of time as was moved by him. Onely this to the way; I confesse I thinke the best [way] is this, that itt may bee only taken notice of as a thinge by the agreement of this Councill resolv'd on, that tomorrow in the morning, the forenoone wee doe sett aparte, wee doe give uppe from other businesse, for every man to give himself uppe that way, either in private by himself, though I cannott say not in public. For the publique Meeting att the Church, itt were nott amisse that itt may bee thus taken notice of as a time given from other imployments for that purpose, and every one as God shall incline their hearts, some in one place, and some another, to imploy themselves that way.

Agreed for the Meeting for Prayer to bee att Mr. Chamberlaine's

Lieut. Gen.

That they should nott meete as two contrary parties, butt as some desirous to satisfie or convince each other.

Mr. Petty.

For my owne parte, I have done as to this businesse what was desired by the Agents that sent mee hither. As for any further to the Army) are the fruits of unbelief and distrust; and though I think that public actings (*i.e.* public prayer meetings) do more publicly engage God to vindicate his honour by a departing from them that do so, still I think the main thing is," etc.



Meeting to morrow or any other time I cannott meete upon the same ground, to meete as for their sence, [but only] to give my owne reason why I doe assent to itt.

Cofm. Ireton.

I should bee sorry, that they should bee soe suddaine to stand upon themselves.

Mr. Petty.

To procure three, four, or five more or lesse to meete, for my owne parte I am utterly unconcern'd in the businesse.

Buffe-Coate.

I have heere att this day answer'd the expectations, which I engaged to your Honours; which was, that if wee would give a Meeting you should take that as a symptome, or a remarkeable testimonie of our fidelitie. I have discharged that trust reposed in mee. I could nott engage for them. I shall goe on still in that method. I shall engage my deepest interest for any reasonable desires to engage them to come to this.

Lieut. Generall.

I hope wee know God better then to make appearances of Religious Meetings as covers for designes for insinuation amongst you. I desire that God that hath given us some sinceritie will owne us according to his owne goodnesse, and that sincerity that hee hath given us. I dare bee confident to speake itt, that [design] that hath bin amongst us hitherto is to seeke the guidances of God, and to recover that presence of God that seemes to withdraw from us; and our end is to accomplish that worke which may bee for the good of the Kingedome. It seems to us in this as much as anything we are not of a minde, and for our parts wee doe nott desire or offer you to bee with us in our seeking of God further then your owne satisfaccions lead you, butt onely [that] against to-morrow in the afternoone (which will bee design'd for the con-



sideration of these businesses with you) you will doe what you may to have soe many as you shall thinke fitt to see what God will direct you to say to us. Perhaps God may unite us and carry us both one way, that whilest wee are going one way, and you another, wee bee nott both destroyed. This requires spiritt. Itt may bee too soone to say, itt is my present apprehension; I had rather wee should devolve our strength to you then that the Kingedome for our division should suffer losse.<sup>a</sup> For that's in all our hearts, to professe above any thinge that's worldlie, the publique good of the people; and if that bee in our hearts truly, and nakedlie, I am confident itt is a principall that will stand. And therefore I doe desire you, that against to morrow in the afternoone, if you judge itt meete, you will come to us to the Quartermaster Generall's Quarters, and there you will finde us [at prayer], if you will come timely to joyne with us; at your libertie, if afterwards [you wish] to speake with us.<sup>b</sup>

Mr. Wildman.

I desire to returne a little to the businesse in hand that was the occasion of these other motions. I could nott butt take some notice of some thinge that did reflect uppon the Agents of the five Regiments, in which I could nott butt give a little satisfaction to them; and I shall desire to prosecute a motion or two that hath bin already made. I observ'd that itt was said, that these gentlemen doe insist upon Engagements in "The Case of the Army," and therefore it was said to bee contrary to the principles of the Agents, that an Engagement which was unjust should lawfully bee broken.<sup>c</sup> I shall onely observe this; that though an unjust Engagement when

<sup>a</sup> After Cromwell quitted the Parliament, says Berkeley, "his chief dependance was on the Army, which he endeavoured by all means to keep in unity; and if he could not bring it to his sense, he, rather than suffer any division in it, went over himself and carried his friends with him into that way which the Army did choose." *Masere's Tracts*, p. 364.

<sup>b</sup> In this speech of Cromwell's the position of several clauses has been altered with a view to clearing the sense.

<sup>c</sup> The two halves of this sentence have been transposed.





itt appeares unjust may bee broken, yett when two parties engage [each that] the other partie may have satisfaccion, yett because they are mutually engaged each to other one partie that apprehends they are broken [is justified] to complaine of them ; and soe itt may bee their case, with which I confesse I made my concurrence. The other is a principle much spreading and much to my trouble, and that is this: that when persons once bee engaged, though the Engagement appeare to bee unjust, yett the person must sett downe and suffer under itt ; and that therefore, in case a Parliament, as a true Parliament, doth anythinge unjustly, if wee bee engaged to submitt to the Lawes that they shall make, if they make an unjust law, though they make an unrighteous law, yett wee must sweare obedience.

I confesse to mee this principle is very dangerous, and I speake itt the rather because I see itt spreading abroad in the Army againe. Wheras itt is contrary to what the Army first declar'd: that they stood uppon such principles of right and freedome, and the lawes of nature and nations, wherby men were to preserve themselves though the persons to whome aucthority belong'd should faile in itt, and urged the example of the Scotts, and [that] the Generall that would destroy the Army they might hold his hands ; and therefore if any thinge tends to the destruction of a people, because the thinge is absolutely unjust and tends to their destruction, [they may preserve themselves].<sup>a</sup> I could nott butt speake a worde to that. The motion that I should make uppon that account is this.

<sup>a</sup> Wildman refers to the principles laid down in the *Declaration of the Army*, of June 14, 1647.

"And truly such Kingdoms as have, according both to the Law of Nature and Nations, appear'd to the vindication and defence of their just Rights and Liberties, have proceeded much higher ; as our Brethren of Scotland, who, in the first beginning of these late Differences, associated in Covenant, from the very same Grounds and Principles (having no visible Form either of Parliament or King to countenance them ;) and as they were therein justified and protected by their own and this Kingdom also, so we justly shall expect to be.

"We need not mention the States of the Netherlands, the Portugals, and others, all proceeding from the same Principles of Right and Freedom: And accordingly



That wheras there must bee a Meeting I could nott finde [but] that they were desirous to give all satisfaccion, and they desire nothing but the union of the Army. Thus farre itt is their sence. That the necessity of the Kingdome for present actinges is such that two or three dayes may loose the Kingdome. I desire in the sight of God to speake plainly : I meane there may bee an agreement betweene the Kinge [and the Parliament] by propositions, with a power to hinder the making of any lawes that are good, and the tendring of any good [lawes]. And therefore, because none of the people's greivances are redrest, they doe apprehend that thus a few dayes may bee the losse of the Kingdome. I know it is their sence. That they desire to bee excused that itt might nott bee thought any arrogancie in them, butt they are clearlie satisfied, that the way they proccede in is just, and desire to bee excus'd if they goe on in itt; and yett notwithstanding will give all satisfaccion. And wheras itt is desir'd that Engagements may bee consider'd, I shall desire that onely the justice of the thinge that is proposed may bee consider'd. Whether the chief thinge in the Agreement, the intent of itt, bee nott this, to secure the Rights of the people in their Parliaments, which was declar'd by this Army in the Declaration of the 14th of June to bee absolutely insisted on ? I shall make that motion to bee the thinge consider'd: whether the thinge bee just or the people's due, and then there can bee noe Engagement to binde from itt.

the Parliament hath declared it no resistance of Magistracy, to side with the just Principles and the Law of Nature and Nations, being that Law upon which we have assisted you. And that the Soldiery may lawfully hold the hands of the General, who will turn his cannon against his Army, on purpose to destroy them ; the Seamen the hands of the Pilot, who wilfully runs the Ship upon a Rock (as our Brethren of Scotland argued). And such were the proceedings of our Ancestors of famous Memory, to the purchasing of such Rights and Liberties as they have enjoyed, through the Price of their Blood, and we (both by that, and the later Blood of our dear Friends and Fellow-Soldiers, with the hazard of our own) do now lay claim to." Rushworth, vii., 565.



Coñ. Gen. Ireton.

Truly Sir, by what Lieut. Col. Goffe moved I confesse I was soe taken off from all [other] thoughts in this businesse that I did nott thinke of speaking any thinge more. Butt what this Gentleman hath last said hath renewed the occasion, and indeed if I did thinke<sup>a</sup> all that hee hath deliver'd bee truth and innocence—nay, if I did nott thinke that it hath venome and poyson in itt—I would nott speake itt.

First, I cannott butt speake somethinge unto the two particulars that hee holds forth as dangerous thinges,—indeed hee hath cleerlie yolk't them together, when before I was sensible of those principles and how farre they would run together—that is that principle of nott being obliged, by nott regarding what Engagements men have entred into, if in their future apprehensions the thinges they engaged to are unjust; and that principle on the other hand of nott submitting passively for peace sake to that authority wee have engaged to. For hee does hold forth his opinion in those two points to cleare their way; and I must crave leave on my parte to declare [that] my opinion of that Distinction doth lie on the other way. I am farre from holding, that if a man have engag'd himself to a thinge that is nott just—to a thinge—that is evill, that is sin if hee doe itt—that that man is still bound to performe what hee hath promised; I am farre from apprehending that. Butt when wee talke of just, itt is nott soe much of what is sinfull before God, which depends uppon many circumstances of indignation to that man and the like, butt itt intends of that which is just according to the foundation of justice betweene man and man. And for my parte I account that the great foundation of justice betweene man and man, and that without which I know nothing of justice betwixt man and man—in particular matters I meane, nothing in particular thinges that can come under humane Engagement one way or other—there is noe other foundation of right I know of, right to one thinge from another man, noe foundation of

<sup>a</sup> MS. "I thinke if."



that justice or that righteousness, butt this generall justice, and this generall ground of righteousness, that wee should keepe covenant one with another. Covenants freely made, freely entred into, must bee kept one with another. Take away that I doe nott know what ground there is of any thinge you can call any man's right. I would very faine know what you Gentlemen or any other doe account the right you have to any thinge in England, any thinge of estate, land, or goods that you have, what ground, what right you have to itt? What right hath any man to any thinge if you lay nott that principle, that wee are to keepe covenant? If you will resort onely to the law of Nature, by the law of Nature you have noe more right to this land or any thinge else then I have. I have as much right to take hold of any thinge that is for my sustenance, [to] take hold of any thinge that I have a desire to for my satisfaction as you. Butt heere comes the foundation of all right that I understand to be betwixt men, as to the enjoying of one thinge or nott enjoying of itt; wee are under a contract, wee are under an agreement, and that agreement is what a man has for matter of land that a man hath received by a traduction from his ancestors, which according to the law does fall uppon him to bee his right. [The agreement is] that that hee shall enjoy, hee shall have the property of, the use of, the disposing of, with submission to that generall auctoritie which is agreed uppon amongst us for the preserving of peace, and for the supporting of this law. This I take to bee [the foundation of all right] for matter of land. For matter of goods, that which does fence mee from that [right] which another man may claime by the law of nature of taking my goods, that which makes itt mine really and civillie is the law. That which makes itt unlawfull originally and radically is onely this: because that man is in covenant with mee to live together in peace one with another, and nott to meddle with that which another is posses't of, butt that each of us should enjoy, and make use of, and dispose of, that which by the course of law is in his possession, and [another] shall nott by violence take itt away from him. This is







the foundation of all the right any man has to any thinge butt to his owne person. This is the generall thinge: that wee must keepe covenant one with another when wee have contracted one with another. And if any difference arise among us itt shall bee thus and thus: that I shall nott goe with violence to prejudice another, butt with submission to this way. And therefore when I heare men speake of laying aside all Engagements to [consider only] that wild or vast notion of what in every man's conception is just or unjust, I am afraid and doe tremble att the boundlesse and endlesse consequences of itt.<sup>a</sup> What you apply this paper to. You say, "If these thinges in this paper, in this Engagement bee just, then," say you, "never talke of any Engagement, for if any thinge in that Engagement bee against this, your Engagement was unlawfull; consider singly this paper, whether itt bee just." In what sence doe you thinke this is just? There is a great deale of equivocation [as to] what is just and unjust.

Mr. Wildman.

I suppose you take away the substance of the question. Our<sup>b</sup> [sense] was, that an unjust Engagement is rather to be broken then kept. The Agents thinke that to delay is to dispose their Enemy into such a capacitie as hee may destroy them. I make a question whether any Engagement can bee to an unjust thinge. [If] a man may promise to doe that which is never soe much unjust, a man may promise to breake all Engagements and duties. Butt [I say] this, wee must lay aside the consideration of Engagements, soe as nott to take in that as one ground of what is just or unjust amongst men in this case. I doe apply this to the case in hand: that itt might bee consider'd whether itt bee unjust to bringe in the Kinge in such a way as hee may bee in a capacity to destroy the people. This paper may bee applied to itt.

<sup>a</sup> M.S. "What you apply to this paper."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "ours."



Coñ. Generall.

You come to itt more particularly then that paper leads. There is a great deale of equivocation in the point of justice, and that I am bound to declare.

Capt. Awdeley.

Mr. Wildman sayes if wee stay butt three dayes before you satisfie one another, and if wee tarry longe the kinge will come and say who will be hang'd first.

Coñ Gen.

Sir, I was saying this; wee shall much deceive our selves, and bee apt to deceive others if wee doe nott consider that there is two parts of justice. There may bee a thinge just that is negatively [so], itt is nott unjust, nott unlawfull—that which is nott unlawfull, that's just to mee to doe if I bee free. Againe there is another sence of just when wee account such a thinge to bee a duty,—nott onely a thinge lawfull “we” may doe itt,” but itt's a duty, “you ought to doe itt,”—and there is a great deale of mistake if you confound these two. If I engage my self to a thinge that was in this sence just, that's a thinge lawfull for mee to doe supposing mee free, then I account my Engagement stands good to this. On the other hand, if I engage my self against a thinge which was a duty for mee to doe, which I was bound to doe; or if I engag'd myself to a thinge which was nott lawfull for mee to doe, which I was bound nott to doe, in this sence I doe account this [engagement] unjust. If I doe engage my self to what was unlawfull for mee to engage to, I thinke I am nott then to make good activelie this Engagement. Butt though this bee true, yett the generall end and equitie of Engagements I must regard, and that is the preserving right betwixt men, the nott doing of wronge or hurt to men, one to another. And therfore if [by] that which I engage to, though the thinge bee unlawfull for mee to doe, another man bee prejudict in case I

\* MS. “hee.”



did not perform it—though itt bee a thinge which was<sup>a</sup> unlawfull for mee to doe, yett [if] I did freelie [engage to do it] and I did [engage] uppon a consideration to mee, and that man did beleive mee, and hee suffer'd a prejudice by beleiving—though I bee nott bound by my Engagement to performe itt,<sup>b</sup> yett I am [bound] to regard that justice that lies in the matter of Engagement, soe as to repaire that man by some just way as farre as I can; and hee that doth nott hold this, I doubt whether hee hath any principle of justice, or doing right to any att all in him. That is [if] hee that did nott thinke itt lawfull hath made another man beleive itt to his prejudice and hurt, and [made] another man bec prejudic't and hurt by that, hee that does nott hold that hee is in this case to repaire [it] to that man, and free him from [the prejudice of] itt, I conceive there is noe justice in him. And therefore I wish wee may take notice of this distinction when wee talke of being bound to make good Engagements or nott. This I thinke I can make good in a larger dispute by reason. If the thinges engaged to were lawfull to bee done, or lawfull for mee to engage to, then [I] by my Engagement am<sup>c</sup> bound to [perform] itt. On the other hand if the thinge were nott lawfull for mee to engage, or [if it were] a duty for mee to have done to the contrary, then I am nott bound positively and actively to performe itt. Nay I am bound nott to performe itt, because itt was unlawfull [and] unjust by another Engagement. Butt when I engage to another man, and hee hath a prejudice by beleiving, I nott performing itt, I am bound to repaire that man as much as may bee, and lett the prejudice fall upon my self and nott uppon any other. This I desire wee may take notice of to avoide falacie on that part. For there is an extremity to say on the one hand, that if a man engage what is nott just hee may act against itt soe as to regard noe relation or prejudice.

<sup>a</sup> "nott" is here omitted, and the words "in case I did not perform it" are transposed from four lines below.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "though I bee bound by my engagement nott to perform itt."

<sup>c</sup> MS. "are."



[There's an extremity] for a man to say on the other hand, that whatsoever you engage, though itt bee never soe unjust, you are to stand to itt. One worde more to the other parte which Mr. Wildeman doth hold out as a dangerous principle acting amongst us, that wee must bee bound to active obedience to any power acting amongst men.

Wildman.

You repeat not the principle right—"To thinke that wee are bound soe absolutely to personall obedience to any Magistrates or personall authoritie that if they worke to our destruction wee may nott oppose them."

[Ireton.]

That wee may nott deceive ourselves againe [by arguments] that are fallacious in that kinde I am a little affected to speake in this, because I see that the abuse and misapplication<sup>a</sup> of those thinges the Army hath declar'd hath led many men into a great and dangerous errour and destructive to all humane society. Because the Army hath declar'd, in those cases where the foundation of all that right and libertie of the people is, if they have any, that in these cases they will insist uppon that right, and that they will nott suffer that originall and fundamentall right to bee taken away; and because the Army when there hath bin a command of that supream authority the Parliament have nott obeyed itt, butt stood uppon itt to have this fundamentall right settled first, and requir'd a rectification of the supream authority of the Kingedome; for a man therfore to inferre [that] uppon any particular, you may dispute that authority by what is commanded what is just or unjust, if in your apprehension nott to obey, and soe farre itt is well, and if itt tend to your losse to oppose itt.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Clause transferred from the line below.

<sup>b</sup> Last amending.





Mr. Wildman.

If itt tend to my Destruction that was the worde I spoke.

Coñ. Gen.

Lett us take heede that wee doe nott maintaine [that] this principle leads to destruction. If the case were soe visible as those cases the Army speaks of, of a Generall's turning the cannon against the Army, the bulke and body of the Army; or [of] a Pylott that sees a rock [and] does by the advantage of the steering<sup>a</sup> putt the shippe uppon't; if you could propose cases as evident as these are, there is noe man butt would agree with you. Butt when men will first putt in those termes of destruction, they will imagine any thinge a destruction, if there could bee any thinge better [for them]; and soe itt is very easy and demonstrable that thinges are soe counted abhorred and destructive, that, att the utmost if a man should make itt out by reason, that man<sup>b</sup> would bee in a better condition if itt bee nott done, then if itt bee done. And though I cannott butt subscribe to, that in such a visible way I may hold the hands of those that are in authority as I may the hands of a mad-man; butt that noe man shall thinke himself [bound] to acquiesce particularly, and to suffer for quietnesse sake rather then to make a disturbance, or to raise a power if hee can to make a disturbance in the State--I doe apprehend and appeale to all men whether there bee nott more follie or destructivenessse in the springe of that principle then there can bee in that other principle of holding passive obedience? Now whatsoever wee have declar'd in the Armie [declarations] itt is noe more butt this. The Parliament hath commanded us [to do] this. Wee have said, noe. First wee have insisted uppon [the] fundamentall rights of the people. Wee have said wee desire [first] to have the constitution of the supream authority of this Kingedome reduced to that constitution which is due to the people of this Kingedome, and reducing the authority to this wee will submit to itt, wee will

<sup>a</sup> MS. "stearne."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "men."



acquiesce, wee will cast our share into this common bottome; and if itt goe ill with us att one time, itt will goe well att another. The 'reducing of the supream authority to that constitution, by succeſſe or election as neere as may bee, wee have insisted uppon as an essentiall right of the Kingedome; and noe man can accuse the Armie of disobedience, or holding forth a principle of disobedience uppon any other ground.

Lieut. Generall.

Lett mee speake a worde to this businesse. Wee are now uppon that businesse which wee spake of consulting with God about, and therefore I judge it altogether unreasonable<sup>a</sup> for us to dispute the meritt of those thinges, unlesse you will make itt the subject of debate before you consider itt among your selves. The businesse of the Engagement[s] lies uppon us. They<sup>b</sup> are free in a double respect; they made none, and if they did, then the way out is now; and [it is a way] which all the members of the Army, except they bee sensible of itt [may take], and, att one jumpe, jumpe out of all [engagements], and itt is a very great jumpe I will assure you. As wee professe wee intend to seeke the Lord in the thinge, the less wee speake in itt [now] the better, and the more wee cast ourselves uppon God the better.

I shall onelic speake two thinges to Mr. Wildman in order to our Meeting. Mee thoughte hee said if there bee delay hee feares this businesse will bee determined, the propositions will bee sent from the Parliament, and the Parliament and Kinge agree, and soe those Gentlemen that were in that minde to goe on in their way will bee cutt off in point of time to their owne dissadvantage. And the other thinge hee said was, that these Gentlemen who have chosen Mr. Wildman, and that other Gentleman,<sup>c</sup> to bee their

<sup>a</sup> Transferred from a lower line.

<sup>b</sup> "They," *i.e.* the representatives of the five regiments and the agents of the Londoners.

<sup>c</sup> "Petty."



mouth att this meeting to deliver their mindes, they are uppon the matter engaged in what they have resolved uppon, and they come as engaged men uppon their owne resolution. If that bee soe, I thinke there neither needes consideration of the former, for you will not bee anticipated. If that bee soe, you [can] worke accordingly. And though you [do] meete us, yett having that resolution you cannott bee prevented in your way by any proposition, or any such thinge; though wee should have come hither, and wee should meete to morrow as a company of men that really would bee guided by God. If any come to us to morrow onely to instruct us and teach us, how farre that will consist with the libertie of a free <sup>a</sup> [debate] or an end of satisfaction I referre to every sober spirited man to thinke of and determine.<sup>b</sup> I thinke itt is such a preengagement that there is noe neede of talke of the thinge. And I see then if that bee soe, things are in such an irrevocable way—I will nott call itt desperate—as there is noe hope of accomodation or union, except wee receive the Councils—I will nott call itt the commands—of them that come to us. I desire that wee may rightly understand this thinge. If this bee soe I doe nott understand what the end of the meeting will bee. If this bee nott soe, wee<sup>c</sup> will [not] draw any man from their Engagements further then the Light of God shall draw them from their Engagements; and I thinke, according to your owne principle, if you bee uppon any Engagement you are liable to bee convinc't unlesse you bee infallible. If wee may come to an honest and single debate, how wee may all agree in one common way for publique good; if wee [may] meete soe, wee shall meete with a great deale the more comfort, and hopes of a good and happy issue, and understanding of the businesse. Butt if otherwise, I despaire of the Meeting; or att least I would have the Meeting to bee of another notion, a

<sup>a</sup> MS. "the liberty of a free liberty."

<sup>b</sup> The last two words transferred from three lines before.

<sup>c</sup> MS. "that they," *i.e.* Cromwell and the Council. The reporter changes into oratio obliqua for a moment.



Meeting that did represent the Agitators of five Regiments to give rules to the Councill of Warre. If itt signifie this, for my owne parte I shall bee glad to submitt to itt under this notion. If itt bee a free debate what may bee fitt for us all to doe, with clearnesse and opennesse before the Lord, lett us understand that wee may come and meete soe and in that sincerity.<sup>a</sup> Otherwise I doe verily believe wee shall meete with prejudice, and we shall meete to prejudice—really to the prejudice of the Kingedome, and of the whole Army—if wee bee thus absolutely resolved uppon our way and engaged before hand. The Kingedome will see itt is such a reall actuall division as admitts of noe reconciliation, and all those that are enemies to us and freinds to our enemies will have the clearer advantage uppon us to putt us into inconveniency. And I desire if there bee any feare of God among us, I desire that wee may declare ourselves freely, that wee doe meete uppon these termes.

Col. Rainborow.

I wish, that the Motion of Lieut. Col Goffe might have taken effect, nott only to the time and place for Meeting [but] as hee desir'd. Butt, Sir, since itt is gone thus farre, and since I heare much of fallacie talk't of, I feare itt as much on the one side as the other. Itt is made a wonder<sup>b</sup> of that some Gentlemen without should have principles to breake Engagements, yett [it is made no wonder of] that some Gentlemen within should soe much insist uppon Engagements. I doe nott consider my self as jumping, butt yett I hope when I leape I shall take soe much of God with mee, and soe much of just and right with mee, as I shall jumpe sure. Butt I am more unsatisfied against [another of] those thinges that have bin said, and that is as to another Engagement. For all that hath bin said hath bin [as to engagements] betweene partie and partie, if two men should make an agreement and the like, and there were noe living one amongst another if those Engagements

<sup>a</sup> Four words transferred from the previous line.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "noe wonder."







were nott made [good], yett I thinke under favour that some Engagements may bee broke. Noe man that takes a wife butt there is an Engagement, and I thinke that a man ought to keepe itt, yett if another man that had married her before claimes her, hee ought to lett him have her and soe breake the Engagement. Butt whereas it is told us, this engagement is of another nature,<sup>a</sup> that the partie to whome wee make the Engagement relyed uppon [it], and becomes therby prejudic't, [and so] wee ought to take itt rather uppon ourselves then to leave itt uppon them,—this may serve in a particular case, if any men<sup>b</sup> heere will suffer they may; butt if wee will make our selves a third partie, and engage betweene Kinge and Parliament, [it is not a particular case] and I am of that Gentlemans minde that spoke, the Kinges partie would have bin about our eares if wee had nott made some considerations. Heere is the consideration now. As concerning them, doe wee nott engage for the Parliament and for the liberties of the people of England, and doe wee nott engage against itt? Wee have gott the better of them in the feild, butt they shall bee masters of our Houses. Never was Engagements broken more then wee doe. Wee did take uppe Armes with all that tooke parte with the Parliament and wee engag'd with them.<sup>c</sup> For my parte itt may bee thought that I am against the Kinge; I am against him or any power that would destroy Gods people, and I will never bee destroyed till I cannott helpe my self. Is itt nott an argument, if a

<sup>a</sup> MS. "butt this engagement is of another nature, but wheras it is told."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "man."

<sup>c</sup> Rainborow's argument may be thus paraphrased, though his actual words are hopelessly confused :

"I am of that gentleman's mind that said the king's party would have been about our ears if we had not made some considerations as concerning them, some engagement in their favour. This is the consideration, the concession we made in favour of the King's party. Did we not at first engage for the Parliament and for the liberties of the people, and against the King's party? Now though we have beaten them in the field they are by this proposed agreement to be made masters of our houses. By this new unlawful engagement we have broken our original engagements to the people and all who sided with the Parliament."



pylott run his shipp uppon a rock, or [if] a Generall mount his cannon against his Army, hee is to bee resisted? I thinke that this as cleare the very case as any thinge in the world. For clearly the Kinge and his partic could nott have come in uppon those termes that hee is come[to] in [on], if this very Army did nott engage for him; and I verily thinke that the House had nott made another addresse, if itt had nott bin said that itt was the desire of the Army, and the Army were engaged to itt. Therefore I say I hope men will have charitable opinions of other men. For my parte I thinke I shall never doe any thinge against conscience, and I shall have those hopes of others. That which is deare unto mee is my freedome. Itt is that I would enjoy, and I will enjoy if I can. For my owne parte I hope there is noe such distance betwixt these Gentlemen as is imagin'd, butt they will heare reason that may convince them out of itt. I doe verily beleive they are soe farre from a disunion that they will bee advis'd by this Coancill in generall, or by any honest man of this Councill in particular. I have nott the same apprehensions that two or three dayes will undoe us, butt I thinke a very little delay will undoe us; and therefore I should onely desire, (itt may bee because I have spoken some other may answer mee) the lesse wee speake itt may bee the better. And as this Agitator whom<sup>a</sup> I never saw before, said that hee will use his interest, I hope that God will doe somethinge in that for our next Meeting to morrow, that when wee doe meete wee shall have a very happy union.

Buffe.coate.

That hee could breake Engagements in case they [were] proved unjust and that itt might [so] appeare to his conscience. That whatsoever hopes or obligations I should bee bound unto, if afterwards God should reveale himself, I would breake itt speedily, if itt were an 100 a day; and in that sence wee deliver'd our sence.

<sup>a</sup> MS. "whence."



Mr. Wildman.

Provided, that what is done tends to destruction, either self destruction or to [the destruction of] my neighbour especially. Unlawfull Engagements [are] Engagements against duty, and an Engagement to any person to bring him in such a way as hee may bee enabled to engage, itt is that which may tend to destruction.<sup>a</sup>

Lieut. Generall.

I thinke clearly you were understood to putt itt upon an issue where there is clearly a case of destruction, publique destruction, and ruine; and I thinke this will bringe itt into consideration whether or noe our Engagements have really in them that that hath publique destruction and ruine necessarily following? or whether or noe wee may nott give way too much to our owne doubts or feares? and the issue will bee<sup>b</sup> whether itt bee lawfull to breake a covenant upon our owne doubts and feares? I thinke [best] if wee agree to deferre the debate, to nominate a Committee.

Col. Rainborow.

One worde. I am of another opinion. Nott that the Engagements of the Army are look't upon as destructive, butt the nott-performance of the Engagements of the Army is that which is destructive.

Cofm. Ireton.

I thinke Mr. Wildman's conclusion is, that they are destructive because they are destructive to our neighbours.

Mr. Wildman.

That if an Engagement were such itt does nott binde.

<sup>a</sup> Perhaps "to engage us to that which may tend to the destruction of others."

<sup>b</sup> Four words transferred from two lines below.



Com. Ireton.

Then if itt were a compliance, or such a Meeting nott for a Law butt for satisfaction, since wheras the only ground which the thinge seemes to mee to bee represented that these Gentlemen thinke that there owne agreement is soe cleare, soe infallibly just and right, that. I doe thinke those Gentlemen have nott soe much ground of confidence to each parte of that agreement as itt lies there, that whatever goes about to take itt from them, or whatever does nott agree to itt, is a thinge unlawfull, butt somethinge may bee seene in that if you come, in the Engagement of itt; and therfore in that relation, and nott your owne principalls that you would admitt of soe much conference as to question itt.<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Lockyer.

I have gather'd from two men's mouthes, that destruction is somethinge neere, and the cause of the destruction as they understand is the going of the proposalls to the Kinge. I thinke itt were very necessary that if itt bee true, as is suppos'd, the proposalls may bee brought hither when they doe goe, that wee may see what they are.

Lieut. Generall.

The Question is whether the propositions will save us, or [whether they will] nott destroy us. This discourse concludes nothing.

<sup>a</sup> The report is so fragmentary that it is difficult to follow Ireton's argument. It seems to me to be this. "If your compliance to the meeting we desire means a meeting for mutual satisfaction and not one in which you are to give us the law, we ought to discuss then the question whether our engagements are of the kind you say. But it seems to me that the only ground on which you base your demands is that your 'Agreement' is so clear, so just, and so right that there is no need to discuss it. However, if you will come to the meeting, we shall be able to examine into your 'Agreement,' and therefore I hope you will come and allow us to discuss it."





Capt. Merriman.

One partie feares, That the Kinge will rise by the proposalls, another that hee will loose.

I thinke that most mens eyes are open to see that they are like to prove a broken reede, and that your charriott wheelles doe move heavily, and that this Engagement which is the ground of most of your discourse.<sup>a</sup> You both desire a succession of Parliaments. The fundamentall businesse of itt is the desire of most of this Councill, to have this Parliament that itt might nott be perpetuated and I thinke when.

That this Oedipus riddle is un-open'd, and this Gordian knott untied, and the enemies of the same, and the spiritt of God are the same in both, and the principles of both are the same. You have both promised to free the people, which you may doe by taking off tythes and other Antichristian yoakes upon them, and [to] give contents to the souldiers, and I hope that when you meete together itt will bee for good, and not for evill.

Bufte-Coate.

Wheras this Gentleman that wee have requested to come alonge with us hath declar'd some parte of their resolutions with us, and wee are resolved that wee will have the peace of the Kingedome if wee can, and yett notwithstanding if a furtherance<sup>b</sup> for the manner of procuring of itt is what God shall direct unto us, I would nott have you judge that wee will deny that Light, till that you know what wee will doe. Noe man can judge soe of any man. A man cannott bee called to bee [of] a peremptory will or self willed, and

<sup>a</sup> Merriman's argument seems to be something like this :

"And I think that when this Oedipus riddle is unopened and this Gordian knot untied, you will find that as to this engagement, which is the ground of most of your discourse, the fundamental business of it is the desire of most of this Council. You both desire a succession of Parliaments, and to have this Parliament that it might not be perpetuated, and the principles of both are the same, and the spirit of God the same in both, and the enemies of both the same. You have both promised to free the people, etc." "Engagement" seems to be a mistake for "Agreement."

<sup>b</sup> Probably should be "further answer" or "further guidance."



and come resolved nolens volens [till you know what he will do].  
Wee desire that better thoughts may bee of us.

Lieut. Chillenden.

I hope that these Gentlemen of the Five Regiments their ends are good, and hope their hearts doe tend to peace ; and I shall move this, that they would willingly come to morrow, and joyne with us in our Councils together, and alsoe I shall humbly move, That after wee have sought God in the businesse, that God will make itt out to us, to see wherein wee have failed, and that their being with us, and our vigorous proceeding in itt, and these Gentlemen of the five Regiments they will manifest this by a sweete compliance in communicating Councils.

Lieut. Generall.

That which this Gentleman<sup>a</sup> hath moved I like exceeding well ; hee hath fully declar'd himself concerning the freedome of their spiritt as to principles. In generall they aime att peace and safetie, and really I am perswaded in my conscience itt is their aime [to act] as may bee most for the good of the people, for really if that bee nott the supream [aim]<sup>b</sup> of us under God, (the good of the people) our principles fall. Now if that bee in your spiritts and our spiritts, itt remaines onely that God shew us the way, and lead us [in] the way, which I hope hee will. And give mee leave [to add] that there may bee some prejudices uppon some of your spiritts, and [uppon] such men that doe affect your way, that they may have some jealousies and apprehensions that wee are wedded and glewed to formes of Governement; soe that whatsoever wee may pretend, itt is in vaine for [you] to speake to us, or to hope for any agreement from us to you. And I beleive some such apprehensions as [that we are engaged to] some parte of the Legislative power of the Kingdome, where itt may rest besides in the Commons of the Kingdome. You will finde that wee are

<sup>a</sup> i.e. "Buffcoat."

<sup>b</sup> MS. good.



farre from being so particularly engaged to anythinge to the prejudice of this—further then the notorious engagements that the world takes notice of—that wee should nott concurre with you that the foundation and supremacy is in the people, radically in them, and to bee sett downe by them in their representations.<sup>a</sup> And if wee doe see [concur, we may also concur] for that that does remayne, how wee may run to that end that wee all aime att, and therefore lett us onely name the Committee.

Lieut. Col. Goffe.

You were pleased to say that somethinge which should bee offer'd by these Gentlemen<sup>b</sup> gave you another occasion of the Meeting, if itt were onely design'd to lie uppon you. I hope that you did nott conceive. that any such ground did lie in my brest. I would speake this worde to the quickening of us to a good hope. I am verily perswaded if God carry us out to meete sincerely, as with free spiritts to open ourselves before the Lord, wee may bee found going on according to his will. I desire such prejudices may bee laid aside.

Mr. Allen.

A Meeting is intended to morrow; butt that wee may fully end, I would humbly offer to you whether these Gentlemen have a power to debate; and if they have nott, that they may have recourse to them that sent them, to see what [powers] they will give [them], that wee may offer our reasons and judgement uppon the thinge, and act<sup>c</sup> uppon that principle uppon which wee act<sup>c</sup>. If wee unite and agree to itt, itt will putt on other thinges. An agreement formally<sup>d</sup> made, wee must bee serious in itt, and to that end that wee

<sup>a</sup> Some people believe we are engaged to maintain the authority of the House of Lords. Waller asserts that Cromwell and Ireton privately entered into an engagement to maintain the rights of the House of Lords in August, 1647, when the nine Lords joined the Army. Vindication, p. 192.

<sup>b</sup> Clause transposed.

<sup>c</sup> Agree?

<sup>d</sup> MS. "formerly."



may have a full debate in itt. Otherwise itt will bee uselesse and endlesse our meeting.

Lieut. Generall.

That Gentleman sayes hee will doe what hee can to draw all or the most of them hither to bee heard to morrow; and I desire Mr. Wildman, that if they have any freinds that are of a loving spiritt, that would contribute to this businesse of a right understanding [they would come with him]. And I say noe more butt this, I pray God judge betweene you and us when wee doe meete, whether wee come with engaged spiritts to uppehold our owne resolutions and opinions, or whether wee shall lay downe ourselves to bee rul'd [by Him] and that which hee shall communicate.

Col. Rainborow.

Hee did tell you hee would improve his interest, which is as full satisfaction to what Mr. Allen sayes as could bee, if they shall come nott to doe, butt I hope they will come to full power, nott to debate. I thinke there needes noe more.<sup>a</sup>

#### Names of the Committee.

Lieut. Generall.	Col. Okey.
Coñ. Generall.	„ Tichborne.
Col. Rainborow.	Mr. Sexby.
Sir Hardresse Waller.	„ Allen.
Col. Rich.	„ Lockyer.
Adj. Generall Deane.	„ Clarke.
Col. Scrope.	Lt. Generall Hammond.
„ Thomlinson.	Mr. Stenson.
„ Overton.	„ Underwood.

To conferre with the Agitators of the five regiments, and such gentlemen as shall come with them about the "Agreement" now brought in, and their own declarations and engagements.

<sup>a</sup> May be paraphrased: "I hope they will come, if they shall come, with full power not to debate only but to do."





Putney, October 29, 1647.

Att the Meeting of the officers for calling uppon God, according to the appointment of the Generall Councill, after some discourses of Commissary Cowling, Major White, and others.

Capt. Clarke.

Wee have bin heere as wee say seekeing of God, though truly hee is nott farre from every one of us; and wee have said in the presence of God, as out of his presence wee cannott goe, that wee have none in heaven in comparison of him, nor none wee have even in earth in comparison of him. I wish our hearts does nott give us the lie, for truly had that bin a truth, I meane a truth in our carriages, wee should nott have bin soe lost this day. Had wee given eare to the inspiring worde of Christ, and had nott given ourselves to the false prophett within us, certainly God would have kindled that light within us, and [we] should have gone [on] and submitted to his will; and should nott have bin troubled or harassed as wee are with troubles and amazements, butt must have gone with God as hee hath allotted to us. What is the reason that wee finde the light and glory of God eclypsed from our eyes this day? Truly wee may finde this silence within us the cause of every evil sought after;<sup>a</sup> and lett us butt search our owne spiritts with patience, and looke by the light<sup>b</sup> of God within us, and wee shall finde that wee have submitted the spiritt of God unto the candle of reason, whereas reason should have bin subservient unto the spiritt of God. Wee are troubled when our owne reasons tell us, that this is the way, and wee are careless to seeke the way, or that true light Christ in us which is the way. Wee are apt to say, all of us, that if wee seeke that<sup>c</sup> first, the later first, the first<sup>d</sup> will nott bee wanting; butt truly, wee have sought the first last, and therefore the first is wanting, and before this light can take place againe that darke-

<sup>a</sup> Clause transferred from three lines above.

<sup>c</sup> *i. e.* "the way."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "candle."

<sup>d</sup> *i. e.* "the light."



nesse must bee removed. And first within us our lust, that candle of reason,<sup>a</sup> which doth seduce and intice us to wander from God, must bee eaten out of us by the spiritt of God, and when there is noe place for lust, there is place enough for the spiritt of God. If wee shall with resolutions and humility of spiritt nott say, butt doe, as the children of Israell used to doe many times when they were in distresse—many times they cryed unto the Lord—if wee shall doe as wee professe before God this day, that is, lay downe our reason, lay downe our goods, lay downe all wee have att the feete of God, and lett God worke his will in us that wee may bee buried with God in our spiritts; I doubt nott butt the appearances of God will bee more glorious, and I doubt nott butt there will bee that contentednesse in spiritt. Wee should desire noe way, butt waite which way God will lead us. I say, wee should chuse noe way, butt if the spiritt of God lead us, wee should bee ready to submitt to the will of God. And therfore I desire, that, since this is in order to another meeting in the afternoone, wee may lay downe all att the feete of God, nott following our owne reasons, butt submitting unto that light which is lightened in us by his spirit.

After this Capt. Carter prayed.

Adj. Gen. Deane.

Motion for a Meeting att this place, the Quartermaster Generall's Quarters, to meete Munday, the Councill day, from 8 till 11, to seeke God, &c.

Lieut. Col. Goffe.<sup>b</sup>

That which I must now desire to expresse to you was partly occasioned by the thoughts that I had the last night, as being indeed kept awake with them a good while; and, hearing somethinge that did concurre with itt from one that spake since wee came to—

<sup>a</sup> M.S. "that candle of reason, and that first within us our lust."

<sup>b</sup> Goffe was one of the most enthusiastic of the Army leaders, and resembled the Fifth Monarchy men in his views.



gether, I feele some weight uppon my spiritt to expresse itt to you. That which was spoken enow [was] concerning the conjunction that is betweene Antichrist, or that mistery of iniquity in the world carried on by men that call themselves [the] church, that<sup>a</sup> certainly itt is with the conjunction of men in places of power or aucthority in the world, with kinges and great men. And truly my thoughts were much uppon itt this night, and itt appeares to me very clearly from that which God hath sett downe in his worde in the Booke of the Revelations,—which is that worde that wee are bid and commanded to study and to looke into, being the worde which God sent by his Angell to John to declare as thinges shortly to bee done. Now certainly this worke of Antichrist hath bin a worke of great standing, and, as itt was well observ'd, itt hath bin mixt with the church, and men that call themselves the church, the clergie, mixt with men of aucthoritie. Itt is said in the Revelation, that the kinges of the earth should give uppe their power unto the Beast, and the kinges of the earth have given uppe their power to the Pope. Butt some places that have seem'd to deny the Pope's supremacy, yett they have taken uppon them that which hath bin equivalent to that which the Pope himself holds forth. Truly I could bringe itt to this present Kingedome wherin wee are. 'Tis true the kinges have bin instruments to cast off the Pope's supremacy, butt wee may see if they have nott putt themselves into the same state.<sup>b</sup> Wee may see itt in that title which the kinge hath, "Defender of the Faith," butt more especially in that canonicall prayer which the clergie used, "In all causes, and over all persons as well Ecclesiasticall as Civill [supreme]." Certainly, this is a mistery of iniquity. Now Jesus Christ his worke in the last dayes is to destroy this mistery of iniquity; and because itt is so interwoven and intwisted in the interest of States, certainly in that overthrow of the mistery of iniquity by Jesus Christ, there must bee great alterations of states. Now the worde doth hold out in the Revelation, that in this worke of Jesus Christ hee shall have a

• MS. "yett."

<sup>b</sup> i. e. "into the place of the Pope."



companie of Saints to follow him, such as are chösen, and called, and faithfull.<sup>a</sup> Now itt is a scruple amonge the saints, how farre they should use the sworde, yett God hath made use of them in that worke. Many of them have bin imployed these five or six yeares. Yett whatsoever God shall imploy us in, I could wish this were laid to heart by us, that, as wee would bee called the chosen and faithfull that will follow Christ wheresoever hee goes, lett us tremble att the thought that wee should bee standing in a direct opposition against Jesus Christ in the worke that hee is about. Lett us nott bee twisted amongst such kinde of compartinges where there shall bee a mystery of iniquity sett uppe by outward power, and that wee should bee the instruments of giving any life or strength to that power. And I wish [we may lay this to heart], and I beleive itt may somewhat tend to the worke by the way; because wee are to hold out the will of God for the time to come, and to bee humbled for what wee have done against itt. Lett us inquire whether some of the actions that wee have done of late, some of the thinges that wee have propounded of late, doe nott crosse the worke of God in these particulars; because in our proposing thinges wee doe endeavour to sett uppe that power which God would nott sett uppe againe. Itt hath bin hinted already. I meane in our compliance with that partie which God hath ingaged us to destroy. Wee intended nothing butt civility, butt I wish they were nott in some measure compliances; and if I mistake nott there are ways which God hath laid open to us, wherby wee may lay aside that compliance.

Butt this is nott all that I would speake, because God hath called forth my spiritt to unity. What wee doe according to the will of God will nott tend to division. This I speake concerning compliance may bee thought to reflect uppon some particular persons more then other some, soe on the other hand I desire to speake somethinge that may concerne some persons that may stand, or att least may seeme to stand, in direct opposition to us; and truly I wish wee may bee very wary what wee doe, and lett

<sup>a</sup> See Revelation, chaps. xvii., xviii., xix., xx., especially chap. xvii., verses 13, 14.







us take heede of rejecting any of the saints of God before God rejects them. If God bee pleased to shew any of his servants that hee hath made use of as great instruments in his hand as those that God hath blest in them, that God hath blest them, and this hath bin the greatest instrument of the ruine of sin and corruption in this Army. Lett us bee wary and consider what wee have to doe in that kinde; and I spake this the rather because I was sensible of some personall reflections that did nott argue the workinges of God [so much] as the workinges of passions in us. Now the worke of the spiritt is, that wee doe pull downe all workes [not] of the spiritt whatsoever; and therfore I desire that as in the presence of God wee may take heede of all things which may tend to dissunion, and that wee may nott despise those who may have some things in their hands to contribute for the worke of God. And there is another thinge: if wee have lost the opportunity of appearing against enemies, lett us take heede, when wee bee sensible of God's displeasure, that wee doe nott run before hee bids us goe a 2<sup>d</sup> time. There is a place which is very remarkable, Numbers xiv., where the spies were sent to the Land of Canaan; and when they came back the hearts of the people were discouraged. God was displeased att this, and hee discover'd itt in some such way as hee did this day. Uppon a suddaine there was a partie that would goe uppe, and fight against the Amalekites; and att such a time when God would nott have them goe uppe. "Though you did sin against the Lord in nott going att first," sayes Moses, "yett goe nott now uppe, for the Lord is nott amonge you, that yee bee nott smitten before your enemies."<sup>a</sup> Yett they did goe uppe unto the Hill Toppe, and were discomfited. I thinke wee have sinned in that wee did nott shew our courage and faithfulnessse to God. Lett us nott now in a kinde of heate run uppe and say, "wee will goe now;" because itt may bee there is a better opportunity that God will give us. And that wee may a little helpe us by our owne experiences, lett us remember how

<sup>a</sup> Numbers, xiv., 41, 42.



God hath dealt with this Army in our late proceedinges. There was some heavinesse in our proceedinges before the Citty,<sup>a</sup> as was thought by some; and itt was said by many, "Goe uppe, Goe uppe quicklie, and doe our worke." Butt lett us remember that God found a better season for us, then if wee had gone att first. Lett us consider whether this bee the best juncture of time for us to declare, and to throw off some of our freinds, when that they would have itt discover'd whether<sup>b</sup> God goes alonge with us. Lett this bee consider'd, that soe wee may bee humbled on the one hand, and breake off all unlawfull compliance with the enemies of God, soe on the other hand wee may stay, and take the company one of another, or rather the presence of God, [alonge with us]. And soe for the worke of the day, I wish there may bee a day of union amongst us; for itt may bee itt is the will of God that wee should waite uppon him therin to see what will bee the issue of a businesse that is now transacted; and if wee can trust God in this strait wee shall see him straight before us, if wee can bee of one minde. I wish this may bee consider'd, and if there be anything of God in itt, itt may be received.

Mr. Everard.<sup>c</sup>

This honourable Councill hath given mee great incouragement. Though I have many impediments in my speech, yett I thanke you that you will heare mee speake. I engaged myself yesterday to bringe the men to have a debate, and for that purpose I have prosecuted these my promises, and I have bin with them as many as I can finde; butt the most of them are dispersed, soe that I lost that opportunity which I would have enjoyed; butt neverthesse I hope you will take itt kindlie, that those that were there are

<sup>a</sup> Goffe refers to the debate of July 16, pp. 176-211.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "that."

<sup>c</sup> Everard was evidently the trooper before referred to as "buff-coat." Robert Everard of Cromwell's regiment was one of the signatories of the "Letter to the freeborn people of England," published with the agreement. There were several Everards in the Army, *v. Reliquiae Baxterianae*, p. 78.



come hither, and those two freinds that were with mee yesterday. Our ends are that wee desire yett once more a compliance in those thinges that wee propounded to you, butt if itt shall please God to open our eyes that wee can see itt, wee shall comply with you. For our desires are nothing butt (according to our first Declaration,)\* to follow our worke to deliver the Kingedome from that burthen that lies uppon us. For my parte I am butt a poore man, and unacquainted with the affaires of the Kingedome, yett this message God hath sent mee to you, that there is great expectation of suddaine destruction; and I would bee loath to fill uppe that with words. Wee desire your joynet consent to seeke out some speedy way for the releif of the Kingedome.

Lieut. Generall,

I thinke itt would nott bee amisse that those Gentlemen that are come would draw nigher.

I must offer this to your consideration, whether or noe wee, having sett aparte this morning to seeke God, and to gett such a preparednesse of heart and spiritt as might receive that, that God was minded to have imparted to us, and this having taken uppe all our time, all this day, and itt having bin soe late this last night as indeed itt was when wee brake uppe, and wee having appointed a committee to meete together to consider of that paper, and this Committee having had noe time or opportunity that I know of, nott soe much as a meeting, I make some scruple or doubt whether or noe itt is nott better,—[I know] that danger is imagined [near at hand], and indeed I thinke itt is,—butt bee the danger what itt will, our agreement in the businesse is much more [pressing] then the pressing of any danger, soe by that wee doe nott delay too.—That which I have to offer [is], whether or noe wee are [as] fitt to take uppe such a consideracion of these papers now as wee might bee to-morrow. Perhaps if these Gentlemen, which are butt few, and that Committee should meete together, and spend their time

\* The Army's Declaration of June 14, 1647.



together an houre or two the remainder of this afternoone, and all this company might meete about 9 or 10 a clock att furthest, and they [might] understand one another soe well, as wee might bee prepared for the generall meeting to have a more exact and particular consideration of thinges then [we can have] by a generall loose debate of thinges, which our Committee or att least many<sup>a</sup> of us have [not] had any, or att least nott many thoughts about.

Col. Rainborow,

Sir. I am sorry that the ill disposition of my body caused mee to goe to London last night, and [hindered me] from coming soe soone this morning as to bee with you in the duty you were about. Butt I hope that which hath bin said att this time, which I hope is a truth and sent from God, will soe worke uppon mee that I shall indeavour att least to carry my self soe that I may use all that interest I have to a right and quick understanding betweene us. And truly, Sir, to that present motion that hath bin made I confesse I have nothing against itt, butt onely the danger that lies uppon us; which truly (if wee may have leave to differ one from another) may in a moment overcome [us]. I hope wee shall all take one worde that was spoken to us by Lieut. Col. Goffe, and I thinke that nothing will conduce soe much [to union-as] that wee may have noe personall reflections. I thinke itt would have bin well if the Committee had mett, butt since all this company, or the greatest parte of them that have bin heere, have joyn'd in that duty which was on the former parte of the morning, I thinke there is nott much inconveniency that they may spend the other parte of the day with us. [That] if wee were satisfied ourselves uppon debate, and there should bee one partie, or one sort of men that are of a contrary judgement present, or others that should come over to us, itt would heerafter cost some time to know the reasons of their coming over. Therefore I thinke itt an advantage that it should

<sup>a</sup> MS. "any."







bee as publique, and as many as may bee present att itt. The debating this thus publicquely may bee an advantage unto us, and if wee finde at<sup>a</sup> after the multitude of people that are heere (that have bin spoken to) if wee finde that inconvenient, I doe nott doubt butt the Committee, when this company breakes uppe, may have two houres time together. Therefore I should desire, that since the Gentlemen and you are mett together to such an end and purpose, that you will follow to that end.

Mr. Everard.

That itt is not [fit] as I conceive to dispute any thing touching particulars, for all as I conceive doe seeke the kingedome's good. Lett us goe about the work, noe question butt we shall goe together. Butt if wee stand disputing the worke, much business will be. I desire this honourable Councill will pardon mee to make out some speedy way for the easing of us. I beseech you that you will let us now consider uppon that. I believe wee shall jumpe all in one with itt. If wee doe nott fall upon some extraordinary wayes between—Some lawes with us that will prick us to the heart, wee must winke att them, nott that I desire that wee should seeke to ruinate any wholesome lawes, butt such as will nott stand with the wholesome peace of the Kingedome.<sup>b</sup>

Capt. Awdeley.

I shall desire to second that Gentleman's motion. That while wee debate wee doe nothing. I am confident that whilest you are doing you will all agree together, for itt is idlenesse that hath begott this rust, and this gangrene amongst us.

Lieut. Generall.

I thinke itt is true. Lett us bee doing, butt lett us bee united

<sup>a</sup> MS. "that."

<sup>b</sup> In the MS. Everard's speech is extremely confused, as fragments of different sentences are mixed together. Three clauses have been moved.



in our doing. If there remayne nothing else butt present action,<sup>a</sup> I thinke wee neede nott bee in Councill heere.<sup>a</sup> Butt if wee doe nott rightly and clearly understand one another before wee come to act, if wee doe nott lay a foundation of action before wee doe act, I doubt whether wee shall act unanimously or noe. And seriously, as before the Lord, I knew noe such end of our speech the last night, and appointing another Meeting, butt in order to a more perfect understanding of one another, what wee should doe, and that wee might bee agreed uppon some principalls of action. And truly if I remember rightly, uppon the delivery of the paper that was yesterday, this was offer'd, that the thinges [that] are now uppon us are thinges of difficulty, the thinges are therfore thinges that doe deserve consideration, because there might bee great weight in the consequences; and itt was then offer'd, and I hope is still soe in all our hearts, that wee are nott troubled with the consideration of the difficulty, nor with the consideration of any thinge butt this; that if wee doe difficult thinges wee may see that the thinges wee doe have the will of God in them, that they are nott onely plausible and good thinges but seasonable and honest thinges fitt for us to doe. And therfore itt was desir'd that wee might consider, before wee could come to these papers, in what condition wee stood in respect of former Engagements, however some may bee satisfied that there lie none uppon us, or none butt such as itt's duty to breake, itt's sin to keepe. Therefore that was yesterday premised [that] there may bee a consideration had of them—and I may speake itt as in the presence of God that I know nothing of any Engagements, butt I would see liberty in any man as I would bee free from bondage to any thinge that should hinder mee from doing my duty—and therfore that was first in consideration. If our obligation bee nothing, or if itt bee weake, I hope itt will receive satisfaction why itt should bee laid aside, that the thinges that wee speake of are nott obliged. And therfore if itt

<sup>a</sup> The MS. inserts after "action," "I meane doing in that kind, doing in that sort," and after "heere," "such kind of action, action of that nature."



please you I thinke itt will bee good for us to frame our discourse to what wee were, where wee are, what wee are bound to, what wee are free to; and then I make noe question, butt that this may conclude what is betweene these Gentlemen in one afternoone. I doe nott speake this to make obligations more then what they were before; butt as before the Lord. You see what they are,<sup>a</sup> and when wee looke uppon them wee shall see if<sup>b</sup> we have bin in a wronge way, and I hope itt will call uppon us for the more double diligence.

Col. Rainborow.

I shall desire a word or two before that. I did exceedingly mistake myself the last night that uppon what wee say now was determined.<sup>c</sup> I look't uppon the Committee as a Committee to looke over this paper, to see whether itt were a paper that did hold forth justice and righteousness, whether itt were a paper that honest men could close with. Butt truly I am of opinion that if wee should spend ten dayes time in going over that Booke, and debate what Engagements wee have broke, or whether wee have broke any or noe, or whether we have kept our Engagements, itt would nott come to the businesse, neither would itt prevent that evill that I thinke will overtake us before wee fall into the right way,<sup>d</sup> unlesse God in abundant manner prevent;—and I could give you reasons for itt which this day I have from very good hands, and which I think is not prudent to declare soe publicly as this is.—Lett us goe the quickest way to worke; and truly, Sir, I have thought that the wounds of the Kingedome, and the difficulties that wee are false into, and our cure is become soe great that wee would bee willing all of us to heale the sore, and [not] to skin itt over butt leave itt unwholesome and corrupt att the bottome.

<sup>a</sup> Cromwell at this point seems to have produced the book of *Army Declarations*, printed by Matthew Simmons in September, 1647.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "that."

<sup>c</sup> i. e. "that which you say now was then determined upon."

<sup>d</sup> Transferred from two lines below.



Therefore for my parte I doe conclude in my spiritt, for my owne parte I [did] say this yesterday uppon another occasion, I will nott say positively that wee are to take the course prescribed in that paper att present, butt if wee doe nott sett uppon the worke— Since in order to that there is a thinge call'd an Agreement which the people have subscribed, and being that is ready to our hands, I desire that you would reade itt and debate itt, whether itt bee a way to deliver us yett or noe; and if itt bee . . . . [that you would accept it], and if nott that you would thinke of some other way.

Lieut. Generall.

I shall butt offer this to you. Truly I hope that wee may speake our hearts freelie heere; and I hope that there is nott such an evill amongst us as that wee could or would exercise our witts, or our cunning to vaile over any doublenesse of heart that may possibly bee in us. I hope, having bin in such a presence as wee have bin this day, wee doe nott admitt of such a thought as this into our hearts. And therefore if the speaking of that wee did speake before, and to which I shall speake againe, with submission to all that heare mee—if the declining to consider this paper may have with any man a working<sup>a</sup> uppon his spiritt through any jealousie that itt aimes att delay; truly I can speake itt as before the Lord itt is nott att all in my heart, butt sincerely this is the ground of itt. I know this paper doth contayne many good thinges in itt, butt this is the onely thinge that doth stick with mee, the desiring to know my freedome to this thinge. Though this doth suggest that that may bee the bottome of all our evils—and I will nott say against itt because I doe nott thinke against itt—though this doth suggest the bottome of all our evils, yett for all of us to see our selves free to this [so] as wee may unanimously joyne uppon this, either to agree to this, or to adde more to itt, [or] to alter [it] as wee shall agree, this impediment lies in our

<sup>a</sup> MS. "worke."







way, [even] if every man bee satisfied with itt butt my self. That this is the first thing that is to bee consider'd, that wee should consider in what condition wee stand to our former obligations, that if wee bee cleare wee may goe off cleare, if nott wee may nott goe on. If I bee nott come off [clear] with what obligations are made, if I bee nott free to act to whatsoever you shall agree uppon, I thinke this is my duty: that I should nott in the least study either to retard your worke or hinder itt, or to act against itt, butt wish you as much successe as if I were free to act with you. I desire wee may view over our obligations and Engagements, that soe wee may bee free [to act together] uppon honest and cleare grounds, if this bee [possible].

My desire — (Col. Rainborow offering to speake.)

Lieut. Gen.

I have butt one worde to prevent you in, and that is for imminent danger. Itt may bee possibly soe [imminent] that [it] may nott admitt of an houres debate, nor nothing of delay. If that bee soe, I thinke that's above all law and rule to us.

Col. Rainborow.

I would offer one worde, for I thinke this will bringe us to noe issue att all. Both yesterday and to-day, and divers times, wee have had cautions given us to have care of divisions. I doe speake itt to avoide deviation; that wee may nott att this time consider the Engagements. If you, or any other Gentlemen, are of opinion that you have nott broke them, and then some others are of opinion that you have broke them, wee may fall into contests which may occasion deviation. Butt if you reade this, and finde it not against the Engagement, that will bee the worke. If it be nott against the Engagement, you will finde that in itt which you will finde from your Engagements, and I have somethinge to say to the particulars in itt.



Cōm: Cowling.

I shall onely offer this, the necessity of expedition if the people shall consider the necessities that they and we are in. Wee live now uppon free-quarter, and wee have that against our wills.<sup>a</sup> Those that know what belonges to Armies well know, none are to quarter souldiers, butt those that are within soe many miles; and if soe bee too that the owner of the house should refuse to open his doores wee are prevented to pay our quarters by those that might have supplied us. I have seene this paper, and uppon second reading of itt I sett my hand to itt, that wee may nott lie as drones to devoure their families. I am ready where I am called by my superiours. If nott, the Lord bee mercifull to mee.

Major White.<sup>b</sup>

I should offer one worde to this Councill: I thinke itt is in all our mindes to deliver the Kingdome; if there bee particular engagements wee must lay them downe to lay downe publique good.

Lieut. Generall.

I desire to know what the Gentleman meanes concerning particular Engagements; if hee meanes those that are in this Booke? If those that are in this booke [they are the engagements of the Army]. Butt if hee meanes Engagements personall from particular persons, lett every man speake for himselfe. I speake for myself, I disavowe all, and I am free to act, free from any such —

Major White.

I conceive that [if] they bee such as are past by the Representative<sup>c</sup> of the Army, I thinke the Army is bound in conscience to goe on with them.

<sup>a</sup> See the *Case of the Army Truly Stated*, p. 9.

<sup>b</sup> Can hardly be Major Francis White, as he had been expelled from the Council.

<sup>c</sup> The Representative of the Army, *i. e.*, the General Council established in pursuance of the Engagement of June 5, 1647, consisting of those general officers who



Col. Hewson.

All the Engagements that have bin declar'd for have bin by the Representative of the Army, and whether or noe that hath nott bin the cause of this cloude that hanges over our heads. I thinke if wee lay our hands over our hearts wee may nott much mistake itt.

Mr. Pettus.

According to your Honours desires yesterday, I am come in heere to give in my reasons why I doe approve of this paper, this Agreement, [and] to receive reasons why itt should nott bee agreed to. For the particular Engagements of the Army I am ignorant of them, butt, if itt please this Councill to lett this bee read, that either the matter or manner of itt may bee debated; and when any of the matter shall come to touch uppon any Engagement so as to breake any Engagement, that then the Engagement may bee shownc; and if that Engagement shall prove just, and this unjust, this must bee rejected, or if this just, and these Engagements unjust [then they must be rejected]. I desire all those that are free from itt in their spiritts may act farther; and those that thinke themselves bound uppe soe<sup>a</sup> to acquiesce in itt, as that they would bee pleased to rest satisfied in the actions of other men that are att libertie to act for the peace and freedome of the Kingedome.

Coñ. Generall.

Truly I would, if I did know of any personall, particular Engagements, if I were personally or particularly engaged myself, which I professe, as in the presence of God, I know nott for myself.<sup>b</sup> I myself am nott under any Engagement in relation to that businesse that the great Question lies uppon—I neede nott name itt—more then what all men know that have scene and read, and in the Armie

had concurred in that engagement together with two commission officers and two privates for each regiment.

<sup>a</sup> MS. "soe as to acquiesce in it."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "for I know nott myself."



consented to, those thinges that were published. Butt if I were under any particular Engagement, itt should nott att all stand in any other man's way. If I were under [any particular engagement] I say, that I could bee convinc't of was ill and unlawfull for mee to enter into, my Engagement should nott stand in any other man's way that would doe any thinge that I could bee convinc't of to bee better. And till God hath brought us all to that temper of spiritt that wee can bee contented to bee nothing in our reputations, [in our] esteemes, in our power—truly I may goe a little higher and say, till the reputation and honour of the Army and such thinges become nothing to us, nott soe as to [let] the consideration of them, to stand att all in the way to hinder us from what wee see God calling us to, or to prompt us on to what wee have nott a cleare call from him—wee are nott brought to that temper wherin I can expect any renewing of that presence of God that wee have sought. Therefore for my parte I professe first, I desire noe [particular] Engagements [may be considered]. If there were particular Engagements of any particular man whatsoever, as to the leading of the Army one way or other, I desire they may nott bee consider'd; butt lett that man looke to himself for what justice lies uppon him, and what justice will follow him. Neither doe I care for the Engagements of the Army soe much for the Engagements<sup>a</sup> sake, butt I looke uppon this Army as having carried with itt hitherto the name of God, and having carried with it hitherto the interest of the people of God, and the interest which is God's interest, the honour of his name, the good, and freedome, and safetie, and happinesse of his people. And for my parte I thinke that itt is that that is the onely thinge for which God hath appeared with us, and led us, and gone before us, and honoured us, and taken delight to worke by us. I say, that very thinge, that wee have carried the name of God, and I hope nott in shew butt in reallity, professing to act, and to worke, as wee have thought in our judgements and consciences, [with] God to lead us;

<sup>a</sup> MS. "Armie's."





professing to act to those ends that wee have thought to bee answerable and suitable to the minde of God, soe farre as itt hath bin knowne to us. Wee have professed to indeavour to follow the counsell of God, and to have him President in our Councils; and I hope itt hath bin soe in our hearts. That wee have bin ready to follow his guidance; and I know itt hath bin soe in many things against our owne reasons, where wee have seene evidently God calling us. That wee have bin carried on with a confidence in him, wee have made him our trust, and wee have held forth his name, and wee have owned his hand towards us. These are the things I say which God hath in some degree and measure wrought his people in this Army uppe to, in some degree of sincerity; and this itt is, as I said before, that I account hath bin [the cause] that God hath taken delight in, amongst us, to dwell with us, to bee with us, and to appeare with us, and will manifest his presence to us. And therefore by this meanes, and by that appearance of God amongst us, the name and honour of God, the name and reputation of the people of God, and of that Gospell that they professe, is deeply, and dearly, and nearly concern'd in the good or ill manage of this Army, in their good or ill carriage; and therefore for my parte I professe itt, that's the onely thinge to mee. [It is] nott to mee soe much as the vainest, or lightest thinge you can imagine, whether there bee a kinge in England, or noe, whether there bee Lords in England or noe. For whatever I finde the worke of God tending to I should desire quietly to submitt to. If God saw itt good to destroy, nott only Kinge and Lords, butt all distinctions of degrees—nay if itt goe further, to destroy all property, that there's noe such thinge left, that there bee nothing att all of Civill Constitution left in the Kingedome—if I see the hand of God in itt I hope I shall with quietnesse acquiesce, and submitt to itt, and nott resist itt. Butt still I thinke that God certainly will soe leade those that are his, and I hope too hee will soe lead this Army that they may nott incurre sin, or bring scandall uppon the name of God, and the



name of the people of God that are both soe neerly concern'd in what this Army does. And therefore itt is my wish, uppon those grounds that I before declar'd which made the consideration of this Army deare and tender to mee,<sup>a</sup> that wee may take heede, [that] wee consider first Engagements, soe farre as they are Engagements publicquely of the Army. I doe nott speake of particular [engagements] I would nott have them consider'd, if there bee any. And secondly I would have us consider of this: that our wayes and workinges and actinges, and the actings of the Army, soe farre as the Councils of those prevaile in itt who have anythinge of the spiritt of Jesus Christ may appeare suitable to that spiritt. And as I would not have this Army in relation to those great concernements (as I said before) the honour of God, and the honour and good name of his people and of religion, as I would nott have itt to incurre the scandall of neglecting Engagements, and laying aside all consideration of Engagements, and of juggling, and deceiving, and deluding the world, making them beleive thinges in times of extreamity which they never meant, soe I would nott have us to give the world occasion to thinke that wee are the disturbers of the peace of mankind. I say, I would nott give them just occasion to thinke soe; nay I would have them have just cause to thinke that wee seeke peace with all men, and wee seeke the good of all men, and wee seeke the destruction of none that wee can say; and in generall I would wish and study, and that my hearte is bent to, that the Councils of this Army may appeare acted by that wisdom that is from above, which wee know how itt is charact'd. Itt is first pure, and then peaceable, and then gentle, and easie to bee intreated, and wee finde many characters of the same wisdom, and other fruites of the same spiritt that all still run clearely that way. Therefore I say, I wish that wee may have noe otherwise a consideration of Engagements or any thinge of that nature. That which makes mee presse itt is chiefly, that consideracion of the concernement of the honour of

<sup>a</sup> Two lines moved from the previous sentence, and several words omitted.



God and his people in the Army; and as I prize them soe I press<sup>a</sup> that in all things whatsoever, though wee were free and had noe Engagements, we doe act as Christians, as men guided by the spiritt of God, as men having that wisdom [that is] from above, and [is] soe characteriz'd.

To the method of our proceeding. Having exprest what I desire may bee all our cares, I cannott but thinke that this will bee clearest, because I see it is soe much prest and insisted upon: nott [to go]<sup>b</sup> to read what our Engagements are, butt [to] read the paper that is presented heere, and consider upon it, what good, and what matter of justice and righteousness there is in itt, and whether there bee anythinge of injustice or unrighteousnesse, either in itt self, or in reference to our Engagements. Soe farre I thinke our Engagements ought to bee taken into consideration: that soe farre as wee are engaged to a thinge that was nott unlawfull to engage to, and I should bee sad to thinke them soe, wee should thinke ourselves bound nott to act contrary to those Engagements. And that wee may consider of the particulars of this paper, first, whether they bee good and just, that is, nott ill, nott unjust; and then further to consider whether they bee soe essentially due and right as that they should bee contended for, for then that is some kinde of checke to lesse Engagements; and for such thinges, if wee finde any, light Engagements [may] bee cast off and nott consider'd.<sup>c</sup> Butt if wee finde any matter in them that, though itt bee just, though itt bee good, is nott probable to bee soe beneficiall and advantageous, nott to few, butt to many, that withall wee may consider whether itt bee soe much a duty, and wee bee soe much bound to itt by the thinge itt self as that noe Engagement can take us from itt. And<sup>d</sup> if wee finde any thinges that, if they bee just or good, [are] yett nott soe obligatorie or of [such] necessity to the Kingedome, [but that] the Kingedome may stand without them, then I thinke itt being [so] nott absolutely lawfull to act for them.

<sup>a</sup> MS. "prize all wheresoever."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "going."

<sup>c</sup> The last sixteen words are transferred from six lines lower.

<sup>d</sup> MS. "but."



Major Rainborow.

I desire wee may come to that end wee all strive after. I humbly desire you will fall uppon that which is the Engagement of all, which is the rights and freedomes of the people, and lett us see how farre wee have made sure to them a right and freedome, and if any thing bee tendred as to that. And when that Engagement is gone through then lett us consider of those that are of greater weight.

The Paper called the Agreement read.

Afterwards the first Article read by itt self.<sup>a</sup>

Commissary Ireton.

The exception that lies in itt is this. Itt is said: "The peopple of England" etc. . . . they are to bee distributed "according to the number of the inhabitants;" and this doth make mee thinke that the meaning is, that every man that is an inhabitant is to bee equally consider'd, and to have an equall voice in the election of

<sup>a</sup> The first article is, "That the people of England, being at this day very unequally distributed by Counties, Cities, and Burroughs, for the election of their Deputies in Parliament ought to be more indifferently proportioned, according to the number of the Inhabitants; the circumstances whereof, for number, place, and manner, are to be set down before the end of this present Parliament."

The supporters of the Agreement, as the debate shows, advocated manhood suffrage. Ireton however, and those responsible for the "Heads of the Proposals of the Army," published in August, had merely advocated more equal electoral districts.

"That the Elections of the Commons for succeeding Parliaments may be distributed to all counties, or other parts or divisions of the Kingdom, according to some rule of equality or proportion, so as all Counties may have a number of Parliament Members allowed to their choice, proportionable to the respective rates they bear in the common charges and burthens of the Kingdome, or according to some other rule of equalitie or proportion, to render the House of Commons as near as may be an equall representative of the whole; and in order thereunto, that a present consideration be had to take off the Elections of Burgesses for poor, decayed, or inconsiderable townes, and to give some present addition to the number of Parliament Members for great counties, that have now less than their due proportion, to bring all at present, as near as may be, to such a rule of proportion as aforesaid."







the representors, those persons that are for the Generall Representative; and if that bee the meaning then I have somethinge to say against itt. But if itt bee onely that those people, that by the Civill Constitution of this kingedome, which is originall and fundamentall, and beyond which I am sure noe memory of record does goe—(Nott before the Conquest).<sup>a</sup> Butt before the Conquest itt was soe. Iff itt bee intended, that those that by that Constitution that was before the Conquest, that hath bin beyond memory, such persons that have bin before [by] that Constitution [the electors], should be [still] the electors, I have noe more to say against itt.

Col. Rainborow.

Moved, That others might have given their hands to itt.

Capt. Denne.

Denied, That those that were sett of their Regiment that they were their hands.

Commissary Ireton.

Whether those men whose hands are to itt, or those that brought itt, doe know soe much of the matter, as [to know whether] they meane that all that had a former right of election [are to be electors], or [whether] those that had noe right before are to come in?

Commissary Cowling.

In the time before the Conquest, and since the Conquest, the greatest parte of the Kingedome was in vassalage.

Mr. Pettus.

Wee judge that all inhabitants that have nott lost their birth-right should have an equall voice in Elections.

Col. Rainborow.

I desir'd that those that had engaged in itt [should speak] for

<sup>a</sup> I take these words to be the remark of some interruptor, probably Cowling.



really I thinke that the poorest hee that is in England hath a life to live as the greatest hee; and therefore truly, Sir, I thinke itt's cleare, that every man that is to live under a Governement ought first by his owne consent to putt himself under that Governement; and I doe thinke that the poorest man in England is nott att all bound in a stricte sence to that Governement that hee hath not had a voice to putt himself under; and I am confident that when I have heard the reasons against itt, somethinge will bee said to answer those reasons, insoemuch that I should doubt whether he<sup>a</sup> was an Englishman or noe that should doubt of these thinges.

Commissary Ireton.

That's [the meaning of] this ["according to the number of the inhabitants."]

Give mee leave to tell you, that if you make this the rule I thinke you must flie for refuge to an absolute naturall Right, and you must deny all Civill Right; and I am sure itt will come to that in the consequence. This I perceive is prest as that which is soe essentiall and due,—the right of the people of this Kingedome, and as they are the people of this Kingedome, distinct and devided from other people,—as that wee must for this right lay aside all other considerations; this is soe just, this is soe due, this is soe right to them. And that those that they doe thus chuse must have such a power of binding all, and loosing all, according to those limitations; this is prest, as soe due, and soe just as [it] is argued, that itt is an Engagement paramount [to] all others: and you must for itt lay aside all others; if you have engaged any others you must breake itt. [We must] soe looke upon these as thus held out to us; soe itt was held out by the Gentleman that brought itt yesterday. For my parte I thinke itt is noe right att all. I thinke that noe person hath a right to an interest or share in the disposing or determining of the affaires of the Kingdome, and in chusing those that shall determine what lawes wee shall bee rul'd



by heere, noe person hath a right to this, that hath nott a permanent fixed interest in this Kingedome; and those persons together are properly the Represented of this Kingedome, and consequentlie are to make uppe the Representors of this Kingedome, who taken together doe comprehend whatsoever is of reall or permanent interest in the Kingedome. And I am sure I cannott tell what otherwise any man can say why a forraigner coming in amongst us—or as many as will coming in amongst us, or by force or otherwise settling themselves heere, or att least by our permission having a being heere—why they should nott as well lay claime to itt as any other. Wee talke of birthright. Truly [by] birthright there is thus much claime. Men may justly have by birthright, by their very being borne in England, that wee should nott seclude them out of England, that wee should nott refuse to give them aire, and place, and ground, and the freedome of the high wayes and other thinges, to live amongst us; nott [to] any man that is borne heere, though by his birth there come nothing att all to him that is parte of the permanent interest of this Kingedome. That I thinke is due to a man by birth. Butt that by a man's being borne heere hee shall have a share in that power that shall dispose of the lands heere, and of all thinges heere, I doe nott thinke itt a sufficient ground. I am sure if wee looke uppon that which is the utmost within man's view of what was originally the constitution of this Kingedome, [if wee] looke uppon that which is most radicall and fundamentall, and which if you take away there is noe man hath any land, any goods, [or] any civill interest, that is this: that those that chuse the Representors for the making of Lawes by which this State and Kingedome are to bee govern'd, are the persons who taken together doe comprehend the locall interest of this Kingedome; that is, the persons in whome all land lies, and those in Corporations in whome all trading lies. This is the most fundamentall Constitution of this Kingedome, which if you doe nott allow you allow none att all. This Constitution hath limitted and determined itt that onely those shall have voices in



Elections. Itt is true as was said by a Gentleman<sup>a</sup> neere mee, the meanest man in England ought to have [a voice in the election of the government he lives under]. . . . I say this, that those that have the the meanest locall interest, that man that hath butt fourty shillinges a yeare, hee hath as great voice in the Election of a Knight for the shire as hee that hath ten thousand a yeare or more, if hee had never soe much; and therfore there is that regard had to itt. Butt this still the Constitution of this Governement hath had an eye to — and what other Governement hath nott an eye to this? Itt doth nott relate to the interest of the Kingedome, if itt doe nott lay the foundation of the power that's given to the Representors in those who have a permanent and a locall interest in the Kingedome, and who taken altogetther doe comprehend the whole [interest of this kingdom]. If wee shall goe to take away this fundamentall parte of the civill constitution wee shall plainly goe to take away all property and interest that any man hath, either in land by inheritance, or in estate by possession, or any thing else. There is all the reason and justice that can bee if I will come to live in a Kingedome being a forraigner to itt, or live in a Kingedome having noe permanent interest in itt—if I will desire as a stranger, or claime as one freeborne heere, the ayre, the free passage of highwayes, the protection of lawes and all such things, if I will either desire them, or claime them, I (if I have noe permanent interest in that Kingdome), must submitt to those lawes and those rules which those shall choose who taken together doe comprehend the whole interest of the Kingedome.<sup>b</sup>

Col. Rainborow,

Truly, Sir, I am of the same opinion I was; and am resolved to keepe itt till I know reason why I should nott. I confesse my memory is bad, and therfore I am faine to make use of my penne.

<sup>a</sup> Rainborow.

<sup>b</sup> *i. e.*, "the laws and rule of those;" or possibly "the laws and rule which those shall choose who taken together," etc.





I remember that in a former speech<sup>a</sup> this Gentleman brought before this, hee was saying, that in some cases hee should nott value whether [there were] a Kinge or noe Kinge, whether Lords or noe Lords, whether a property or noe property. For my parte I differ in that. I doe very much care whether [there be] a Kinge or noe Kinge, Lords or noe Lords, property or noe property; and I thinke iff wee doe nott all take care wee shall all have none of these very shortly. Butt as to this present businesse. I doe heare nothing att all that can convince mee, why any man that is borne in England ought nott to have his voice in Election of Burgesses. Itt is said, that if a man have nott a permanent interest, hee can have noe claime, and wee must bee noe freer then the lawes will lett us to bee, and that there is noe Chronicle will lett us bee freer then that wee enjoy. Something was said to this yesterday. I doe thinke that the maine cause why Almighty God gave men reason, itt was, that they should make use of that reason, and that they should improve itt for that end and purpose that God gave itt them.<sup>b</sup> And truly, I thinke that halfe a loafe is better then none if a man bee an hungry, yett I thinke there is nothing that God hath given a man that any else can take from him. Therefore I say, that either itt must bee the law of God or the law of man that must prohibite the meanest man in the Kingdome to have this benefitt<sup>c</sup> as well as the greatest. I doe nott finde any thinge in the law of God, that a Lord shall chuse 20 Burgesses, and a Gentleman butt two, or a poore man shall chuse none. I finde noe such thinge in the law of nature, nor in the law of nations. Butt I doe finde, that all Englishmen must bee subject to English lawes, and I doe verily beleive, that there is noe man butt will say, that the foundation of all law lies in the people, and if [it

<sup>a</sup> p. 296.

<sup>b</sup> A vote, the right of exercising his reason by electing a representative.

<sup>c</sup> Rainbow's argument seems to be, "God gave man reason that he might use it, and though the poorest man may have no property yet he has his reason and he was meant to use it. It may be a small right but it is something, and you are not justified in taking from him any right God has given him." See the same argument stated by the agitators. *Case of the Army stated*, p. 21.



lie] in the people, I am to seeke for this exemption. And truly I have thought somethinge [else], in what a miserable distressed condition would many a man that hath fought for the Parliament in this quarrell bee? I will bee bound to say, that many a man whose zeale and affection to God and this Kingedome hath carried him forth in this cause hath soe spent his estate that in the way the State, the Army are going hee shall nott hold uppe his head; and when his estate is lost, and nott worth 40s. a yeare, a man shall nott have any interest;<sup>a</sup> and there are many other wayes by which estates men have doe fall to decay, if that bee the rule which God in his providence does use. A man when hee hath an estate hath an interest in making lawes, when hee hath none, hee hath noe power in itt. Soe that a man cannott loose that which hee hath for the maintenance of his family, butt hee must loose that which God and nature hath given him. Therefore I doe [think] and am still of the same opinion; that every man born in England cannot, ought nott, neither by the law of God nor the law of nature, to bee exempted from the choice of those who are to make lawes, for him to live under, and for him, for ought I know, to loose his life under. Therefore I thinke there can bee noe great sticke in this.

Truly I thinke that there is nott this day raining in England a greater fruite or effect of Tyranny then this very thinge would produce. Truly I know nothing free butt onely the Knight of the shire, nor doe I know any thinge in a Parliamentary way that is cleare from the heighth and fulnesse of Tyranny, but onlie [that]. As for this of Corporations itt is as contrary to freedome as may bee. For, Sir, what is itt? The Kinge hee grants a patent under the Broad-seale of England to such a Corporation to send Burgesses, hee grants to [such] a Citty to send Burgesses.<sup>b</sup> When a poore, base, Corporation from the Kinge[’s grant] shall send two Burgesses, when 500 men of estate shall nott send one, when those

<sup>a</sup> Any fixed interest to entitle him to a vote.

<sup>b</sup> The position of the last two sentences has been altered.



that are to make their lawes are called by the Kinge, or cannott act [but] by such a call, truly I thinke that the people of England have little freedome.

Commissary Gen. Ireton.

I thinke there was nothing that I said to give you occasion to thinke that I did contend for this, that such a Corporation [as that] should have the electing of a man to the Parliament. I think I agreed to this matter, that all should bee equallie distributed. Butt the question is, whether itt should bee distributed to all persons, or whether the same persons that are the electors [now] should bee the Electors still, and itt [be] equallie distributed amongst them.<sup>a</sup> I doe nott see any body else that makes this objection ; and if noe body else bee sensible of itt I shall soone have done. Onely I shall a little crave your leave to represent the consequences of itt, and cleare my self from one thinge that was misrepresented by the Gentleman that satt next mee. I thinke if the Gentleman remember himself hee cannott butt remember, that what I said was to this effect:<sup>b</sup> that if I saw the hand of God leading soe farre as to destroy Kinge, and destroy Lords, and destroy property, and [leave] noe such thinge att all amongst us, I should acquiese in itt ; and soe I did nott care, if noe Kinge, noe Lerds, or noe property, in comparison of the tender care that I have of the honour of God, and of the people of God, whose [good] name is soe much concern'd in this Army. This I did deliver [so] and nott absolutely.

All the maine thinge that I speake for is because I would have an eye to propertie. I hope wee doe nott come to contend for victorie, butt lett every man consider with himself that hee doe nott goe that way to take away all propertie. For heere is the case of the most fundamentall parte of the Constitution of the Kingedome, which if you take away, you take away all by that. Heere are men of this and this qualitie are determined to bee the

<sup>a</sup> See p. 299 ; and also the note.

<sup>b</sup> See p. 296.



Electors of men to the Parliament, and they are all those who have any permanent interest in the Kingedome, and who taken together doe comprehend the whole interest of the Kingedome. I meane by permanent, locall, that is nott any where else. As for instance; hee that hath a freehold, and that freehold cannott bee removed out of the Kingedome; and soe there's a [freeman of a] Corporation, a place which hath the priviledge of a markett and trading, which if you should allow to all places equallie, I doe nott see how you could preserve any peace in the Kingedome, and that is the reason why in the Constitution wee have but some few markett townes. Now those people [that have freeholds] and those that are the freemen of Corporations, were look't upon by the former Constitution to comprehend the permanent interest of the Kingdom. For [firstly] hee that hath his livelihood by his trade, and by his freedome of trading in such a Corporation which hee cannott exercise in another, hee is tied to that place, his livelihood depends uppon itt. And secondly, that man hath an interest, hath a permanent interest there, uppon which hee may live, and live a freeman without dependance. These Constitutions this Kingedome hath look't att. Now I wish wee may all consider of what right you will challenge, that all the people should have right to Elections. Is itt by the right of nature? If you will hold forth that as your ground, then I thinke you must deny all property too, and this is my reason. For thus: by that same right of nature, whatever itt bee that you pretend, by which you can say, "one man<sup>a</sup> hath an equall right with another to the chusing of him that shall governe him"—by the same right of nature, hee hath an equal<sup>b</sup> right in any goods hee sees: meate, drinke, cloathes, to take and use them for his sustenance. Hee hath a freedome to the land, [to take] the ground, to exercise itt, till itt; he hath the [same] freedome to any thing that any one doth account himself to have any propriety in. Why now I say then, if you, against

<sup>a</sup> MS. "a man."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "the same."







this most fundamentall parte of [the] civill Constitution (which I have now declar'd), will pleade the law of nature, that a man should, paramount [to] this, and contrary to this, have a power of chusing those men that shall determine what shall bee law in this state, though he himself have noe permanent interest in the State, [but] whatever interest hee hath hee may carry about with him. If this be allowed, [because by the right of nature], wee are free, wee are equall, one man must have as much voice as another, then shew mee what steppe or difference [there is], why by the same right of necessity to sustaine nature [I may not claim property as well]? Itt is for my better being [I may say], and possibly nott for itt neither, possibly I may nott have soe reall a regard to the peace of the Kingedome as that man who hath a permanent interest in itt. Hee that is heere to day and gone to morrow, I doe nott see that hee hath such a permanent interest. Since you cannott plead to itt by any thing butt the law of nature, [for any thing] but for the end of better being, and [since] that better being is nott certaine, and [what is] more, destructive to another, if uppon these grounds you doe paramount [to] all Constitutions hold uppe this law of nature, I would faine have any man shew mee their bounds, where you will end, and [why you should not] take away all propertie?

Col. Rainborow.

I shall now bee a little more free and open with you then I was before. I wish wee were all true hearted, and that wee did all carry our selves with integritie. If I did mistrust you I would use such asseverations. I thinke itt doth goe on mistrust, and things are thought to be matters of reflection that were never intended. For my parte, as I thinke, you forgott somethinge that was in my speech, and you doe nott only your selves beleive that [we] <sup>a</sup> are inclining to anarchy, butt you would make all men

<sup>a</sup> MS. "men."



believe that. And Sir, to say because a man pleades, that every man hath a voice [by the right of nature], that therefore itt destroyes [by] the same [argument all property]—that there's a propertie the law of God sayes itt; else why [hath] God made that law, "Thou shalt nott steale?" If I have noe interest in the Kingedome I must suffer by all their lawes bee they right or wronge. I am a poore man, therefore I must bee prest. Nay thus; a Gentleman lives in a country and hath three or fower Lordshippes as some men have—God knowes how they gott them—and when a Parliament is call'd hee must bee a Parliament man; and itt may bee hee sees some poore men, they live neere this man, hee can crush them—I have knowne an evasion to make sure hee hath turned the poore man out of doores; and I would faine know whether the potencie of men doe nott this, and soe keepe them under the greatest tyranny that was thought off in the world. Therefore I thinke that to that itt is fully answered. God hath sett downe that thinge as to propriety with this law of his, "Thou shalt not steale." For my parte I am against any such thought, and as for yourselves I wish you would nott make the world believe that wee are for anarchy.

Lieut. Generall.

I know nothing butt this, that they that are the most yeilding have the greatest wisdom; butt really, Sir, this is nott right as itt should bee. Noe man sayes that you have a minde to anarchy, butt the consequence of this rule tends to anarchy, must end in anarchy; for where is there any bound or limitt sett if you take away this [limit], that men that have noe interest butt the interest of breathing [shall have no voices in elections]? Therefore I am confident on't wee should nott bee soe hott one with another.

Col. Rainborow.

I know that some particular men wee debate with [believe we] are for anarchy.



Coñ. Ireton.

I professe I must cleare my selfe as to that point.

I would nott desire, I cannott allow myself, to lay the least scandall uppon any body; and truly, for that Gentleman that did take soe much offence, I doe nott knowe why hee should take itt soe. Wee speake to the paper, and to that matter of the paper, nott to persons; and I hope that noe man is soe much engaged to the matter of the paper, I hope our persons, and our hearts, and judgements are not [so] pinn'd to papers, butt that wee are ready to heare what good or ill consequence will flow from itt.

I have, with as much plainesse and clearnesse of reason as I could, shew'd you how I did conceive the doing of this takes away that which is the most originall, the most fundamentall civil Constitution of this Kingedome, and which above all is that Constitution by which I have any propertie. If you will take away that, and sett uppe as a thing paramount whatever a man may claime by the law of nature—though itt bee nott a thinge of necessitie to him for the sustenance of nature—if you doe make this your rule, I desire clearlie to understand where then remaines propertie?

Now then, as I say, I would misrepresent nothing; the answer which had any thing of matter in itt, the great and maine answer upon which that which hath bin said against this rests, that seem'd to be: "that itt will nott make the breach of propertie: that there is a law, "Thou shalt nott steale." The same law sayes, "Honour thy Father and Mother"; and that law doth likewise extend to all that are our governours in that place where wee are in. Soe that, by that there is a forbidding of breaking a Civill Law when wee may live quietly under itt, and a Divine Law. Againe itt is said indeed before, that there is noe Law, noe Divine Law, that tells us, that such a Corporation must have the Election of Burgesses, or such a shire, or the like; and soe on the other side if a man were to demonstrate his [right to] propertie by Divine Law, itt would bee very remote. Our property as well as our right of sending Burgesses

\* The order of the first few sentences of this speech has been changed.



descends from other things. That Divine Law doth nott determine particulars butt generalls, in relation to man and man, and to propertie, and all thinges else ; and wee should bee as farre to seeke if wee should goe to prove a property in [a thinge by] Divine Law as to prove that I have an interest in chusing Burgesses of the Parliament by Divine Law. Truly under favour I referre itt to all whether there bee anythinge of solution to that objection that I made, if itt bee understood,—I submitt itt to any man's judgement.

Col. Rainborow.

To the thinge itt self propertie. I would faine know how itt<sup>a</sup> comes to bee the propertie [of some men, and not of others]. As for estates, and those kinde of thinges, and other thinges that belonge to men, itt will bee granted that they are<sup>b</sup> propertie ; butt I deny that that is a propertie, to a Lord, to a Gentleman, to any man more then another in the Kingdome of England. If itt bee a propertie, itt is a propertie by a law ; neither doe I thinke, that there is very little propertie in this thinge by the law of the land, because I thinke that the law of the land in that thinge is the most tyrannicall law under heaven, and I would faine know what wee have fought for, and this is the old law of England and that which inslaves the people of England that they should bee bound by lawes in which they have noe voice att all.<sup>c</sup> [So with respect to the law which says ' Honour thy father and thy mother. ' ] The great dispute is who is a right Father and a right Mother. I am bound to know who is my Father and Mother, and I take it in the same sence you doe, I would have a distinction, a character wherby God commands mee to honour [them], and for my parte I looke uppon the people of England soe, that wherin they have nott voices in the chusing of their Fathers and Mothers, they are nott bound to that commandement.

<sup>a</sup> *i. e.* "The franchise," see pp. 315, 316.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "itt is."

<sup>c</sup> This part of Rainborow's speech is too fragmentary to follow his arguments, but his two speeches on pp. 315, 316, supplement it.





Mr. Pettus.

I desire to adde one worde, concerning the worde Propertie.

Itt is for somethinge that anarchy is soe much talk't of. For my owne parte I cannott beleive in the least that itt can bee clearlie derived from that paper. Tis true, that somewhat may bee derived in the paper against the power of the Kinge, and somewhat against the power of the Lords; and the truth is when I shall see God going about to throw downe Kinge and Lords and propertie then I shall bee contented. Butt I hope that they may live to see the power of the Kinge and the Lords throwne downe, that yett may live to see propertie preserved. And for this of changing the Representative of the Nation, of changing those that chuse the Representative, making of them more full, taking more into the number then formerly, I had verily thought wee had all agreed that more should have chosen, and that all had desir'd a more equall Representation then wee now have. For now those onely chuse who have 40s. freehold. A man may have a lease for 100<sup>y</sup> a yeare, a man may have a lease for three lives [but he has no voice]. Butt [as] for this [argument] that itt destroyes all right [to property] that every Englishman that is an inhabitant of England should chuse and have a choice in the Representatives, I suppose itt is [on the contrary] the onely meanes to preserve all propertie. For I judge every man is naturally free; and I judge the reason why men<sup>a</sup> when they were in soe great numbers [chose representatives was] that every man could nott give his voice; and therefore men agreed to come into some forme of Governement that they who were chosen might preserve propertie. I would faine know, if we were to begin a Governement, [whether you would say] 'you have nott 40s. a yeare, therfore you shall not have a voice.' Wheras before there was a Governement every man had such a choice, and afterwards for this very cause they did chuse Representatives, and putt themselves into formes

<sup>a</sup> MS. "the man when they are."



of Governement that they may preserve propertie, and therefore itt is nott to destroy itt [to give every man a choice].

Com. Generall.

I thinke wee shall nott bee soe apt to come to a right understanding in this businesse, if one man, and another man, and another man doe speake their severall thoughts and conceptions to the same purpose, as if wee doe consider where the objection lies, and what the answer is which is made to itt; and therefore I desire wee may doe soe. To that which this Gentleman spake last. The maine thinge that hee seem'd to answer was this: that hee would make itt appeare, that the going about to cestablish this Governement,<sup>a</sup> [or] such a Governement, is nott a destruction of propertie, nor does nott tend to the destruction of propertie, because the people's falling into a Governement is for the preservation of propertie. What weight there [is in it] lies in this: since there is a falling into a Governement, and Governement is to preserve property, therefore this cannott bee against property. The objection does nott lie in that, the making of itt<sup>b</sup> more equall, butt [in] the introducing of men into an equality of interest in this Governement who have noe property in this Kingedome, or who have noe locall permanent interest in itt. For if I had said, that I would nott wish that wee should have any enlargement att all of the bounds of those that are to bee the Electors, then you might have excepted against itt. Butt [what I said was] that I would nott goe to enlarge itt beyond all bounds: that upon the same ground you may admitt of soe many men from forraigne States as would out-vote you. The objection lies still in this. I doe nott meane that I would have itt restrained to that proportion [it is now], butt to restraine itt still to men who have a locall, a permanent interest in the Kingedome, who have such an interest that they may live upon itt as freemen, and who have such an interest as is fix't upon a place, and is nott the same every where equally. If a man bee an

<sup>a</sup> The constitution proposed in the "Agreement of the People."

<sup>b</sup> *i. e.* "The franchise."



inhabitant uppon a wrack rent for a yeare, for two yeares, or 20 yeares—you cannott thinke that man hath any fix't or permanent interest—that man if hee pay the rent that his land is worth, and hath noe advantage butt what hee hath by his land, that man is as good a man, may have as much interest, in another Kingedome as heere. I doe nott speake of not<sup>a</sup> enlarging this att all, butt of keeping this to the most fundamentall Constitution in this Kingedome, that is, that noe person that hath nott a locall and permanent interest in the Kingedome should have an equall dependance in Elections [with those that have]. Butt if you goe beyond this law, if you admitt any man that hath a breath and being, I did shew you how this will destroy propertie. Itt may come to destroy propertie thus: you may have such men chosen or att least the major parte of them [as have no local and permanent interest.] Why may nott those men vote against all propertie? You may admitt strangers by this rule, if you admitt them once to inhabite, and those that have interest in the land may bee voted out of their land. Itt may destroy propertie that way.<sup>b</sup> Butt heere is the rule that you goe by; for that by which you inferre this to bee the right of the people, of every inhabitant, that because man<sup>c</sup> hath such a right in nature, though itt bee nott of necessity for the preserving of his being, therefore you are to overthrow the most fundamentall Constitution for this, by the same rule shew mee why you will nott, by the same right of nature, make use of any thinge that any man hath necessary for the sustenance of men.<sup>d</sup> Shew mee what you will stoppe att, wherein you will fence any man in a property by this rule.

<sup>a</sup> MS. "an."

<sup>b</sup> The passage may be thus paraphrased: "But here is the great objection to the rule that you go by. By that rule by which you infer this to be the right of the people, of every inhabitant, you infer also that because every man hath such a right in nature—though it be not of necessity for the preserving of his life—that therefore you are to overthrow the most fundamental constitution of the kingdom for it. Now show me why, by the same rule, by the same right of nature, you will not claim the use of anything any man hath that is necessary for the sustenance of men."

<sup>c</sup> MS. "this man."

<sup>d</sup> MS. "mee."



Col. Rainborow.

I desire to know how this comes to bee a propertie in some men, and nott in others.

Col. Rich.

I confesse [there is weight in] that objection that the Com-missary Generall last insisted uppon; for you have five to one in this Kingedome that have noe permanent interest. Some men [have] ten, some twenty servants, some more, some lesse. If the Master and servant shall bee equall Electors, then clearlie those that have noe interest in the Kingedome will make itt their interest to chuse those that have noe interest. Itt may happen, that the majority may by law, nott in a confusion, destroy propertie; there may bee a law enacted, that there shall bee an equality of goods and estate. I thinke that either of the extreames may be urg'd to inconveniencie. That is, men that have noe interest as to Estate should have no interest as to Election. Butt there may bee a more equall division and distribution then that hee that hath nothing should have an equall voice; and certainly there may bee some other way thought of that there may bee a Representative of the poore as well as the rich, and nott to exclude all. I remember there were as wee have heard many workinges and revolutions in the Roman Senate; and there was never a confusion that did appeare, and that indeed was come to, till the State came to know this kinde of distribution of Election. That the peoples voices were bought and sold, and that by the poore, and thence itt came that hee that was the richest man, and [a man] of some considerable power amonge the souldiers, and one they resolu'd on, made himself a perpetuall dictator. And if wee straine too farre to avoide monarchy in Kinges [let us take heed] that wee doe nott call for Emperours to deliver us from more then one Tyrant.

Col. Rainborow.

I should nott have spoken againe. I thinke itt is a fine gilded







pill, butt there is much danger and itt may seeme to some, that there is some kinde of remedy, I thinke that wee are better as wee are. That the poore shall chuse many, still the people are in the same case, are over voted still. And therefore truly, Sir, I should desire to goe close to the businesse; and the thinge that I am unsatisfied in is how itt comes about that there is such a propriety in some freeborne Englishmen, and nott [in] others.

Coñ. Cowling.

Whether the younger sonne have nott as much right to the Inheritance as the eldest?

Coñ. Gen. Ireton.

Will you decide itt by the light of nature?

Coñ. Cowling.

Why Election was only 40<sup>s</sup> a yeare,<sup>a</sup> which was more then 40<sup>l</sup>. a yeare now, the reason was [this], that the Commons of England were overpovr'd by the Lords, who had abundance of vassalls, butt that they might still make their lawes good against inroaching prerogatives, therefore they did exclude all slaves. Now the case is nott soe; all slaves have bought their freedomes. They are more free that in the common wealth are more beneficiall. There are men in the country . . . there is a tanner in Stanes worth 3000<sup>l</sup>, and another in Reading worth 3 horseskins.

Coñ. Gen. Ireton.

In the beginning of your speech you seeme to acknowledge [that] by law, by civill Constitution, the propriety of having voices in Election was fixt in certaine persons. Soe then your exception of your argument does nott prove that by civill constitution they have noe such propriety, butt your argument does acknowledge [that] by

<sup>a</sup> *i. e.* "Limited to possessors of freeholds worth 40s. a year. Cowling is giving his theory of the object of the statute of Henry VI. limiting the franchise to persons having free land or tenement to the value of 40s. by the year."



civill [constitution they have such] propriety. You argue against this law, that this law is nott good.

Mr. Wildman.

Unlesse I bee very much mistaken wee are very much deviated from the first Question. Instead of following the first proposition to inquire what is just, I conceive wee looke to prophesies, and looke to what may bee the event, and judge of the justnesse of a thinge by the consequence. I desire wee may recall [ourselves to the question] whether itt bee right or noe. I conceive all that hath bin said against itt will bee reduc't to this and another reason; that itt is against a fundamentall law, [and] that every person ought to have a permanent interest, because itt is nott fitt that those should chuse Parliaments that have noe lands to bee disposed of by Parliament.

Coñ. Gen. Ireton.

If you will take itt by the way, itt is not fitt<sup>a</sup> that the Representatives should chuse the Representors, or the persons who shall make the law in the Kingedome, who have nott a permanent fix't interest in the Kingedome.

Mr. Wildman.

Sir I doe soe take itt; and I conceive that that is brought in for the same reason, that forraigners might come to have a voice in our Elections as well as the native Inhabitants.

Coñ. Ireton.

That is upon supposition that these<sup>b</sup> should bee all Inhabitants.

Mr. Wildman.

I shall begin with the last first. The case is different from the

<sup>a</sup> The word "fitt" should perhaps be "fixt." "It is now fixed that the electors must not choose men to make laws who have no permanent interest in the kingdom."

<sup>b</sup> These, *i. e.* "these foreigners."



native Inhabitant and forraigner. If a forraigner shall bee admitted to bee an Inhabitant in the Nation, soe hee will submitt to that forme of Governement as the natives doe, hee hath the same right as the natives, butt in this particular. Our case is to bee consider'd thus, that wee have bin under slavery. That's acknowledged by all. Our very lawes were made by our Conquerours; and wheras itt's spoken much of Chronicles, I conceive there is noe credit to bee given to any of them; and the reason is because those that were our Lords, and made us their vassalls. would suffer nothing else to bee chronicled. Wee are now engaged for our freedome; that's the end of Parliaments, nott to constitute what is already according to the just rules of Governement.<sup>a</sup> Every person in England hath as cleere a right to Elect his Representative as the greatest person in England. I conceive that's the undeniable maxime of Governement: that all governement is in the free consent of the people. If [so], then uppon that account, there is noe person that is under a just Governement, or hath justly his owne, unlesse hee by his owne free consent bee putt under that Governement. This hee cannott bee unlesse hee bee consenting to itt, and therfore according to this maxime there is never a person in England [but ought to have a voice in elections]; if as that Gentleman<sup>b</sup> sayes bee true, there are noe lawes that in this strictnesse and rigour of justice [any man is bound to] that are nott made by those who hee doth consent to. And therfore I should humbly move, that if the Question bee stated—which would soonest bringe thinges to an issue—itt might rather bee this: whether any person can justly bee bound by law, who doth nott give his consent that such persons shall make lawes for him?

Coñ. Gen: Ireton.

Lett the Question bee soe; whether a man can bee bound to any law that hee doth nott consent to? And I shall tell you, that hee

<sup>a</sup> Should be, "to constitute, *i. e.* to legislate, according to the just ends of government, not simply to maintain what is already established."

<sup>b</sup> "That gentleman," *i. e.* Rainborow, see p. 304.



may and ought to bee [bound to a law] that hee doth nott give a consent to, nor doth nott chuse any [to consent to], and I will make itt cleare. If a forraigner come within this Kingedome, if that stranger will have libertie [to dwell here] who hath noe local interest heere—hee is a man itt's true, hath aire that by nature<sup>a</sup> wee must nott expell our Coasts, give him noe being amongst us, nor kill him because hee comes uppon our land, comes uppe our streame, arrives at our shoare. Itt is a peece of hospitality, of humanity, to receive that man amongst us. Butt if that man bee received to a being amongst us I thinke that man may very well bee content to submitt himself to the law of the land : that is, the law that is made by those people that have a property, a fixt property, in the land. I thinke if any man will receive protection from this people, this man ought to bee subject to those lawes, and to bee bound by those lawes soe longe as hee continues amongst them, though [neither] hee nor his ancestors, nott any betwixt him and Adam, did ever give concurrence to this Constitution. That is my opinion. A man ought to bee subject to a law that did nott give his consent, butt with this reservation, that if this man doe thinke himself unsatisfied to bee subject to this law hee may goe into another Kingedome. And soe the same reason doth extend in my understanding to that man that hath noe permanent interest in the Kingedome. If hee hath mony, his monie is as good in another place as heere; hee hath nothing that doth locally fixe him to this Kingedome. If this man will live in this Kingedome or trade amongst us, that man ought to subject himself to the law made by the people who have the interest of this Kingedome in us; and yett I doe acknowledge that which you take to bee soe generall a maxime, that in every Kingedome, within every land, the originall of power, of making lawes, of determining what shall bee law in the land, does lie in the people that are possess't of the permanent interest in the land. Butt whoever is extraneous to this, that is, as good a man in another land, that man ought to give such a respect to the property of men that live in

<sup>a</sup> Probably should be "hath a right by nature that." But see p. 303.





the land. They doe nott determine [that I shall live in this land], why should I have any interest of determining of what shall bee the law of this land?<sup>a</sup>

Major Rainborow.

I thinke if itt can bee made to appeare, that itt is a just and reasonable thinge, and that is for the preservation of all the freeborne men, itt ought to bee made good unto them. The reason is, that the cheif end of this Governement is to preserve persons as well as estates, and if any law shall take hold of my person itt is more deare than my estate.

Col. Rainborow.

I doe very well remember that the Gentleman in the window<sup>b</sup> [said], that if itt were soe there were noe propriety to bee had, because a fifth parte of the poor people [that] are now excluded and would then come in. Soe one on the other side said, that if otherwise then rich men shall bee chosen [there would be no propriety]. Then I say the one parte shall make hewers of wood and drawers of water of the other five, and soe the greatest parte of the Nation bee enslav'd. Truly I thinke wee are still where wee were; and I doe not heare any argument given butt only that itt is the present law of the Kingedome. I say still, what shall become of those many [men] that have laid out themselves for the Parliament of England in this present warre, that have ruined themselves by fighting, by hazarding all they had? They are Englishmen. They have now nothing to say for themselves.

Col. Rich.

I should bee very sorry to speake anythinge heere that should give offence, or that may occasion personall reflections that wee spoke against just now. I did nott urge any thinge soe farre as

<sup>a</sup> The meaning apparently is, "Why should I have any interest in determining what the law of a land shall be, if I am not obliged to live under it."

<sup>b</sup> Colonel Rich, p. 315.



was represented, and I did nott att all urge that there should bee a consideration [had of rich men only], and that [a] man that is [poor] shall bee without consideration, or that hee deserves to bee made poore and nott to live att all. All that I urged was this, that I thinke itt worthy consideration, whether they should have an equality in their interest. Butt however I thinke wee have bin a great while uppon this point, and if wee bee as longe uppon all the rest, itt were well if there were noe greater difference then this.

Mr. Peter.

I thinke that this may bee easily agreed on, that is there may bee a way thought of. I thinke you should doe well to sett uppe all night, butt I would faine know whether that will answer the worke of your Meeting.<sup>a</sup> You will be forc't to putt characters uppon Electors or Elected, therfore I doe suppose that if there bee any heere that can make uppe a Representative to your minde, the thinge is gain'd. I think three or four might be thought of in this companie.<sup>a</sup> But the question is, whether you can state any one question for the present danger of the Kingedome, if any one question or noe will dispatch the worke.

Sir, I desire that some question may bee stated to finish the present worke to cement us wherin lies the distance, and if the thoughts of the Commonwealth, the people's freedome, I thinke that's soone cured. I desire that all manner of plainesse may bee used that wee may nott goe on with the lapwinge, and carry one another off the nest. There is somethinge else in that must cement us where the awkwardnesse of our spiritts lies.

Col. Rainborow.

For my parte I thinke wee cannott engage one way or other in the Army if wee doe nott thinke of the people's liberties. If wee can agree where the liberty and freedome of the people lies, that will doe all.

<sup>a</sup> The position of these two clauses has been changed, but the latter part of the speech seems hopelessly confused.



Coñ. Gen. Ireton.

I cannott consent soe farre. As I said before : when I see the hand of God destroying Kinge, and Lords, and Commons too, [or] any foundation of humane Constitution, when I see God hath done itt, I shall I hope comfortably acquiesce in itt. Butt first, I cannott give my consent to itt because itt is nott good. And secondly, as I desire that this Army should have regard to Engagements wherever they are lawfull, soe I would have them have regard to this as well, that they should nott bringe that scandall uppon the name of God, that those that call themselves by that name, those whome God hath own'd and appear'd with—that wee should nott represent ourselves to the world as men soe farre from being of that peaceable spiritt which is suitable to the Gospell, as wee would have bought peace of the world uppon such termes, wee would nott have peace in the world butt uppon such termes, as should destroy all propertie. If the principle uppon which you move this alteration, or the ground uppon which you presse that wee should make this alteration, doe destroy all kinde of property or whatsoever a man hath by humane Constitution [I cannot consent to it]. The law of God doth nott give mee propertie, nor the law of nature, butt propertie is of humane Constitution. I have a propertie and this I shall enjoy. Constitution sounds propertie. If either the thinge itt selfe that you presse or the consequence [of] that you presse [do destroy property], though I shall acquiesce in having noe propertie, yett I cannott give my heart or hand to itt; because itt is a thinge evill in ittself and scandalous to the world, and I desire this Army may bee free from both.

Mr. Sexby.

I see that though itt<sup>a</sup> were our end, there is a degeneration from itt. Wee have engaged in this Kingdome and ventur'd our lives, and itt was all for this : to recover our birthrights and priviledges

<sup>a</sup> "Itt," possibly means "the liberty of the people," referring to Rainborow's speech.



as Englishmen, and by the arguments urged there is none. There are many thousands of us souldiers that have ventur'd our lives ; wee have had little propriety in the Kingedome as to our estates, yett wee have had a birthright. Butt itt seemes now except a man hath a fix't estate in this Kingedome, hee hath noe right in this Kingedome. I wonder wee were see much deceived. If wee had nott a right to the Kingedome, wee were meere mercinarie souldiers. There are many in my condition, that have as good a condition [as I have], itt may bee little estate they have att present, and yett they have as much a [birth.] right as those two<sup>a</sup> who are their law givers, as any in this place. I shall tell you in a worde my resolution. I am resolved to give my birthright to none.<sup>b</sup> Whatsoever may come in the way, and [whatsoever may] bee thought, I will give itt to none. If this thinge that with soe much pressing after—There was one thinge spoken to this effect—that if the poore and those in lowe condition. . . .<sup>c</sup> I thinke this was butt a distrust of providence. I doe thinke the poore and meaner of this Kingedome (I speake as in that relation in which wee are) have bin the meanes of the preservation of this Kingedome. I say in their stations, and really I thinke to their utmost possibility ; and their lives have nott bin deare for purchasing the good of the Kingdome. Those that act to this end are as free from anarchy or confusion as those that oppose itt, and they have the law of God and the law of their conscience [with them]. Butt truly I shall only summe uppe in this, I desire that wee may nott spend soe much time uppon these thinges. Wee must bee plaine. When men come to understand these thinges they will nott loose that which they have contended for. That which I shall beseech you is to come to a determination of this question.

<sup>a</sup> "Those two," *i. e.* Cromwell and Ireton.

<sup>b</sup> If this Agreement be not accepted I will still not give up my birthright.

<sup>c</sup> Probably refers to the speech of Colonel Rich, that poor voters would sell their votes, or otherwise destroy the kingdom.





Com. Gen. Ireton.

I am very sorry wee are come to this point, that from reasoning one to another wee should come to expresse our resolutions. I professe for my parte, what I see is good for the Kingdome, and becoming a Christian to contend for, I hope through God I shall have strength and resolution to doe my parte towards itt. And yett I will professe direct contrary in some kinde to what that Gentleman said.<sup>a</sup> For my parte, rather then I will make a disturbance to a good Constitution of a Kingdome wherein I may live in godlinesse, and honesty, and peace and quietnesse, I will parte with a great deale of my birthright. I will parte with my owne property rather then I will bee the man that shall make a disturbance in the Kingdome for my property; and therefore if all the people in this Kingdome, or [the] Representative[s] of them all together, should meete and should give away my propertie I would submitt to itt, I would give it away. Butt that Gentleman, and I thinke every Christian ought to beare that spiritt in him, that hee will nott make a publique disturbance uppon a private prejudice<sup>b</sup>

Now lett us consider where our difference lies. Wee all agree that you should have a Representative to governe, [and] this Representative to bee as equall as you can. Butt the question is, whether this distribution can bee made to all persons equallie, or whether equallie amongst those that have the interest of England in them. That which I have declar'd [is] my opinion [still]. I thinke wee ought to keepe to that [constitution which we have now], both because itt is a civill Constitution, itt is the most fundamentall Constitution that wee have, and [because] there is soe much justice, and reason, and prudence [in it], as I dare confidently undertake to demonstrate, that there are many more evils; that will follow in case you doe alter, then there can in the standing of itt. Butt I say butt this in the generall, that I doe wish

<sup>a</sup> i. e. Sexby.

<sup>b</sup> MS., "every christian spirit ought to bear that, to carry that."



that they that talke of birthrights—wee any of us when wee talke of birthrights—would consider what really our birthright is.

If a man mean<sup>a</sup> by birthright, whatsoever hee can challenge by the law of nature, suppose there were noe Constitution att all, supposing noe Civill law and Civill Constitution—that that I am to contend for against Constitution, you leave noe property, nor noe foundation for any man to enjoy any thinge. Butt if you call that your birthrights which is the most fundamentall parte of your Constitution, then lett him perish that goes about to hinder you or any man of the least parte of your birthright, or will doe itt. Butt if you will lay aside the most fundamentall Constitution, which is as good for ought you can discerne as anythinge you can propose—att least itt is a Constitution, and I will give you consequence for consequence of good uppon Constitution as you for your birthright<sup>b</sup>—and if you meerlie uppon pretence of a birthright, of the right of nature, which is onely true as for your better being; if you will uppon that ground pretend, that this Constitution, the most fundamentall Constitution, the thinge that hath reason and equity in itt shall nott stand in your way, [it] is the same principle to mee say I, [as if] but for your better satisfaction you shall take hold of any thinge that a man calls his owne,

Col. Rainborow.

Sir I see, that itt is impossible to have liberty butt all propertie must be taken away. If itt be laid downe for a rule, and if you will say itt, itt must bee soe. Butt I would faine know what the souldier hath<sup>c</sup> fought for all this while? Hee hath fought to inslave himself, to give power to men of riches, men of estates, to make him a perpetuall slave. Wee doe finde in all presses that goe forth none must bee pres't that are freehold men. When these

<sup>a</sup> MS. "men."

<sup>b</sup> Clause transposed from two lines above.

<sup>c</sup> MS. "all the souldiers have."



Gentlemen fall out amonge themselves they shall presse the poore shrubs<sup>a</sup> to come and kill them.

Cofm. Gen. Ireton.

I confesse I see soe much right in the businesse that I am nott easily satisfied with flourishes. If you will lay the stresse of the businesse [not] uppon the consideration of reason, or right relating to humane constitution, or anything of that nature, butt will putt itt uppon consequences, I see enough to say, that to my apprehensions I can shew you greater ill consequences to follow uppon that alteration which you would have by extending [voices] to all that have a being in this Kingedome then by this a great deale. That is a particular ill consequence. This is a generall ill consequence, and that is as great as this or any else; though I thinke you will see that the validity of that argument must be<sup>b</sup> that for one ill lies uppon that which now is, I can shew you a thousand uppon this. Give mee leave [to say] butt this one worde I tell you what the souldier of the Kingedome hath fought for. First, the danger that wee stood in was, that one man's will must bee a law. The people of the Kingedome must have this right att least, that they should nott bee concluded [but] by the Representative of those that had the interest of the Kingedome. Some<sup>c</sup> men fought in this, because they were imediately concern'd and engag'd in itt. Other men who had noe other interest in the Kingedome butt this, that they should have the benefitt of those lawes made by the Representative, yett [fought] that they should have the benefitt of this Representative. They thought itt was better to bee concluded by the common consent of those that were fix't men and setled men that had the interest of this Kingedome [in them], and from that way [said they] I shall know a law and have a certainty. Every man that was borne in itt that hath a

<sup>a</sup> Possibly a reference to the parable of Jotham, Judges, ix. Or perhaps one should read "scrub."

MS. "lie."

<sup>c</sup> MS. "soe."



freedome is a denizon, hee was capable of trading to gett money and to gett estates by, and therfore this man I thinke had a great deale of reason to build uppe such a foundation of interest to himself: that is, that the will of one man should nott bee a law, butt that the law of this Kingedome should bee by a choice of persons to represent, and that choice to bee made by the generality of the Kingedome. Heere was a right that induced men to fight, and those men that had this interest, though this bee nott the utmost interest that other men have, yett they had some interest. Now why wee should goe to pleade whatsoever wee can challenge by the right of nature against whatsoever any man can challenge by Constitution?<sup>a</sup> I doe nott see where that man will stoppe as to point of property that hee shall nott use that right hee hath by the law of nature against that Constitution. I desire any man to shew mee where there is a difference. I have bin answer'd "now wee see libertie cannott stand without [destroying] propertie." Libertie may bee had and property nott bee destroyed. First, the libertie of all those that have the permanent interest in the Kingedome, that is provided for; and in a generall sence libertie cannott bee provided for if property bee preserved; for if propertie bee preserved—that I am nott to meddle with such a man's estate, his meate, his drinke, his apparell, or other goods—then the right of nature destroys libertie. By the right of nature I am to have sustenance rather then perish, yett property destroyes it for a man to have by the right<sup>b</sup> of nature, suppose there bee noe humane Constitution.

Mr. Peter.

I will minde you of one thinge. That uppon the will of one man abusing us, and soe forth.—Soe that I professe to you for my parte. I hope itt is nott denied by any man, that any wise discrecte

<sup>a</sup> May be paraphrased, "Now let any man shew me why, if we should go to plead, &c., we should stop there?"

<sup>b</sup> MS. "light."







man that hath preserved England or the Governement of itt—I doe say still under favour there is a way to cure all this debate—I thinke they will desire noe more libertie—If there were time to dispute itt—I thinke hee would bee satisfied, and all will bee satisfied and if the safetie of the Army bee in danger—For my parte I am cleare the point of Election should bee amended.<sup>a</sup>

Lieut. Generall.

I confesse I was most dissatisfied with that I heard Mr. Sexby speake of any man heere, because itt did savour soe much of will. Butt I desire that all of us may decline that, and if wee meete heere really to agree to that which was for the safetie of the Kingdome, lett us nott spend soe much time in such debates as these are, but lett us apply ourselves to such thinges as are conclusive, and that shall bee this: Everybodie heere would bee willing, that the Representative might bee mended, that is, itt might bee better then itt is. Perhaps itt may bee offer'd in that paper too lamely. If the thinge bee insisted uppon too limited, why perhaps there are a very considerable parte of copyholders by inheritance that ought to have a voice, and there may bee somewhat too reflects uppon the generality of the people.<sup>b</sup> If wee thinke to bringe itt to an issue this way I know our debates are endlesse; and I thinke if you doe [desire to] bringe this to a result itt were well if wee may butt resolve uppon a Committee.<sup>c</sup> I say itt againe,

<sup>a</sup> Only the first words of some sentences out of the speech of Hugh Peters are here given. He suggests apparently an arrangement such as the one finally accepted, by which men who had assisted the Parliament should be given votes. Cromwell takes up the suggestion of a compromise, and develops it rather further, proposing the extension of the franchise to copyholders by inheritance.

<sup>b</sup> Perhaps in that paper (*i. e.* in the "Heads of the Proposals," *i.*, § 5) the amendment of the representative may be offered too lamely, and there may be some reflection upon the generality of the people, if the franchise be insisted upon to be limited to the present voters. "Why perhaps there are a considerable number of copyholders by inheritance that ought to have votes," etc. "This paper" referred to on p. 329 is the "Agreement."

<sup>c</sup> Clause transferred from the last lines of the speech.



if I cannott bee satisfied to goe soe farre as these Gentlemen that bringe this paper, I professe I shall freely and willinglie withdrawe myself, and I hope to doe itt in such a manner that the Army shall see that I shall by my withdrawing satisfy the interest of the Army, the publique interest of the Kingedome, and those ends these men aime att.

Col. Rainborow.

If these men must bee advanced and other men sett under foote, I am nott satisfied if their rules must bee observed, and other men that are in auctorithy doe nott know how this can stand together.<sup>a</sup> I wonder how that should bee thought wilfulnesse in one man that is reason in another; for I confesse I have nott heard any thinge that doth satisfie mee, and though I have nott soe much wisdom or notions in my head, I have soe many that I could tell an hundred to the ruine of the people. I am nott at all against a Committee's meeting; and as you say, for my parte I shall bee ready, if I see the way that I am going and the thinge that I could insist on will destroy the Kingdome, I shall withdraw it as soon as any, and I thinke every Christian ought to do the same;<sup>b</sup> and therefore till I see that I shall use all the meanes, and I thinke itt is noe fault in any man [to refuse] to sell that which is his birthright.

Mr. Sexby.

I desire to speake a few words. I am sorry that my zeale to what I apprehend is good should bee soe ill resented. I am nott sorry to see that which I apprehend is truth, butt I am sorry the Lord hath darkened some soe much as nott to see itt, and that is in short [this]. Doe you [not] thinke itt were a sad and miserable condition that wee have fought all this time for nothing? All heere both great and small doe thinke that wee fought for something. I

<sup>a</sup> Rainborow directly attacks Cromwell and Ireton. His words seem to mean: "If their rules must be observed, if these men must be advanced and other men that are in authority set under foot, I am not satisfied, and I do not see how this council can hold together."

<sup>b</sup> Clause transferred from two lines above.



confesse many of us fought for those ends which wee since saw was nott that which caused us to goe through difficulties and straightes to venture all in the shippe with you. Itt had bin good in you to have advertis'd us of itt, and I beleive you would have fewer under your command to have commanded. Butt if this bee the businesse, that an estate doth make men capable to chuse those that shall represent them—itt is noe matter which way they gett it, they are capable—I thinke there are many that have nott estates that in honesty have as much right in the freedome [of] their choice<sup>a</sup> as any that have great estates. Truly, Sir,<sup>b</sup> [as for] your putting off this question and coming to some other; I dare say, and I dare appeale to all of them, that they cannott settle uppon any other untill this bee done. Itt was the ground that wee tooke uppe armes, and itt is the ground which wee shall maintaine. Concerning my making rents and divisions in this way—as a particular, if I were butt soe, I could lie downe and be troden there. [But] truly I am sent by a Regiment. If I should nott speake, guilt shall lie uppon mee, and I thinke I were a Covenant breaker. I doe nott know how wee have [been] answer'd in our Arguments, and I conceive wee shall nott accomplish them<sup>c</sup> to the Kingedome when wee deny them to our selves. I shall bee loath to make a rent and division, butt, for my owne parte, unlesse I see this putt to a question, I despaire of an issue.

Capt. Clarke.<sup>d</sup>

The first thing that I shall desire was, and is, this; that there might bee a temperature and moderation of spiritt within us; that wee should speak with moderation, nott with such reflection as was boulted one from another; butt soe speake and soe heare as that which may bee the droppings of love from one another to another's

<sup>a</sup> MS. "in the freedome their choice as free."

<sup>b</sup> To Cromwell.

<sup>c</sup> i. e. our promises, our engagements.

<sup>d</sup> Compare Clarke's speech on p. 339, which appears to be merely a second version of this.



hearts. Another word I have to say is, the grand question of all is, whether or noe itt bee the property of every individuall person in the Kingdome to have a vote in election[s]; and the ground [on which it is claimed] is the law of nature, which for my parte I thinke to bee that law which is the ground of all Constitutions. Yett really properties are the foundation of Constitutions, for if soe bee there were noe property, that the law of nature does give a principall [for every man] to have a property of what hee has or may have which is nott another man's propertie. This is the ground of meum and tuum. Now there may bee inconveniencies on both hands butt nott soe great freedome. The greater freedome as I conceive that all may have whatsoever. And if itt come to passe that there bee a difference, and that the one doth oppose the other, then nothing can decide itt butt the sword which is the wrath of God.

Capt. Audeley.

I see you have a longe dispute, that you doe intend to dispute heere till the 10th of March. I see both att a stand, and if wee dispute heere both are lost. You<sup>a</sup> have brought us into a faire passe, and the Kingdome into a faire passe, for if your reasons are nott satisfied, and wee doe nott fetch all our waters from your wells you threaten to withdraw your selves. I could wish according to our severall protestations wee might sett downe quietly, and there throw downe our selves where wee see reason. I could wish wee might all rise, and goe to our duties, and see our worke in hand.

Lient. Generall.

Really for my owne parte I must needes say whilest wee say wee would nott make reflections wee doe make reflections; and if I had nott come hither with a free heart to doe that that I was perswaded in my conscience is my duty I should a thousand

<sup>a</sup> "You" refers to "both," i.e. Cromwell and Ireton on the one hand, and Sexby and Wildman on the other, *vide* pp. 329, 330, 335.





times rather have kept myself away. For I doe thinke I had brought uppon myself the greatest sin that I was [ever] guilty of, if I should have come to have stood before God in that former duty, and if [I should not persevere in] that my saying which I did say [to you before], and shall persevere to say, that I cannott against my conscience doe anythinge. They that have stood soe much for libertie of conscience, if they will nott grant that libertie to every man, butt say itt is a deserting I know nott what—if that bee denied mee I thinke there is nott that equality that [is] profest to bee amongst us.<sup>a</sup> I said this, and I say noe more that make your businesses as well as you can, wee might bringe thinges to an understanding, itt was to bee brought to a faire composure, and when you have said, if you should putt this paper to the question without any qualifications I doubt whether itt would passe soe freely, if wee would have noe difference wee ought to putt itt, and lett me speake clearlie and freele, I have heard other Gentlemen doe the like, I have nott heard the Commissary Generall answer'd, nott in a parte to my knowledge, nott in a tittle, if therefore when I see there is an extreimity of difference betweene you, to the end itt may bee brought neerer to a generall satisfaction,<sup>a</sup> and if this bee thought a deserting of that interest, if there can bee anythinge more sharply said, I will nott give itt an ill worde. Though wee should bee satisfied in our consciences in what wee doe, wee are told wee purpose to leave the Armie, or to leave our commands as if wee tooke uppon us to doe itt in matter of will. I did heare

<sup>a</sup> Compare with these remarks about freedom of conscience a similar passage in Cromwell's third speech in Carlyle's *Cromwell*. The remainder of this speech is simply a chaos of detached phrases from different sentences. The argument seems to be, "If you claim liberty to follow your consciences, but will not grant me liberty to follow mine, there is no equality between us. Though we conscientiously believe that under certain circumstances we ought to resign our commands, you taunt us as if we were following our wills instead of our consciences, and accuse us of deserting the cause. Can anything be more harshly said?" In answer to Sexby's demand for an immediate vote (pp. 324, 330) Cromwell again proposes (as on p. 323) that the question should be referred to a committee to try to make a fair compromise.



some Gentlemen speake more of will then anythinge that was spoken this way, for more was spoken by way of will then of satisfaction, and if there bee nott a more equality in our mindes I can butt greive for itt, I must doe noe more.

Coñ. Gen. Ireton,

I should nott speake, butt reflections, as if wee who have led men into Engagements and services had divided from them because wee did nott concurre with them, doe necessitate, doe call upon us to vindicate ourselves. I will aske that Gentleman<sup>a</sup> that spoke, whome I love in my heart, whether when they drew out to serve the Parliament in the beginning, when they engag'd with the Army att New Markett,<sup>b</sup> whether then they thought of any more interest or right in the Kingdome then this? Whether they did thinke, that they should have as great interest in Parliament men as freeholders had? Or whether from the beginning wee did nott engage for the liberty of Parliaments,<sup>c</sup> and that wee should bee concluded by the lawes that such did make. Unlesse somebody did make you beleive before now that you should have an equall interest in the Kingedome, unlesse somebody doe make that to bee beleived, there is noe reason to blame men for leading [you] soe farre as they have done; and if any man was farre enough from such an apprehension that man hath nott bin deceiv'd. And truly, I shall say butt this worde more for my self in this businesse, because the whole objection seemes to bee prest to mee, and maintain'd by mee. I will not arrogate that I was the first man that putt the Army upon the thought either of successive Parliaments or more equall Parliaments; yett there are some heere that know who they were putt us upon that foundation of libertie of putting a period to this Parliament, that wee might have successive Parliaments, and that there might bee a more equall distribution of Elections. There are many heere

<sup>a</sup> Rainborowe.

<sup>b</sup> June 5, 1647.

<sup>c</sup> See the Army's Declaration of June 14, 1647.



that know who were the first movers of that businesse in the Army. I shall nott arrogate that, butt I can argue this with a cleare conscience: that noe man hath prosecuted that with more earnestnesse, and will stand to that interest more than I doe, of having Parliaments successive and nott perpetuall, and the distributions of itt [more equal]. Butt notwithstanding my opinion stands good, that itt ought to bee a distribution amongst the fix't and setled people of this Nation. Itt's more prudent and safe, and more uppon this ground of right for itt: itt is the fundamentall Constitution of this Kingedome now, and that which you take away for matter of wilfulnesse. Notwithstanding [as for] this universall conclusion, that all inhabitants [shall have voices], as it stands [in the Agreement], I must declare that though I cannott yett bee satisfied, yett for my parte I shall acquiesce. I will nott make a distraction in this Army. Though I have a property in being, one of those that should bee an Elector, though I have an interest in the birthright, yet I will rather loose that birthright, and that interest then I will make itt my businesse [to oppose], if I see butt the generality of those whome I have reason to thinke honest men, and conscientious men, and godly men to carry them another way. I will nott oppose though I bee nott satisfied to joyne with them. And I desire [to say this], I am agreed with you if you insist uppon a more equall distribution of Elections; I will agree with you, nott onely to dispute for itt, butt to fight for itt and contend for itt. Thus farre I shall agree with you. On the other hand those who differ their termes, I will not agree with you except you goe farther. Thus farre I can goe with you, I will goe with you as farre as I can. If you will appoint a committee to consider of some of that, soe as you preserve the equitable part of that, who are like to be freemen, and men not given uppe to the wills of others, keeping to the latitude which is the equity of Constitution, I will goe with you as farre as

\* See the Army Declaration of June 14, and the "Heads of the Proposals of the Army," § 1.



I can. I will sit downe, I will not make any disturbance amongst you.<sup>a</sup>

Col. Rainborow.

If I do speak my soul and conscience I doe thinke that there is not an objection made butt that itt hath bin answer'd, butt the speeches are soe longe. I am sorry for some passion and some reflections, and I could wish where itt is most taken the cause had nott bin given. Itt is a fundamentall Constitution of the Kingdome there—I would faine know whether the choise of Burgesses in Corporations should nott bee alter'd. The end wherfore I speake is onely this, you<sup>b</sup> thinke wee shall bee worse then wee are, if wee come to a conclusion by a vote. If itt bee putt to the question wee shall all know one another's minde. If itt bee determined and the resolutions knowne, wee shall take such a course as to putt itt in execution. This Gentleman<sup>c</sup> sayes if hee cannott goe hee will sitt still. Hee thinkes hee hath a full libertie, wee thinke wee have nott. There is a great deale of difference betweene us two. If a man hath all hee doth desire, [he may wish to sit still]; butt [if] I thinke I have nothing att all of what I fought for, I doe nott thinke the argument holds that I must desist as well as hee.

Mr. Pettus.

The rich would very unwillinglie bee concluded by the poore; and there is as much reason, and indeed noe reason that the rich should conclude the poore as the poore the rich. There should bee an equall share in both. I understood your Engagement was, that

<sup>a</sup> The last ten lines of Ireton's speech are too confused for amendment. They may perhaps be paraphrased thus: "If you will appoint a committee to consider of some more equal distribution of that—so as you preserve the equitable part of that—keeping the franchise to men who are likely to be independent and not given up to the wills of others—thus far I shall agree with you. On the other hand, to those who say 'I will not go with you except you go further,' I answer, 'I will go with you as far as I can, and when I can go no further I will sit down; I will not make any disturbance among you.'"

<sup>b</sup> *i.e.* Cromwell.

<sup>c</sup> *i.e.* Ireton.







you would use all your indeavours for the liberties of the people, that they should bee secur'd. If there is a Constitution that the people are not free that should bee annull'd. Butt this Constitution doth nott make people free, that Constitution which is now sette uppe is a Constitution of 40s. a yeare.

Lieut. Generall.

Heere's the mistake, [the whole question is] whether that's the better Constitution in that paper,<sup>a</sup> or that which is. Butt if you will goe uppon such a ground as that although a better Constitution was offer'd for the removing of the worse, yett some Gentlemen are resolved to stick to the worse, there might bee a great deale of prejudice uppon such an apprehension. I thinke you are by this time satisfied, that itt is a cleare mistake; for itt is a dispute<sup>b</sup> whether or noe this bee better; nay, whether itt bee nott destructive to the Kingedome.

Mr. Pettus.

I desire to speake one worde to this businesse, because I doe nott know whether my occasions will suffer mee to attend itt any longer. The great reason that I have heard is [that this is] the Constitution of the Kingdome, the utmost Constitution of itt; and if wee destroy this Constitution there is noe propertie. I suppose that itt were very dangerous if Constitutions should tie uppe all men in this nature.

Com. Ireton.

First the thinge itt self were dangerous if itt were settled to destroy propertie. Butt I say the principle that leads to this is destructive to propertie; for by the same reason that you will alter

<sup>a</sup> "This," *i. e.* the constitution in that paper, in the "Agreement of the People."

<sup>b</sup> *i. e.* "it is disputable."

<sup>c</sup> *i. e.* "The constitution proposed by the 'Agreement,' if it were actually established."



this Constitution meerly that there's a greater Constitution by nature—by the same reason, by the law of nature, there is a greater liberty to the use of other men's goods which that property barres you of; and I would faine have any man shew mee why I should destroy that libertie, which the freeholders and Burgers in Corporations have in chusing Burgesses—that which [if] you take away you leave noe Constitution—and this because there is a greater freedome due to mee by the law of nature—more then that I should take another man's goods because the law of nature does allow me.

Col. Rainborow.

I would grant somethinge that the Commissary Generall sayes. But whether this bee a just propriety, the propriety sayes that 40<sup>s</sup>. a yeare inables a man to elect<sup>a</sup>—If itt were stated to that, nothing would conduce soe much whether some men doe agree or noe.

Capt. Rolfe.

I conceive that as wee are mett heere, there are one or two thinges mainly to be prosecuted by us; that is especially unitie, [the] preservation of unity in the Army; and soe likewise to putt ourselves into a capacity therby to doe good to the Kingedome. Therefore I shall desire, that there may bee a tender consideration had of that which is soe much urged, in that of an equall as well as of a free Representative. I shall desire that [there may bee] some thoughts of a medium or a composure, in relation to servants or to forraigners, or such others as shall bee agreed upon. I say then I conceive, excepting those, there may bee a very equitable sence resented to us from that offer in our owne Declarations wherin wee doe offer the common good of all, unlesse they have made any shippewrack or losse of itt.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *i. e.* "Whether this be a just constitution which says that 40<sup>s</sup> a year property enables a man to elect? If the question were stated so, etc."

<sup>b</sup> See the Engagement of June 5, 1647, which concludes: "We shall study to



Lieut. Chillenden.

In the beginning of this discourse there were overtures made of imminent danger. This way wee have taken this afternoone is nott the way to prevent itt. I should humbly move that wee should putt a speedy end to this businesse, and that not onely to this maine question of the paper, butt alsoe that, according to the Lieutenant Generall's motion, a Committee may be chosen seriously to consider the thinges in that paper, and compare them with divers thinges in our Declarations and Engagements; that soe as wee have all profest to lay downe ourselves before God—If wee take this course of debating uppon one question a whole afternoone, if the danger bee soe neere as itt is supposed itt were the ready way to bringe us into itt. [I desire] that thinges may bee putt into a speedy dispatch.

Capt. Clarke.

I presume that the great stick heere is this: that if every one shall have his propriety itt does bereave the Kingedome of its principall, fundamentall Constitution that itt hath. I presume that all people and all nations whatsoever have a liberty and power to alter and change their Constitutions, if they finde them to bee weake and infirme. Now if the people of England shall finde this weaknesse in their Constitution they may change itt if they please. Another thinge is this. If the light<sup>a</sup> of nature bee onely [followed] in this, itt may destroy the propriety which every man can call his owne. The reason is this, because this principall and light of nature<sup>a</sup> doth give all men their owne. As for example the clothes uppon my back because they are nott another man's. If every man hath this propriety of Election to chuse those whom [they think fit], you feare [it] may begett inconveniences. I doe

promote such an establishment of common and equal right and freedom to the whole, as all might equally partake of, but those that do, by denying the same to others, or otherwise, render themselves incapable thereof."

\* I should suggest here "right of nature," and "principle of the right of nature."



nott conceive that any thinge may bee soc nicely and preciselie done, butt that itt may admitt of inconveniencie. If itt bee in that wherein itt is now there may those inconveniencies rise from them. For my part I know nothing butt the want of love in itt, and the sword must decide itt. I shall desire before the question bee stated itt may bee moderated as for forraigniers.<sup>a</sup>

Sir Hardresse Waller.

This was that I was saying, I confesse I have nott spoken yett, and having heard so many speake I was willing to bee silent that I might learne too. Itt is nott easy for us to say when this dispute will have an end; butt I thinke itt is easie to say when the Kingedome will have an end. If wee doe nott breath out ourselves wee shall bee kick't and spurn'd of all the world. I would faine know how farre the question will decide itt, for certainly wee must nott expect while wee have tabernacles heere to bee all of one minde. If it bee to bee decided by a question, and all parties are satisfied in that, I thinke the sooner you hasten to itt the better. If otherwise we shall needlessly discover our dividing opinion, which as long as itt may bee avoided I desire itt may. Therefore I desire to have a period [put to this debate].

Capt. Awdeley.

I chanc't to speake a worde or two. Truly there was more offence taken att itt. For my parte I spoke against every man living,—nott onely against your self<sup>b</sup> and the Commissary, butt [against] every man that would dispute till wee have our throates cutt—and therefore I desire I may not lie in any prejudice before your persons. I professe, if soc bee there were none butt you and the Commissary Generall alone to maintain that argument, I would

<sup>a</sup> I take this speech of Clarke's to be merely a second version of the speech on p. 330, not a new speech. It will be observed that Waller does not answer Clarke but Chillenden.

<sup>b</sup> To Cromwell, who was presiding in the absence of Fairfax.





die in any place in England, in asserting that itt is the right of every free borne man to elect, according to the rule, *Quod omnibus spectat, ab omnibus tractari debet*, that which concernes all ought to bee debated by all. Hee knew noe reason why that law should oblige when hee himself had noe finger in appointing the law-giver.

Capt. Byshopp.

You have mett heere this day to see if God would shew you any way wherein you might joynctlie preserve the Kingedome from itt<sup>s</sup> destruction, which you all apprehend to bee att the doore. God is please'd nott to come in to you. There is a Gentleman, Mr. Saltmarsh,<sup>a</sup> did desire what hee has wrote may bee read to the Generall Councill. If God doe manifest any thinge by him I thinke itt ought to bee heard.

Commissary Generall.

That you will alter that Constitution in my apprehension, from a better to a worse, from a just to a thinge that is lesse juste, and I will nott repeate the reasons of that butt referre to what I have declar'd before. To mee, if there were nothing butt this, that there is a Constitution, and that Constitution which is the very last Constitution, which if you take away you leave nothing of Constitution, and consequently nothing of right or propertie, [it would be enough]. I would nott goe to alter that, though a man could propound that which in some respects might bee better, unlesse itt could bee demonstrated to mee that this were unlawfull, or that this were destructive. Truly therfore I say for my parte, to goe on a suddaine to make such a limitation as that [to inhabitants] in generall—if you doe extend the latitude [of it so far] that any man shall have a voice in Election who has nott that interest in this Kingedome that is permanent and fix'd, who hath nott that interest

<sup>a</sup> Rushworth, vii., 913, 944.



uppon which hee may have his<sup>a</sup> freedome in this Kingedome without dependance, you will putt itt into the hands of men to chuse, [instead] of men to preserve their libertie, [men] who will give itt away.

I am confident our discontent and dissatisfaction, if ever they doe well, they doe in this. If there bee any thinge att all that is a foundation of libertie itt is this, that those who shall chuse the law makers shall bee men freed from dependance uppon others. I have a thinge putt into my heart which I cannott butt speake. I professe I am afraid, that if wee, from such apprehensions as these are of an imaginable right of nature opposite to Constitution—if wee will uppon this businesse of that enlargement contend and hazard the breaking of peace, I am afraid wee shall finde the hand of God will follow itt. I thinke if wee from imagination and conceits will goe about to hazard the peace of the Kingdome, to alter the Constitution in such a point, wee shall see that that libertie which wee soe much talke of and [have so much] contended for shall bee nothing att all by this our contending for itt, by putting itt into the hands of those men that will give itt away when they have itt.<sup>b</sup>

Lient. Generall.

If wee should goe about to alter these thinges, I doe nott thinke that wee are bound to fight for every particular proposition. Servants while servants are nott included. Then you agree that hee that receives almes is to bee excluded.

Lient. Col. Reade.

I suppose itt's concluded by all, that the chusing of Representatives is a priviledge; now I see noe reason why any<sup>c</sup> man that is a

<sup>a</sup> MS. "leave this."

<sup>b</sup> Compare the reasons against the "Bill for a new Representative," given in Cromwell's first speech in Carlyle's *Cromwell*. In this paragraph the position of several clauses has been altered.

<sup>c</sup> MS. "every."



native ought to bee excluded that priviledge, unless from voluntarie servitude.

Mr. Pettus.

I conceive the reason why wee would exclude apprentices, or servants, or those that take almes, is because they depend uppon the will of other men and should bee afraid to displease [them]. For servants and apprentices, they are included in their masters, and soe for those that receive almes from doore to doore; butt if there bee any generall way taken for those that are nott [so] bound [to the will of other men] itt would doe well.

Mr. Everard.<sup>a</sup>

I being sent from the Agents of the five regiments with an answer unto a writing, the Committee was very desirous to inquire into the depth of our intentions. Those things that they had there manifested in the paper I did declare, and what I did understand as a particular person. It was the Lieutenant General's desire for an understanding with us, presuming those things I did declare did tend to unity; "and if soe [said he] you will lett it appeare by coming unto us."<sup>b</sup> Wee have gone thus farre, wee have had two or three meetinges to declare and hold forth whatt itt is wee stand uppon. [Wee stand upon] the principles of unity and freedome. Wee have declar'd in what wee conceive these principles doe lie. I shall nott name them all because they are knowne unto you. Now in the progresse of these disputes and debates wee finde that the time spends, and noe question butt our adversaries are harder att worke then wee are. I heard (butt I had noe such testimonie as I could take hold of) that there are meetinges daily and contrivances against us. Now for our parts I hope you will nott say all is yours, butt wee have nakedlie and freedie unbosom'd

<sup>a</sup> *Ibid* pp. 226, 233, 258, 276, 285, 288.

<sup>b</sup> The clauses making up these three sentences have been transposed. Lines 15-30 on p. 343, "It was told mee . . . manifest unto you," seem properly to belong to this portion of the speech.

the first of these is the fact that the

the second is the fact that the

the third is the fact that the

the fourth is the fact that the

the fifth is the fact that the

ourselves unto you. Though those things have startled many at the first view, yett wee finde there is good hopes. Wee have fix't our resolutions, and wee are determin'd, and wee want nothing butt that only God will direct us to what is just and right. Butt I understand, that [in] all these debates if wee shall agree uppon any one thinge, [to say] "this is our freedome," "this is our libertie," "this liberty and freedome wee are debarr'd of and wee are bereav'd of all those comforts," [that even] in case wee should finde out half a hundred of these, yett the maine businesse is how wee should finde them, and how wee should come by them. Is there any liberties that wee finde ourselves deprived of—if wee have greivances lett us see who are the hinderances, and when wee have pitched uppon that way—I conceive—I speake humbly in this, one thinge that I conceive myself as a particular person—that these delays, these disputes will prove little incouragement. Itt was told mee by [one of] these Gentlemen that hee had great jealousies that wee would nott come to the triall of our spiritts, and that perhaps there might happen [to be] another designe in hand. I said to his Honour againe, if they would nott come to the light I would judge they had the workes of darkenesse in hand. Now as they told mee againe on the other hand, when itt was questioned by Col. Hewson, on the other hand they told mee that these Gentlemen, nott naming any particular persons, they will hold you in hand, and keepe you in debate and dispute till you and wee [shall] all come to ruine. Now I stood as a moderator betweene these things. When I heard the Lieutenant Generall speake I was mervailously taken uppe with the plainesse of the carriage. I said, "I will bringe them to you," "you shall see if there hearts bee soe; for my parte I see nothing butt plainesse and uprightnesse of heart made manifest unto you." I will nott judge nor draw any longe discourses uppon our disputes this day. Wee may differ in one thinge, that you conceive this debating and disputations will doe the worke, [we conceive] wee must putt ourselves into the former priviledges which wee want.





Sir Hardresse Waller.

I thinke this Gentleman hath dealt very ingenuously and plainly with us, I pray God wee may doe soe too, and I for one will doe itt. I thinke our disputings will not doe the thinge. I thinke if we doe make itt our resolution that wee doe hold itt forth to all powers, Parliament or Kinge, or whoever they are, to lett them know that these are our rights, and if wee have them nott, wee must get them the best way wee can.

Licut. Generall.

I thinke you say very well, and my freind att my back,<sup>a</sup> hee tells mee that [there] are great feares abroad, and they talke of some thinges such as are nott onely specious to take a great many people with, butt reall, and substantiall, and such as are comprehensive of that that hath the good of the Kingedome in it. Truly if there bee never soe much desire of carrying on these thinges [together], never soe much desire of conjunction, yett if there bee not libertie of speech to come to a right understanding of thinges, I thinke itt shall bee all one as if there were noe desire att all to meete. I may say itt with truth that I verily beleive there is as much reallity and heartinesse amongst us [as amongst you] to come to a right understanding, and to accord with that that hath the settlement of the Kingdome in itt. Though when itt comes to particulars wee may differ in the way, yett I know nothing butt that every honest man will goe as farre as his conscience will lett him, and hee that will goe farther I thinke hee will fall back. And I thinke when that principle is written in the hearts of us, and when there is nott hypocrisie in our dealinges, wee must all of us resolve uppon this, that 'tis God that perswades the heart; if there be a doubt of sincerity, itt's the Devill that created that effect; and 'tis God that gives uprightnesse, and I hope with such an heart that wee have all met withall; if wee

<sup>a</sup> Everard.



have not, God finde him out that came without itt; for my parte I doe itt.

Com. Generall.

When you have done this according to the number of inhabitants, doe you not thinke itt is very variable, for the number will change every day? I would have us fall to somethinge that is practicable with as little paines and dissatisfaction as may bee. I remember, that in the proposalls that went out in the name of the Army itt is propounded as a rule to bee distributed according to the rates that the Counties beare in the [burdens of the] Kingedome; and remember then you have a rule, and though this be not a rule of exactnesse, yett there was something of equality in itt, and itt was a certaine rule where all are agreed, and therefore wee should come to some settling. Now I doe nott understand wherin the advantage does lie from a suddaine danger, uppon a thinge that will continue soe long, and will continue soe uncertaine as this is.\*

Sir Hardresse Waller.

'Tis thought there's imminent danger; I hope to God we shall bee soe ready to agree for the future that wee shall all agree for the present to rise as one man if the danger bee such, for it is an impossibility to have a remedy in this. The paper sayes, that this Parliament is to continue a yeare, butt will the great burthen of the people be ever satisfied with papers [whilst] you eate and feede uppon them? I shall be glad, that [if] there bee nott any present danger, you will thinke of some way to ease the burthen that wee may take a course [to do it]; and when wee have satisfied the people that wee doe really intend the good of the Kingdome [they will believe us]—Otherwise if the four Evangelists were heere and lay free quarter uppon them, they will not believe you.

\* On the rule referred to, see "Heads of the Proposals of the Army," i. § 5.



Col. Rainborow.

Moved,

That the Army might bee called to a Rendezvous, and things settled.

Com. Ireton.

Wee are called back to Engagements. I thinke the Engagements wee have made and published, and all the Engagements of all sorts, have bin better kept by those that did nott see much cry out for itt then by those that doe; and if you will [have itt] in plaine termes, better kept then by those that have brought this paper. Give mee leave to tell you that in one point, in the Engagement of the Army not to devide, I am sure that hee that understands the Engagement of the Army nott to devide or disband, [as meaning] that wee are nott to devide for quarters for the ease of the country, or the satisfaction of service—hee that does understand itt in that sence, I am nott capable of his understanding.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The Army in their Engagement of June 5 declared that they would not disband till they had such satisfaction for their grievances and desires as soldiers and such security for their rights as private men as should appear sufficient to the General Council of the Army then established. "Without such satisfaction and security we shall not willingly disband, nor divide, nor suffer ourselves to be disbanded or divided" (Rushworth, vi., 512). On this subject the following observations are made in the *Case of the Army stated*, p. 2.

"That the Armie's Engagement, Representations, Declarations, and Remonstrances, and promises in them contained, are declined, and more and more dayly broken, and not only in some smaller matters wherein the Armie and the Kingdome are not so neerly concerned, but in divers particulars of dangerous consequence to the Army and the whole Nation, as,

"First, In the Engagement, page five, the Army promised every Member thereof each to other, and to the Parliament and Kingdome, that they would neither disband nor divide, nor suffer themselves to be disbanded or divided untill satisfaction should be given to the Army in relation to their grievances and desires; and securitie that neither the Army nor the free borne people of *England*, should remaine subiect to such injuries, oppression, and abuse, as the corrupt party in the Parliament then had attempted against them.

"Secondly, The Traine of Artillery is now to be disbanded, before satisfaction of securitie is given to the whole Army in relation to themselves, or other the free borne people, either in respect to their grievances or desires. And when the strength



There was another sence in itt, and that is, that wee should nott suffer ourselves to bee torne into pieces—such a dividing as [that] is really a disbanding, and for my parte I doe nott know what disbanding is if nott that deviding. [I say that] the subscribers of this paper, the authours of that Booke that is called, ‘The Case of the Armie,’ I say that they have gone the way of disbanding. Disbanding of an Army is nott parting in a place, for if that bee soe, did not wee att that night disband to severall quarters? Did wee nott then send severall Regiments—Col. Scroope’s Regiment into the West<sup>a</sup>—wee know where itt was first—Col. Horton’s Regiment into Wales for preventing of insurrection there—Col. Lambert’s [and] Col. Lilburne’s Regiment[s] then sent downe for strengthening such a place as Yorke. And yett the authours of that paper, and the subscribers of them—for I cannott thinke the authours and subscribers all one—we all know, and they may know, that there’s noe parte of the Army is dispersed to quarters further then that. Wherupon that outerie is [made]. They goe to scandalise [us as breakers of the Engagement not to disband or divide].<sup>b</sup> Butt hee that will goe to understand this to bee a dividing that wee engaged against, hee lookes att the name, and nott att the thinge. That deviding which is a disbanding [is] that or sinews of the Army be broken, what effectual good can be secured for themselves or the people in case of opposition.

“Thirdly, The Army is divided into quarters so farre distant that one part is in no capabilitie to give timely assistance to another, if any designe should be to disband any part by violence sodainly, although neither our grievances nor desires as Soldiers or Commoners are redressed or answered. And as we conceive this dividing of the Army before satisfaction on securitie as aforesaid, to be contrary to the Armies intention in their Engagement, at the said Rendezvous, so we conceive it hath from that time given all the advantage to the enemies, to band and designe against the Armie, whereby not only pay hath been kept from the Soldiers, and securitie for areers prevented, but the kingdom was indangered to have been imbroyled in blood, and the settlement of the peace and freedome of the Nation, hath been thus long delayed.”

<sup>a</sup> Scroope’s Regiment had been at Holdenby, where a part of it was employed in guarding the King.

<sup>b</sup> MS. “they goe to scandalise an engagement or to devide.”







deviding which makes noe Army, and that dissolving of that order and government which is as essentiall to an Army as life is to a man—which if it be taken away I thinke that such a companie are noe more an armie than a rotten carcass is a man—and [it is] those [who have done this] that have gone to devide the Armie. And what else is there in this paper [but] that we have acted soe vigorously for [already? We proposed that this Parliament should end within a year at most]; they doe not propse that this Parliament should end till the beginning of September. When all comes uppon the matter itt is but a criticall difference, and the very substance of that we have declared before. For my part I professe it seriously that we shall find in the issue that the principall of that division, of [that] disbanding is noe more then this, whether such or such [men] shall have the managing of the businesse. I say plainly the way [they have taken] hath bin the way of disunion and division, and [the dissolution] of that order and Government by which wee shall bee enabled to act, and that by the deviding from that generall Councill, wherein wee have all engaged we should bee concluded, and the endeavouring to draw the soldiers to run this way; and I shall appeale to all men whether there can bee any breach of the Army higher then that breach wee have now spoken of. [As for] that word “deviding the Army,” let it bee judged whether [when we said] wee will nott divide [but] with such [and such] satisfaction, whether that deviding were nott more truly and properlie this deviding in every man’s heart wherein wee doe goe apart one from another, and consequently [whether] those that have gone this way have nott broke the Engagement; [and] whether that [other deviding] were a deviding, [or] a keeping of the Engagement: and those that doe judge the one I doe nott thinke that wee have bin fairely dealt with.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Throughout this speech of Ireton’s the sentences in the MS. are so broken and confused that much re-arrangement was necessary to make the sense intelligible. Compare the “Remonstrance of his Excellency, Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the Council of War, concerning the late discontent and distraction in the Army” (November 14, 1647). It was evidently based on this speech and was probably drawn up by Ireton.



Col. Rainborow,

I doe nott make any great wonder that this Gentleman hath sence above all men in the world, butt for these thinges hee is the man that hath undertaken them all. I say this Gentleman hath the advantage of us, hee hath drawne uppe the most parte of them; and why may hee nott keepe a sence that wee doe nott know of? If this Gentleman had declar'd to us att first that this was the sence of the Armie in deviding, and itt was meant that men should nott divide in opinions—To mee that is a mistery. Itt is a huge reflection, a taxing of persons, and because I will avoide further reflections, I shall say noe more.

Agitater,

Wheras you say the Agents did itt, [it was] the souldiers did putt the Agents uppon these meetinges. Itt was the dissatisfactions that were in the Army which provoak't, which occasion'd those Meetinges, which you suppose tends soe much to deviding; and the reasons of such dissatisfactions are because those whome they had to trust to act for them were nott true to them.

Comm. Gen.

If this bee all the effect of your meetinges to agree uppon this paper, there is butt one thinge in this that hath nott bin insisted uppon and propounded by the Army heertofore all alonge.<sup>a</sup> Heere<sup>b</sup> itt is putt according to the number of inhabitants; there according to the taxes. This<sup>b</sup> sayes a period att such a day, the last of September, the other sayes a period within a yeare att most. The Agreement says that these have the power of making law, and determining what is law without the consent of

<sup>a</sup> Ireton compares "the Heads of the Proposals of the Army," published Aug. 1, 1647, with "the Agreement of the People," first as to the basis to be taken in the equalisation of the constituencies, secondly as to the date to be fixed for the dissolution of Parliament, thirdly as to the question of the powers of the House of Commons.

<sup>b</sup> *i.e.* the Agreement.



another.<sup>a</sup> 'Tis true the "Proposalls" said nott that, and for my parte, if any man will putt that to the question whether wee shall concurre with itt I am in the same minde,<sup>b</sup> if you putt itt in any other hands then those that are freemen; butt if you shall putt the question, and with that limitation that hath bin all alonge acknowledged by the Parliament, till wee can acquitt ourselves justly from any Engagement old or new that wee stand in to preserve the person of the Kinge, the persons of Lords, and their rights soe farre as they are consistent with the common right,<sup>c</sup> till that bee done I thinke there is reason that exception should continue which hath bin all alonge, that is, where the safetie of the Kingdome is concern'd, this they seeme to hold out. But where I see things would nott doe reall mischief I would hold to positive constitution. I would neither bee thought to bee a wronge doer or disturber; soe longe as I can with safetie continue a constitution I will doe itt.<sup>d</sup> And therfore where I finde that the safetie of the Kingdome is nott concern'd, I would nott for every trifling [cause] make that this shall bee a law, though neither the Lords who have a claime to itt nor the Kinge who hath a claime to itt will consent. Butt where this is concern'd<sup>e</sup>—Uppon the whole matter lett men butt consider those that have thus gone away to devide from the Army.

<sup>a</sup> Clause 4 of the Agreement: "That the powers of this and all future representatives of this Nation, is inferior only to those who chuse them, without the consent or concurrence of any other person or persons" (*i. e.* King or Lords).

<sup>b</sup> May be paraphrased: "If any man will put it to the question whether we shall concur with that, I am willing to concur with it, provided you put the question with that limitation that hath bin all along acknowledged by the Parliament, that is where the safetie of the kingdom is concerned. Till we can acquit ourselves justly from any engagement, new or old, that we stand in to preserve the persons and rights of the King and Lords so far as they are consistent with the common right—till that be done I think there is reason that exception should continue." The rest is too chaotic.

<sup>c</sup> In the Declaration of June 14 the words used are, "so far as may consist with the right and freedom of the subject and the security of the same for the future."

<sup>d</sup> The position of this clause has been altered.

<sup>e</sup> "I do agree," etc., as on p. 351.



Admitt that this Agreement of the people bee the advantage, itt may bee wee shall agree to that without any limitation. I doe agree, that the Kinge is bound by his oath att his coronation to agree to the law that the Commons shall chuse without Lords or any body else. If I can agree any further that if the Kinge doe nott confirme with his auctority the lawes that the people shall chuse, wee know what will follow.<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Pettus.

I had the happinesse sometimes to bee att the debate of the Proposals, and my opinion was then as itt is now, against the Kinges vote and the Lords. Butt nott soe as I doe desire,<sup>b</sup> since itt hath pleased God to raise a companie of men that doe stand uppe for the power of the House of Commons, which is the Representative of the people, and deny the negative voice of King and Lords. For my parte I was much unknowne to any of them, butt only as I heard their principles, and hearing their principles I cannott butt joyne with them in my judgement, for I thinke itt is reasonable. That all lawes are made by their consent,<sup>c</sup> wheras you seeme to make the Kinge and Lords soe light a thinge as that itt may bee to the destruction of the Kingedome to throwe them out, and without prejudice [to keep them in]. For my parte I cannott butt thinke that both the power of Kinge and Lords was ever a branch of

<sup>a</sup> The controversy between the King and Parliament as to the meaning of the King's Coronation Oath had been very bitter in 1642. It then turned chiefly on the interpretation of the word "elegerit."

The Levellers now sought to interpret the oath so as to deny the legislative power of the House of Lords. Wildman in criticising the "Proposals," complains: "A restriction to their usurpation of a negative voice to all the resolutions of the Commons, is not once named, or intimated; although Ireton himself hath confessed in their counsels, that the King by his oath is obliged to confirm such laws as the Commons should chuse; the word 'Vulgus' in the King's oath, signifying people, or folke, excludes the Lords totally from any right to intermeddle in the making of laws" (*Putney Projects*, p. 41).

<sup>b</sup> *i. e.* "I did not then desire it so much as I do now."

<sup>c</sup> *i. e.* The consent of the King and the Lords is now necessary to the making of all laws.





Tyranny, and if ever a people shall free themselves from Tyranny, certainly itt is after 7 yeares warre and fighting for their libertie. For my parte, [I think that] if the Constitution of this Kingdome shall bee established as formerly, itt might rivett Tyranny into this Kingedome more strongly then before. For when the people shall heare that for 7 yeares together the people were plundered, and [that] after they had overcome the Kinge, and kept the Kinge under restraint, att last the Kinge comes in, then itt will rivett the Kinges interest; and soe when any men shall indeavour to free themselves from Tyranny wee may doe them mischief and noe good. I thinke itt's most just and equall, since a number of men have declar'd against itt, they should bee encouraged in itt; and nott discouraged; and I finde by the Councill that their thoughts are the same against the Kinge and Lords, and if soe bee that a power may bee raised to doe that itt would doe well.

Mr. Wildman.

Truly, Sir, I being desired by the Agents yesterday to appeare att Councill or Committees either, att that time, I suppose I may bee bold to make knowne what I know of their sence, and a little to vindicate them in their way of proceeding, and to shew the necessity of this way of proceeding that they have entred uppon. Truly, Sir, as to breaking of Engagements: the Agents doe declare their principle, that whensoever any Engagement cannott bee kept justly they must breake that Engagement. Now though itt's urg'd they ought to condescend to what the Generall Councill doe [resolve], I conceive itt's true [only] soe longe as itt is for their safetie. I conceive [itt's] just and righteous for them to stand uppe for some more speedy vigorous actinges. I conceive itt's noe more then what the Army did when the Parliament did nott only delay deliverance butt oppos'd itt; and I conceive this way of their appearing hath nott appear'd to bee in the least way anythinge tending to devision, since they proceede to cleare the rights of the people; and soe



longe as they proceede uppon those righteous principles [for which we first engaged],<sup>a</sup> itt cannott bee laid to their charge that they are deviders. And though itt bee declared [that they ought to stand only as soldiers and not as Englishmen], that the malice of the enemies would have bereaved you of your liberties as Englishmen; therefore as Englishmen they are deeply concerned to regard the due observation of their rights, [and have the same right to declare their apprehensions] as I, or any Commoner, have right to propound to the Kingedome my conceptions what is fitt for the good of the Kingedome. Whereas itt is objected, how will itt appear that their proceedings shall tend for the good of the Kingedome? The matter is different. Whereas itt was said before itt was propounded, there must bee an ende to the Parliament, an equality as to Elections---I finde itt to bee their minds---When they came there, they found many aversions from matters that they ought to stand to as souldiers, and nott as Englishmen, and therefore I find it. Concerning the matter of the thinge, I conceive it to bee a very vast difference in the whole matter of proposalls. The foundation of slavery was rivetted more strongly then before. As where the militia is instated in the Kinge and Lords,<sup>b</sup> and nott in the Commons, there is a foundation of a future quarrell constantlie laid. However the maine thing was that they found by the proposalls propounded the right of the Militia was acknowledged to bee in the Kinge, before any redresse of any one of the people's greivanees or any one of their burthens; and [the King was] soe to bee brought in as

<sup>a</sup> The three passages given in brackets are supplied from the *Case of the Army*, p. 20.

<sup>b</sup> Compare Wildman's *Putney Projects*, p. 40: "Although the Lords are the very offspring of the King's corrupt will; and were never so honoured by the people, as to have a trust committed to them to represent any county; yet those Proposals invest them with the highest authority only because of the King's Pattent. (1.) The Proposals allow them a power over the Militia, coordinate, and coequal, to the representative of all the nation, the Commons in Parliament; thus in the first and second property of the Second Proposal, the power of the Militia, etc. for ten years, to be disposed of by the Lords and Commons."



with a negative voice, wherby the people and Army that have fought against him when hee had propounded such thinges<sup>a</sup>— And finding [this] they perceived they were as they thought in a sad case, for they thought, hee coming in thus with a negative, the Parliament are butt as soe many cyphers, soe many round O's; for if the Kinge would nott doe itt hee might chuse, "Sic volo, sic jubeo," &c., and soe the corrupt party of the Kingedome must bee soe settled in the Kinge. The godly people are turn'd over and trampled uppon already in the most places of the Kingedome. I speake butt the words of the agents, and I finde this to bee their thoughts. Butt wheras itt is said, "how will this paper provide for anything for that purpose?" I say, that this paper doth lay downe the foundations of freedome for all manner of people. Itt doth lay the foundations of souldiers [freedom], wheras they found a great uncertainty in the proposalls: that they should goe to the Kinge for an act of indempnity, and thus the Kinge might command his Judges to hange them uppe for what they did in the warres; because the present Constitution being left as itt was, nothing was law butt what the Kinge sign'd, and nott any ordnance of Parliament. And considering this, they thought itt should bee by an Agreement with the people, wherby a rule betweene the Parliament and the people might bee sett, that soe they might bee destroyed neither by the Kinge's Prerogative, nor Parliament's priviledges.

<sup>a</sup> The *Case of the Army*, p. 6, observes:—

"In the declaration of June 14, p. 10, as in all other Remonstrances and Declarations, it was desired, that the rights and liberties of the people might be secured, before the King's businesse should be considered. But now the grievances of the people are propounded to be considered after the restoring him to that legall power, and that in such a way according to the proposalls, viz. with a negative voice, that the people that have purchased by blood what was their right, of which the Kinge endeavoured to deprive them, should yet solely depend on his will for their relief in their grievances and oppressions; and in like manner the security for the Armie's arrears is proposed to be considered after the businesse of the Kinge be determined."

The same view is expressed in Wildman's *Putney Projects*, 1647, pp. 22, 23. As Ireton points out, Wildman was probably the author of the *Case of the Army*.



They<sup>a</sup> are nott bound to bee subject to the lawes as other men, [that is] why men cannott recover their estates. They thought there must bee a necessity of a rule betweene the Parliament and the people, soe that the Parliament should know what they were intrusted to, and what they were nott; and that there might bee noe doubt of the Parliament's power to lay foundations for future quarrells.<sup>b</sup> The Parliament shall nott meddle with a souldier after indemnity. Itt is agreed amongst the people, wheras betweene a Parliament and Kinge—if the Kinge were nott under restraint—should make an Act of Indemnity—wheras another Parliament cannott alter this—That these foundations might bee established.

<sup>a</sup> This refers to Parliamentary privilege, which is aimed at in the fourth clause in the Agreement: "That in all lawes made or to be made every person may be bound alike, and that no tenure, estate, charter, degree, birth, or place, doe conferre any exemption from the ordinary course of legal proceedings wherunto others are subjected." This is explained to mean, "That whereas now severall persons are by an usurped power exalted above the law and protected from due process at law, viz. Lords as Peers, although legally indebted, may not be touched with an arrest, nor be made subject to the censure of the law; whereby they have made little conscience when they have got men's estates in their hands, to return the same, but have stood upon their prerogative and thereby been protected, to the utter ruin and undoing of many of the free people of England." *The Grand Designe*, 1647, by John Harris.

<sup>b</sup> See the Letter of the Agitators, "For the noble and highly honoured, the Free born people of England," appended to the "Agreement of the People."

"We have therefore inserted it into this Agreement, that no person shall be questionable for anything done, in relation to the late publike differences, after the dissolution of this present Parliament, further then in execution of their judgment; that thereby all may be secure from all sufferings for what they have done, and not liable hereafter to be troubled or punished by the judgment of another Parliament, which may be to their ruine, unlesse this Agreement be joyned in, whereby any acts of indemnity or oblivion shall be made unalterable, and you and your posterities be secure. But if any shall inquire why we should desire to joyn in an Agreement with the People, to declare these to be our native Rights, and not rather petition to the Parliament for them; the reason is evident: No Act of Parliament is or can be unalterable, and so cannot be sufficient security to save you or us harmlesse from what another Parliament may determine, if it should be corrupted; and besides Parliaments are to receive the extent of their power and trust from those that befrust them; and therefore the people are to declare what their power or trust is, which is the intent of this Agreement."







That there might bee noe dispute betweene Lords and Commons, butt these thinges being settled, there should bee noe more disputes, butt that the Parliament should redresse the peoples grievances, wheras now all are troubled with Kinge's interests almost. And besides if this were settled, the Parliament should be free from those temptations—which for my owne parte I doe suppose to bee a truth, that this very Parliament, by the Kinge's voice in this very Parliament may destroy—wheras now they shall bee free from temptations and the Kinge cannott have an influence upon them as hee hath.<sup>a</sup>

Com. Gen. Ireton.

Gentlemen, I thinke there is noe man is able to give a better account of the sence of the Agents; hee hath spoke soe much as they have in their Booke and soe readily and therfore I see hee is very well able to give their sence. I wish their sences had nott bin prejudiciall to other men's sences; butt I feare as it will prove really prejudiciall to the Kingedome, how plausible soever it seemes to bee carried. That paper of the Case of the Armie doth soe abuse the Generall and Generall Councill of the Armie, that such and such thinges have bin done that made them doe thus and thus. First as to the materiall points of the paper. As to the businesse of the Lords you know the way wee were then in admitted noe other.<sup>b</sup> This Gentleman that speakes heere, and the other gentleman that spake before, when wee were att Reading framing the

<sup>a</sup> Wildman's argument is given in the *Case of the Army*, p. 12.

"The Armies and their assistants' indemnity is propounded to receive its strength from the King's consent; whereas not only his signing of or consent to any act is wholly null and void in law because he is under restraint and our indemnity will be insufficient if it shall depend in the least on his confirmation." He proceeds to argue that an act of indemnity passed by one Parliament might be repealed by another, "whereas another Parliament cannot alter this." Moreover, this very Parliament might be so corrupted by the King as to nullify an act of indemnity passed by it.

<sup>b</sup> From 1645 onwards the legislative and judicial powers of the House of Lords had been subject to constant attacks. Edwards, in the third part of his *Gangraena*, 1646, pp. 148, 196—200, collects a number of the utterances of the Levellers and



proposalls did nott thinke of this way. I am sure they did not thinke of this way; and according to the best judgements of those that were intrusted by the Generall Councill to drawe uppe the propsoalls, itt was carried by a question clearlie, that wee should nott. In these proposalls our businesse was to sett forth particulars; wee had sett forth generall Declarations, which did come to as much in effect in this<sup>a</sup>. The thinge then proposed was, that wee should nott take away the power of the Lords in this Kingedome, and itt was concluded that in the proposalls. Butt as to the Kinge wee were clear. There is nott one thinge in the proposalls, nor in what wee declar'd, that doth give the Kinge any negative voice; and therefore that's parte of the scandall amongst others. Wee doe not give the Kinge any negative, wee doe butt take the Kinge as a man with whome wee have bin att a difference, wee propound termes of peace. Wee doe nott demand that hee shall have noe Negative, butt wee doe nott say that hee shall have any. There's another thinge that wee have, as they say, gone from our Engagements in our Declarations in. [They say] that in the proposalls we goe to establish the

Sectaries against the House of Lords. "The speeches and writings of the Sectaries against the House of Peers within this last six months or thereabouts are fearful and strange, tending apparently to the total overthrow of the House of Peers and of having any Lords in this kingdom, denying them all legislative and judicial power, and giving it all to the House of Commons, or rather to that beast with many heads, the common people." The leaders of this attack were John Lilburne and Richard Overton. See *An Alarum to the House of Lords*, 1646, and Overton's *An Arrow against all Tyrants and Tyranny shot from the prison of Newgate into the Privileged Bowels of the Arbitrary House of Lords*. On three separate occasions the privileges of the House of Lords seem to have been guaranteed: in 1645, on the passing of the self-denying ordinance (Rushworth, vi., 14); and in the summer of 1647 (*Vindication of Sir William Waller*, pp. 192-6); in January, 1648, after the passing of the vote of no further addresses to the King (Rushworth, vii., 967).

<sup>a</sup> The text may be paraphrased thus:

"According to the best judgments of those that were entrusted to draw up the Proposals it was decided that we should not take away the power of the Lords in this kingdom, and it was so concluded in the Proposals. That in the Proposals our business was to set forth particulars. We had set forth general declarations which had come to much the same thing."



Kinge's Rights before [taking away] the peoples Greivances.<sup>a</sup> In our Generall Declarations wee first desire a purging of this Parliament, a period [to be set for] this Parliament, and provision for the certainty of future Parliaments; and if the Kinge shall agree in these thinges and what [things] else the Parliament shall propound that are necessary for the safetie of the Kingedome, then wee desire his Rights may bee consider'd soe farre as may consist with the Rights of the people. Wee did soe [speak] in the Declarations, and you shall see what wee did in the proposalls.<sup>a</sup> In the proposalls, [we put first] thinges that are essentiall to peace, and itt distinguishes those from the things that conduce to our better being, and thinges that lay foundations of an hopefull Constitution in the future. When those are past, then they say, 'that these thinges having the Kinge's concurrence wee desire that his Right may bee consider'd.' There were many other greivances and particular matters which wee did nott thinke soe necessary that they should precede the settling of a pece, which is the greatest greivance of the Kingdome. Our way was to take away that [first]. Then itt says there, [after] propounding what thinges wee thought in our judgements are to bee essentiall and necessary to peace, 'yet wee desire that the Parliament would loose noe time from the consideration of them.'<sup>b</sup> These Gentlemen

<sup>a</sup> In the Declaration of June 14, it is said: "These things we desire may be provided for by Bill or Ordinance of Parliament to which the royall assent may be desired. When his Majesty in these things, and what else shall be proposed by the Parliament, necessary for securing the Rights and Liberties of the people, and for settling the Militia and peace of the Kingdom shall have given his concurrence to put them past dispute, we shall then desire that the Rights of his Majestie and his Posterity may be considered of, and settled in all things, so farre as may consist with the Right and Freedom of the Subject and with the security of the same for the future."

In the Proposals, § xiv., it is demanded "That (the things heretofore proposed, being provided for settling and securing the rights, liberties, peace and safety of the kingdom) His Majestie's person, his Queen, and royall issue, may be restored to a condition of safety, honour and freedom in this nation, without diminution to their personal rights, or further limitation to the exercise of the regal power than according to the particulars aforegoing."

<sup>b</sup> After Clause xvi., the Proposals continue: "Next to the proposalls aforesaid for



would say now wee have gone from our Declarations, that wee propose the settling of the Kinge [first, because] itt stands before those Greivances. Wee say those Greivances are nott soe necessary, as that the remedying of them should bee before the settling of the peace of the Kingedome. What wee thought in our consciences to bee essentiall to the peace of the Kingedome wee did putt preceding to the consideration of the Kinge's personall Right; and the concurrence of [the King to] those is a condition without which wee cannott have any Right att all, and without [which] there can bee noe peace, and [we] have named [it] before the consideration of the Kinge's Rights in the settling of a peace, as a thinge necessary to the constitution of a peace. That therfore [to say] wee should preferre the Kinge's Rights before a generall good, was as unworthy and as unchristian an injury as ever was done [by any] to men that were in society with them, and meerly equivocation. Butt itt was told you, that the Generall Councill hath seemed to doe soe and soe, to putt the souldiers out of the way. Itt is suggested, that the Engagement is broken by our deviding to quarters; and whether that bee broken or nott in other thinges, itt is said, that the Generall Councill hath broken the Engagement in this; that wheras before wee were nott a mercinarie Army, now wee are. Lett any man butt speake what hath given the occasion of that. Itt hath bin pres't by some men that wee should [not] have subjected [our propositions] to the Parliament, and wee would stand to the proposi-

the present settling of a peace, wee shall desire that no time may be lost by the Parliament for despatch of other things tending to the welfare, ease and just satisfaction of the Kingdom." A number of grievances are then specially enumerated. In the Declaration of Aug. 2, special attention is called to this distinction. "To these proposalls which we here first tender as necessary to a peace . . . we cannot but add the further expression of our desires in some other particulars, which, though not so essential to peace, as necessarily to precede the settling of it, yet being matters of very public, and (most of them) of general grievance to the kingdom: we shall desire, that (the Parliament being set free) no time may be lost for a speedy consideration of them, so as the former things for the present settling of peace be not delayed thereby."







tions whatever they were; butt the sence of the Generall Councille was this, that, as they had sent their propositions to the Parliament, they would see what the Parliament would doe before they would conclude what themselves would doe; and that there was respect [to be had] to that which wee have hitherto accounted the fundamentall Councille of the Kingedome.<sup>a</sup> If all the people to a man had subscribed to this [Agreement]<sup>o</sup> then there would bee some security to itt, because noe man would oppose; butt otherwise our concurrence amongst ourselves is noe more then our saying our selves wee will bee indemnified. Our Indemnity must bee to somethinge that att least wee will uppehold, and wee see wee cannott hold to bee a conclusive authority of the Kingedome. For that [charge] of going to the Kinge for Indemnity, wee propose an Act of oblivion onely for the Kinges partie; wee propose for ourselves an Act of Indemnity and Justification. Is this the asking of a pardon? Lett us resort to the first petition of the Army wherein wee all were engag'd once, which wee made the basis of all our proceedings. In that wee say, that [wee wish] an ordinance might bee past to which the Royall Assent might bee desired; butt wee have [since] declar'd, that if the Royall Assent

<sup>a</sup> The charges referred to are shown by the following passages from the *Case of the Army*. "The whole intent of the Engagement and the equitable sense of it hath been perverted openly by affirming and by sinister means making seeming determinations in the Council that the Army was not to insist upon or demand any security for their own or other the freeborn people's freedoms or rights, though they might propound anything to the Parliament's consideration; and according to that high breach of their engagement their actions have been regulated, and nothing that was declared formerly to be insisted upon hath been resolvedly adhered to, or claimed as the Arme's or the people's due." (p. 3.)

"In the Declaration of June 14, it is declared that the Army took up arms in judgement and conscience for the people's just rights and liberties, and not as mercenary soldiers, hired to serve an arbitrary power of the State. But the strength of the endeavours of many hath been, and are now, spent to persuade the soldiers and agitators, that they stand as soldiers only to serve the State, and may not as free Commoners claim their right and freedom as due to them." (p. 4.)

<sup>b</sup> Heads of the Proposals Articles, vi., xvi.



could nott be had, wee should account the authority of the Parliament valid without itt.<sup>a</sup> Wee have desired in the Generall Councill, that for security for arreares wee might have the Royall Assent ; and lett mee tell you though I shall bee content to loose my arreares to see the Kingedome have its libertie—and if any man can doe itt unlesse itt bee by putting our libertie into the hands of those that will give itt away when they have done. Butt I say that I doe thinke that true in this, whoever talk't either of the indeavours of the souldiers, or of any other Indempnity by the sworde in their hands, is [for] the perpetuating of combustions, soe that worde cannott take place, and does nott suppose the setting of a peace, and by that authority which hath bin here by the legislative power of the Kingedome ; and hee that expects to have the arreares of the souldiers soe, I thinke hee does butt deceive himself.<sup>b</sup> For my owne parte I would give uppe my arreares, and for my parte loose my arreares, if wee have nott settlement ; noe arreares or want of Indempnity, nor any thinge in the world shall satisfie mee to have a peace uppon any termes, wherein that which is really the Right of this Nation is nott as farre provided for as can bee provided for by men. I could tell you many other particulars wherein there are divers grosse injuries done to the Generall and Generall Councill, and such a wronge as is nott fitt to bee done amonge Christians, and soe wronge, and soe false that I cannott thinke that they have gone soe farre in itt.

<sup>a</sup> Ireton refers first to the petition of the Army drawn up in March, 1647 : secondly, to the desires of the Army in relation to themselves as soldiers, September 21, 1647. (*Book of Army Declarations*, p. 160.)

<sup>b</sup> This passage may be thus paraphrased: "I think it is true in this, that whoever talks of the soldiers endeavouring to secure themselves by the swords in their hands, or any other indemnity to be obtained by force, is for the perpetuating of combustions. Talk of that kind is inconsistent with a settlement, and does not suppose a settlement by the authority that has been hitherto acknowledged by us, by the legislative authority of the kingdom. Anyone who expects to get the arrears of the soldiers paid except through Parliament and through such a general settlement deceives himself. For my part, if I am to choose between the payment of my arrears, and the general settlement of the kingdom I would rather lose my arrears."



Mr. Wildman.

I doe nott know what reason you have to suppose I should bee soe well acquainted with the Case of the Armie, and the thinges proposed [in it]. I conceive them to bee very good and just. Butt for that which I give as their sence, which you are pleased to say are scandalls cast upon the Army, that you propounded to bringe in the Kinge with his negative voice. The legislative power had bin acknowledged [hitherto] to bee in the Kinge with Lords and Commons, whereas you do now say the legislative power to be partly in him. Then considering that, I doe humbly propound to your consideration, [that] when you restraine the Kinges Negative in one particular, which is in restryning unequall distributions, and say directly in these very words [the King] "shall bee restored to his personall Rights," you doe now say the Legislative power to bee now partly in him. And therefore I conceive if I have any reason the Kinge is proposed to bee brought in with his Negative voice.\* And whereas you say itt is a scandall for [us to say that you propose] the Kinge to come in with his personall Rights [before the grievances of the people are redressed, it is said in the proposalls] that the Kinge consenting to those thinges the Kinge [is] to bee restored to all his personall Rights.

There's his Restoration. Nott a bare consideration what his

\* "Let the seventh particular in the first proposal be compared with the fourteenth proposall. In the seventh particular it is proposed 'that the orders and rules set down by the Commons in Parliament, for the freedom of election of Members and the right constitution of their own house, be as laws,' thus restraining the King's negative voice only in that one particular. And in the fourteenth proposal it is expressly desired, 'that there might be no further limitation to the exercise of the regall power, than according to the foregoing particular'" (*Putney Projects*, p. 32). Wildman also complains, that "When the proposalls were first composed there was a small restriction of the King's negative voice; it was agreed to be proposed that whatever bill should be propounded by two immediate succeeding parliaments should stand in full force and effect as any other law, though the King should refuse to consent" (p. 14). He states that Ireton and Cromwell to please the King expunged this restriction. The position of two clauses in Wildman's speech has been altered.



Rights are before the peoples Greivances [are considered], butt a Restoration to his personall Rights these thinges being done. Is nott the Parliament to loose their Rights? And for that of [asking the King's consent to an Act of] Indempnity, I doe nott say itt was an asking of the Kinge pardon; itt is rendring us uppe, [because the King is under constraint], and therfore itt is null in Law.

Saturday, 30 October, 1647.

Att the Committee of Officers att the Quartermaster Generalls.

Present.

Lieut. Generall.  
 Commissary Generall.  
 Col. Rainborow.  
 Sir Hardresse Waller.  
 Col. Lilburne.  
 „ Rich.  
 Lieutennant Col. Goffe.  
 Major Rainborow.  
 Capt. Clarke.

Capt. Merriman.  
 Lieut. Col. Cobbett.  
 Lieut. Chillenden.  
 Mr. Allen.  
 „ Walley.  
 „ Sexby.  
 „ Whiting.  
 „ Gayes.  
 „ Andrewes.

To consider of the papers of the Armie, and the paper of the People's Agreement, and to collect and prepare somewhat to bee insisted upon and adher'd unto for settling the Kingedome, and to cleare our proceedinges hitherto.

Putney, October 30, 1647.

Att the Committee of Officers appointed to consider of the Agreement, and compare itt with Declarations.

Agreed,

1. That there bee a period sett to this Parliament to end and bee





dissolved on the first day of September next ensuing att the furthest.

2. That secure provision may bee made for the succession, constitution, and clearing the power of Parliaments in future, as followeth:

1. For the certainty of their succession, that Parliaments shall biennially meete on the first Thursday in Aprill every second yeare from and after the ending of this Parliament, with such provision for the certainty therof as shall bee found needfull before the ending of this Parliament. The place of Meeting for each succeeding Parliament to bee where the Parliament last preceding shall appoint, unlesse the Council of State heerafter mencioned, during the intervall shall finde emergent cause to alter the place, and in such case the Meeting for the next Parliament to bee where the Council shall appoint, provided, that notice bee given therof to all the severall Divisions of the Kingedome for which Members are to bee chosen att least 30 dayes before the time of Meeting.

2. For the certainty of their sitting,

That each Bienniall Parliament shall certainly continue to sitt untill the last day of September next ensuing after the meeting therof, unlesse adjourn'd or dissolv'd sooner by their owne consent, butt uppon the said last day of September to dissolve of course.

3. That this Parliament and each succeeding Parliament, att or before Adjournement or Dissolution therof, shall or may appoint a Committee or Councell of State, and such other Committees to continue during the intervall with such powers as they shall finde needfull for such ends and purposes as are in these articles referr'd and left unto them.

4. That in the intervalls betwixt Bienniall Parliaments the

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

Kinge, without the advice and consent of the Councill of State may nott call a Parliizment extraordinary; butt uppon the advice of the Councill of State, and uppon their warrant for that purpose a Parliament extraordinary shall be called, provided, that itt meete above 70 dayes before the next Bienniall day, and shall dissolve of course att least 40 dayes before the same, soe as the course of Bienniall Elections may never bee interrupted. Other circumstances about the manner and way of calling such Parliaments extraordinary are to bee sett downe by this Parliament before the ende thereof.

5. For the Constitution of future Parliaments.

1. That the Election of Members for the House of Commons in succeeding Parliaments shall bee distributed to all Counties, or other partes or Devisions of the Kingdome, according to some rule of equality of proportion, soe as to render the House of Commons as neere as may bee an equall Representative of the whole body of the people that are to Elect; and in order therunto, that all obstructions to the freedome and equalitie of their choice, either by petitions or charters or other prerogative grants, bee removed, and the circumstances of number, place, and manner for more equall distributions bee sett downe by the Commons in this present parliament before the end therof; and what they shall order therein, as alsoe what they or the Commons in succeeding Parliaments shall from time to time further order or sett downe, for reducing the said Elections to more and more perfection of equality in distribution therof, freedome in the Election, order and regularity in the proceeding therof, and certainty in the returns, shall bee lawes in full force to those purposes.<sup>a</sup>

2. That the qualifications of the people that shall have voices in the Elections, as alsoe of those that shall bee capable of being

<sup>a</sup> This stipulation occurs also in the "Heads of the Proposals," (i. § 7), but is not so clearly stated.



Elected, bee determined by the Commons in this present Parliament before the end thereof, soe as to give as much enlargement to Common freedome as may bee, with a due regard had to the equality <sup>a</sup> and end of the present Constitution in that point; wherein wee desire itt may bee provided, that all freeborne Englishmen, or persons made free denizons of England, who have served the Parliament in the late warre for the liberties of the Kingdome, and were in the service before the 14th of June 1645, or have voluntarily assisted the Parliament in the said warre with mony, plate, horse, or Armes lent upon the Parliament's propositions for that purpose, brought in theruppon before the <sup>b</sup> day of 1642, shall upon such certificates therof as by the Commons in this present Parliament shall bee determined sufficient, or upon other sufficient evidence of the said service or assistance, bee admitted to have voices in the said elections for the respective Counties or Divisions wherein they shall inhabite, although they should nott in other respects bee within the qualifications to bee sett downe as aforesaid; as alsoe that itt bee provided, that noe person who for delinquencie in the late warre or otherwise hath forfeited or shall forfeite his said freedome, and is or shall bee soe adjudged by the Commons in Parliament, either by particular judgement or otherwise, or according to generall rules or law for that purpose, whiles hee standeth or shall stand soe adjudged and nott restor'd, shall bee admitted to have any voice in the said Elections or bee capable of being elected. And for that purpose, that itt bee provided either by law or judgement in this present Parliament, that noe person whatsoever who hath bin in hostility against the Parliament in the late warre shall bee capable of having a voice

<sup>a</sup> Perhaps this word should be "equity," see p. 334.

<sup>b</sup> Probably before 29th November, 1642, when an ordinance was passed for assessing those who had not voluntarily contributed. The third clause of the Agreement of the People (Jan. 1649) suggests May, 1643.



or being elected in the said Elections or to vote or sitt as a Member or Assistant in either House of Parliament untill the 2<sup>d</sup> Bienniall Parliament bee past.

3. That noe Peers made since the 21st day of May, 1642, or heerafter to bee made, shall bee admitted or capable to sitt or vote in Parliament without consent of both Houses.

6. For clearing of the power of Parliament in future and the interest of the people therin.<sup>a</sup>

Putney, 1 November, 1647.<sup>b</sup>

Att the Generall Councill of the Army.

Lieut. Generall.

The Lieutenant Generall first moved, that every one might speake their experiences as the issue of what God had given in answer to their prayers.

Capt. Allen<sup>c</sup>

Made a speech, expressing what experiences hee had received from himself, and from divers other godly people: that the worke that was before them was to take away the Negative voice of the Kinge and Lords.

A report from Col. Lambert's Regiment that two Horsemen, Agitators, came and perswaded them to send new Agitators, for that the Officers had broken their Engagements.

<sup>a</sup> The substance of the remaining articles is given later, pp. 407, 408.

<sup>b</sup> Monday, November 1. See Rushworth, iv., part 2, p. 859.

<sup>c</sup> Francis Allen of Ingoldsby's regiment; Major Allen of Berkshire, Tharlee, iv., 285.





Capt. Carter <sup>a</sup>

Exprest his experiences; that hee found nott any inclination in his heart as formerly to pray for the kinge, that God would make him yett a Blessing to the kingdome.

Coñ. Cowling

Made a speech expressing, that the sworde was the onelie thinge that had from time to time recover'd our Rightes, and which hee ever read in the Worde of God had recover'd the Rights of the people: that our ancestors had still recover'd their liberties from the Danes and Normans by the sworde, when they were under such a slaverie that an Englishman was as hatefull then as an Irishman is now, and what an honour those that were noble-men thought itt to marry their daughters to, or to marry the daughters of any cookes or bakers of the Normans.

Lieut. Col. Lilburne.<sup>b</sup>

That hee never observed that the recovery of our liberties which wee had before the Normans was the occasion of our taking uppe armes, or the maine quarrell; and that the Norman Lawes are nott slaverie introduced uppon us, but an augmentation of our slaverie before. Therefore I doubt for those reasons I have given you what was by some offer'd was not of God.

Lieut Generall.

To that which hath bin moved concerning the Negative vote, or things which have bin deliver'd in papers, and otherwise may present a reall pleasing. I doe nott say that they have all pleas'd, for I thinke that the Kinge is Kinge by contract, and I sha'll say,

<sup>a</sup> John Carter of Hewson's regiment.

<sup>b</sup> Henry Lilburne, Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment of his brother, Robert Lilburne, turned Royalist in 1648, and was killed at the re-capture of Tynemouth Castle, August 11, 1648.



as Christ said, "Lett him that is without sin cast the first stone;" and minde that worde of bearing one with another, itt was taught us to day. If wee had carried itt on in the Parliament and by our power without any thinges laid on [us of] that kinde, soe that wee could say that wee were without transgression, I should then say itt were just to cutt off transgressors; butt considering that wee are in our owne actions failing in many particulars, I thinke there is much necessity of pardoning of transgressors.

For the actions that are to bee done, and those that must doe them. I thinke itt is their proper place to conforme to the Parliament that first gave them their being; and I thinke itt is considerable<sup>a</sup> whether they doe contrive to suppress the power by that power or noe. If they doe continue to suppress them how they can take the determination of commanding men, conducting men, quartering men, keeping guards, without an authority otherwise then from themselves, I am ignorant of. And therefore I thinke there is much [need] in the Army to conforme to those thinges that are within their spheare. For those thinges that have bin done in the Army, as this of the Case of the Army truly Stated. There is much in itt usefull, and to bee condescended to; butt I am nott satisfied how farre wee shall presse [it]. Either they are a Parliament or noe Parliament. If they bee noe Parliament they are nothing, and wee are nothing likewise. If they bee a Parliament wee are to offer itt to itt. If I could see a visible presence of the people, either by subscriptions, or number [I should be satisfied with it]; for in the Governement of Nations that which is to bee look't after is the affections of the people, and that I finde which satisfies my conscience in the present thinge.

[Consider the case of the Jews]. They were first [divided into] families where they lived, and had heads of families [to govern

<sup>a</sup> Considerable, *i.e.* "to be considered of." The sense seems to be: "I think they ought to consider whether they intend to suppress the royalists(?) by the power of the Parliament."



them], and they were [next] under judges, and [then] they were under Kinges. When they came to desire a Kinge they had a Kinge, first Elective, and secondly by succession. In all these kindes of Governement they were happy and contented. If you make the best of itt, if you should change the Governement to the best of itt, itt is butt a morall thinge. Itt is butt as Paul sayes "Drosse and dunge in comparison of Christ;"<sup>a</sup> and why wee shall soe farre contest for temporall thinges, that if wee cannott have<sup>b</sup> this freedome wee will venture life and livelihood for itt. When every man shall come to this condition I thinke the State will come to desolation. Therefore the considering of what is fitt for the Kingedome does belonge to the Parliament—well composed in their creation and election—how farre I shall leave itt to the Parliament to offer itt. There may bee care—That the elections or formes of Parliament are very illegall, as I could name butt one for a Corporation to chuse two. I shall desire, that there may bee a forme for the electing of Parliaments. And another thinge as the perpetuity of the Parliament<sup>c</sup> that there is noe assurance to the people, butt that itt is perpetuall, which does [not] satisfie the Kingedome; and for other thinges that are to the Kinge's Negative vote as may cast you off wholly, itt hath bin the resolution of the Parliament and of the Army—If there bee a possibility of the Parliament's offering those thinges unto the Kinge that may secure us I thinke there is much may bee said for the [ir] doing of itt.

<sup>a</sup> Philippians iii., 8.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "yett if wee cannot have."

<sup>c</sup> Cromwell's argument may be thus summed up: "Leave the settlement of government to Parliament, but provide that Parliament be rightly constituted. There may be care taken that future Parliaments be well composed as to their creation and election. Elections to Parliament are sometimes illegal, as for instance for corporations to choose two. I shall desire that there may be a form for the electing of Parliament. Another thing to be provided against is the perpetuity of the same Parliament, there is no security at present that it shall not be perpetual." The policy advocated is that set forth in the Army Declaration of June 14. Compare Cromwell's remarks on pp. 328, 336.



As for the present condition of the Army I shall speake somethinge of itt. For the conduct of the Army I perceive there are severall Declarations from the Army and dissobligations to the Generalls orders by calling Rendezvous and otherwise. I must confesse I have a Commission from the Generall and I understand that I am to doe by itt. I shall conforme to him according to the rules and discipline of warre, and according to those rules I ought to bee conformable; and therefore I conceive itt is nott in the power of any particular men or any particular man in the Army to call a Rendezvouz of a troope, or Regiment, or [in the] least<sup>a</sup> to disoblige the Armie from those commands of the Generall. This way is destructive to the Armie and to every particular man in the Armie. I have bin inform'd by some of the Kinge's partie, that if they give us rope enough we will hange ourselves. [We shall hang ourselves], if wee doe not conforme to the rules of warre, and therefore I shall move what wee shall center uppon. If itt have butt the face of auctority, if itt bee butt an hare swimming over the Thames, hee will take hold of itt rather then lett itt goe.<sup>b</sup>

Lieut. Chillenden.

That God hitherto hath bin pleased to shew us many mercies. The relation of God's providence in bringing us from our march to London.

Mr. Allen.

On Friday was a day for to seeke God for direction in this worke,

<sup>a</sup> MS. "att least."

<sup>b</sup> Cromwell's general meaning is plain enough, though the illustration he uses is difficult to understand. The Army, he argues, must have some civil authority to support it, therefore it ought to own the authority of the Parliament. He would lay hold of any commission from Parliament, any simulacrum of authority, anything that came from Westminster, from the other side of the Thames. Possibly the illustration was suggested by the story of the multitude of rats swimming over the Tweed, which is told in a news-letter of September, 1647. (*Clarendon, State Papers, II., Appendix, xxxix.*)





and uppon Saturday many were giving in their thoughts concerning what God had given in to them to speake, as to a cure for a dying Kingdome. Truly amongst the rest my thoughts were att worke. Providentially, my thoughts were cast uppon one thing which I had often scene before, yett if prosecuted may bee the meanes of an happy union amongst us. That which I hinte att, and which I spoke to was, the Case of the Armie Stated. I doe perceive, that there is either a reall or an apprehensive—or rather a misapprehensive dissunion amongst us; and truly in my heart there was somethinge providentially laid for a uniting, and that in that passage that those Agentes—att that very time of dissenting from us and when they were ripping uppe our faults to open view—came in the issue to lay us down [as] a rule, and that was [a thing] which before had bin laid downe as a rule, and we and they were to act according to itt; butt being laid downe by them againe I thinke itt is a twofold corde that cannott easily bee broken. They doe referre us to our three Declarations, that of 14 June, 21 of June, 18 of August; and their desires are, that those might bee look't uppon, and adheered unto; and if they bee our desires and their desires that wee should walke uppe to them, I thinke this will putt the businesse to a very faire issue. I did looke over for my parte all thinges [contained] in those three Declarations, and therefore I humbly desire that whatsoever there is in those Declarations we should persist in, wee may intend and pursue, as tending to that end wee all aime att, namelie the Kingdomes good.<sup>a</sup>

Lient. Col. Jubbes.<sup>b</sup>

Truly I doe nott know how to distinguish whether the spirit of

<sup>a</sup> "We propound: that whatsoever was proposed to be insisted on, either in the Declaration of June the 14, or the Remonstrance of June 23, and in the Remonstrance from Kingston, August 18, be adhered to resolvedly, so as not to recede from these desires, untill they be thoroughly and effectually answered." *Case of the Army*, p. 14. On Allen, see Appendix B.

<sup>b</sup> John Jubbes, Lieutenant-Colonel of Hewson's regiment, see p. 21. He drew up in the next year, an "Agreement of the People" of his own, entitled "*Proposals*



God lives in mee, or noe, butt by mercy, love, and peace; and on the contrary whether the spirit of Antichrist lives in mee, butt by envy, malice, and warre. I am altogether against a warre if there may bee a composure [so] that the Englishman may have his priviledges; I have a commission ready to deliver uppe whensoever I shall bee call'd.

Queries wherin Lieut. Col. Jubbes desireth satisfaction for the preventing of the effusion of blood.

1. Whether or noe the Parliament may yett be purged of all such Members as assented to the late insurreccions and treason of the City, and still continue a House?

2. If itt may bee purged and an House still remayning, whether the major parte of the remainder bee such persons as are desirous of giving satisfaction to our or the Kingdome's just desires?

3. If the 2<sup>d</sup> bee assented unto, that they are such persons, whether then they may nott satisfie our just desires, and declare the Kinge guilty of all the bloudshed, vast expence of treasure, and ruine that hath bin occasioned by all the warres both of England and Ireland, and then for that hee is the Kinge of Scotland, and alsoe of Ireland as well as England, that therefore to receive him as Kinge againe for avoiding further warres?

4. Whether if the Parliament may adjourne and dissolve when in their discretions they shall finde cause or nott before—as att this present, even by law, God hath order'd itt—they may nott then reject the Kinge's Act of Oblivion, and take unto themselves that godly resolution to doe that justice unto the Kingdome which now they dare nott doe?

*for Peace and Freedom;*" and was probably the author of a second pamphlet called "*A Plea for Moderation in the Transactions of the Army, or weighty Observations upon the late Proposals for Peace presented by the City of London to Comm. Gen. Ireton.*" By Veritie Victor, gent., 1648.



Col. Rainborow

Mov'd that the papers of the Committee might bee read.

Lieut. Col. Goffe.

I thinke that motion which was made by the Lieutenant Generall should nott die, butt that itt should have some issue. I thinke itt is a vaine thinge to seeke God if wee doe nott hearken after his answer, and somethinge that was spoken by the Lieutenant Generall moves mee to speake att this time, and that was uppon this ground. Itt was concluded by the Lieutenant Generall uppon what was spoken by one heere, that that was nott the minde of God that was spoken by him. I could wish wee might bee warie of such expressions. "There was a lying spiritt in the mouth of Ahab's Prophetts. Hee speakes falselie to us in the name of the Lord."<sup>a</sup> I doe not speake this, that this was the minde of the Lord in any thinge; yett wee may nott breake abruptly of that what one spoke was the minde of the Lord, yett wee must consider whether somethinge was nott spoken by others which may bee the minde of the Lord. Truly I am very tender in this thinge; if wee shall waite for God, and if God shall speake to us [and wee not hearken], wee shall bringe much evill uppon ourselves. God hath spoken in severall ages in sundry wayes. Then they sent to a Prophet, and hee comes and tells them uppon his bare worde, and hee tells them that hee received such a message from the Lord. Butt God hath [now] putt us uppon such a course which I cannott butt reverence, and God does nott now speake by one particular man, butt in every one of our hearts; and certainly if itt were a dangerous thinge to refuse a message that came from one man to many, itt is a more dangerous thinge to refuse what comes from God, being spoke by many to us. I shall adde this, that itt seemes to mee evident and cleare, that this hath bin a voice from heaven to us, that wee have sinn'd against the Lord in tampering with his enemies; and itt hath soc wrought

<sup>a</sup> I. Kings, xxii. 22; Jeremiah, xliii. 2.



with mee that [though] I cannott run præcipitately to worke, yett I dare nott open my mouth for the benefitt or uppeholding that power. I thinke that hath bin the voice of God, and whatsoever was contradicted was our præcipitate running on, our taking hold of an opportunity before itt was given;<sup>a</sup> and therfore I desire wee may nott præcipitately run on, butt waite uppon God, and that in the issue wee may<sup>b</sup> see [if] God hath [not] spoken to us; and if the Lord hath spoken to us I pray God keepe us from that sin that wee doe nott hearken to the voice of the Lord.

Lieut. Generall.

I shall nott be unwilling to heare God speaking in any; butt I thinke that God may [as well] bee heard speaking in that which is to bee read<sup>c</sup> as otherwise.

Butt I shall speake a worde in that which Lieut. Col. Goffe said because itt seemes to come as a reproof to mee, and I shall bee willing to receive a reproof when itt shall bee in love, and shall bee [so] given. That which hee speakes was, that at such a Meeting as this wee should waite uppon God, and [hearken to] the voice of God speaking in any of us. I confesse itt is an high duty, butt when any thing is spoken [as from God] I thinke the rule is, Lett the rest judge!<sup>d</sup> Itt is left to mee to judge for my owne satisfaction, and the satisfaction of others, whether itt bee of the Lord or nott, and I doe noe more. I doe nott judge conclusively, negatively, that itt was nott of the Lord, butt I doe desire to submitt itt to all your judgements whether itt was of the Lord or noe? I did offer some reasons which did satisfie mee, I know nott whether I did others. If in those thinges wee doe speake, and pretend to speake from God, there bee mistakes of fact—if there bee a mistake in the thinge, in the reason of the thinge—

<sup>a</sup> Cf. p. 284.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "that in the issue wee may not see that God hath spoken to us."

<sup>c</sup> The papers of the committee, which Rainbow had just moved to have read.

<sup>d</sup> I. Corinthians, xiv. 29.







truly I thinke itt is free for mee to shew both the one, and the other if I can. Nay, I thinke itt is my duty to doe itt: for noe man receives any thinge in the name of the Lord further then [to] the light of his conscience appeares. I can say in the next place—and I can say itt heartily and freely as to the matter he speakes—I must confesse I have noe prejudice, nott the least thought of prejudice, uppon that ground—I speake itt truly as before the Lord—butt this I thinke; that itt is noe evill advertisement to wish us in our speeches of righteousness and justice to referre us to any engagements that are uppon us, and [it is] that which I have learn't<sup>a</sup> in all [our] debates. I have still desir'd wee should consider, where wee are, and what engagements are uppon us, and how wee ought to goe off as becomes Christians. This is all that I aim'd att and I doe aime att. I must confesse I had a mer-vailous reverence and awe uppon my spiritt when we came to speake. [We said], lett us speake one to another what God hath spoken to us; and as I said before I cannott say that I have recived any thinge that I can speake as in the name of the Lord—nott that I can say that any body did speake that which was untrue in the name of the Lord—butt uppon this ground, that when wee say wee speake in the name of the Lord itt is of an high nature.

Lieutenant Col. Goffe made an apologie for what hee had said before.

Mr. Allen.

My desire is to see thinges putt to an issue. Men have bin declaring their thoughts, and truly I would crave libertie to declare mine. The difference betweene us I thinke is in the interest of Kinge and Lords, some declaring against the name and title of Kinge and Lords. For my parte [I think] clearly, according to what wee have engag'd wee stand bound; and I thinke wee should bee look't uppon as persons nott fitt to bee

<sup>a</sup> "learnt," i. e. taught.



called Christians, if wee doe nott worke up to them. As first, concerning the Kinge. You say you will sett uppe the Kinge as farre as may bee consistent with, and nott prejudiciall to the liberties of the Kingedome; and really I am of that minde [too]. If the setting uppe of him bee nott consistent with them, and prejudiciall to them, then downe with him; butt if hee may bee soe sett uppe—which I thinke hee may—[then set him up], and itt is not our judgement onely, butt [that] of those that sett forth the Case of the Army.

Col. Rainborow

Tooke occasion to take notice as if what Mr. Allen spoke did reflect upon himself or some other there, as if they were against the name of Kinge and Lords.

Mr. Sexby.

Truly I must bee bold to offer this one worde unto you. Truly heere was somewhat spoke of the workings and actinges of God within them, I shall speake a worde of that. The Lord hath putt you into a state, or att least [suffered you] to run you[r selves] into such a one, that you know nott where you are. You are in a wildernessse conditiion. Some actinges amonge us singly and joyntlie that are the cause of itt. Truly I would intreate you to weigh that. Wee finde in the worde of God "I would heale Babylon, butt shee would nott bee healed."<sup>a</sup> I thinke that wee have gone about to heale Babylon when shee would nott. Wee have gone about to wash a Blackamore, to wash him white, which hee will nott. I think wee are going about to sette uppe the power which God will destroy. Wee are going about to sett uppe the power of Kinges, some parte of itt, which God will destroy; and which will bee butt as a burthensome stone that whosoever shall fall upon itt, itt will destroy him.<sup>b</sup> I shall propose this to your

<sup>a</sup> Jeremiah, li., 9; xliij., 23.

<sup>b</sup> Zechariah, xii., 3. Matthew, xxi., 44.



Honours, to weigh the grounds, whether they bee right, and then you shall bee led in pleasant pathes by still waters, and shall nott bee offended. I thinke this is the reason of the straights that are in hand.

Lieut. Gen.

I thinke wee should nott lett goe that motion which Lieut. Col. Goffe made, and soe I cannott butt renew that caution that wee should take heede what wee speake in the name of the Lord. As for what that Gentleman spoke last (butt it was with too much confidence) I cannott conceive that hee altogether meant itt. I would wee should all take heede of mentioning our owne thoughts and conceptions with that which is of God. What this Gentleman told us [was] that which [he conceived] was our great fault. Hee alludes to such a place of Scripture. "Wee would have heal'd Babylon, butt shee would nott." The Gentleman applied itt to us, as that we had bin men that would have heal'd Babylon, and God would nott have had her heal'd. Truly though that bee nott the intent of that Scripture, yett I thinke itt is true, that whosoever would have gone about to heale Babylon when God had determined [to destroy her] hee does fight against God, because God will nott have her heal'd. Indeed when wee are convinc't that itt is Babylon wee are going about to heale, I thinke itt's fitt wee should then give over our healing; and yett certainly in generall itt is nott evill to desire an healing. Butt since I heare noe man offering nothing to speake to us as a particular dictate from God, I shall desire to speake a word or two.<sup>a</sup> I should desire to draw to some conclusion of that expectation of ours. Truly, as Lieut. Col. Goffe said, God hath in severall ages used severall dispensations, and yett some dispensations more eminently in one age then another. I am one of those whose heart God hath drawne out to waite for some extraordinary dispensations, according to those

<sup>a</sup> Several words transposed.



promises that hee hath held forth of thinges to bee accomplished in the later time, and I cannott butt thinke that God is beginning of them. Yett certainly [we do well to take heed], upon the same ground that wee finde in the Epistle of Peter, where hee speakes of the Scriptures, as "a more sure word of Prophecy" then their testimonies was, to which, says hee, you doe well to take heede, as a light shining in a dark place.<sup>a</sup> If, when wee want particular and extraordinary impressions, wee shall either altogether sitt still because wee have them nott, and nott follow that light that wee have; or shall goe against, or short of that light that wee have, upon the imaginary apprehension of such divine impressions and divine discoveries in particular thinges—which are nott soe divine as to carry their evidence with them to the conviction of those that have the spiritt of God within them—I thinke wee shall bee justly under a condemnation. Truly wee have heard many speaking to us; and I cannott butt thinke that in many of those thinges God hath spoke to us. I cannott butt thinke that in most that have spoke there hath bin some thinge of God made forth to us; and yett there hath bin severall contradictions in what hath bin spoken. Butt certainly God is nott the Authour of contradictions. The contradictions are nott soe much in the end as in the way. I cannott see butt that wee all speake to the same end, and the mistakes are onely in the way. The end is to deliver this Nation from oppression and slavery, to accomplish that worke that God hath carried us on in, to establish our hopes of an end of justice and righteousness in itt. Wee agree thus farre. I thinke wee may goe thus farre farther, that wee all apprehend danger from the person of the Kinge, and from the Lords. All that have spoke have agreed in this too; though the Gentleman in the windowe<sup>b</sup> when hee spoke [of] sett[ing] uppe, if hee should declare itt, did nott meane all that that worde might importe. I thinke that seemes to bee generall amonge us all, that if itt were free before us

<sup>a</sup> The Second Epistle of Peter, i. 19.

<sup>b</sup> Allen.







whether wee should sett uppe one or other, there is nott any intention of any in the Army, of any of us, to sett uppe the one [or the other]. I doe to my best observation finde an unanimity amongst us all, that wee would sett uppe neither.<sup>a</sup> Thus farre I finde us to bee agreed, and thus farre as wee sre agreed I thinke itt is of God. Butt there are circumstances in which wee differ as in relation to this. I must further tell you, that as wee doe nott make itt our businesse or intention to sett uppe the one or the other, soe neither is itt [our intention] to preserve the one or the other, with a visible danger and destruction to the people and the publique interest. Soe that that parte of difference that seemes to bee among us is whether there can bee a preservation [of them with safety to the kingdom]. First of all, on the one parte, there is this apprehension: that wee cannott with justice and righteousnesse att the present destroy, or goe about to destroy, or take away, or [altogether] lay aside both, or all the interest they have in the publique affaires of the Kingdome; and those that doe soe apprehend would straine somethinge in point of security, would rather leave some hazard—or att least, if they see that they may consist without any considerable hazard to the interest of the Kingdome, doe see farre [wish] to preserve them. On the other hand, those who differ from this, I doe take itt in the most candid apprehension that they seeme to run <sup>b</sup> thus: that there is nott any safetie or security to the libertie of the Kingedome, and to [the] publique interest, if you doe retaine these at all; and therefore they thinke this is a consideration to them paramount [to] the consideration of particular obligations of justice, or matter of right or due towards Kinge or Lords. Truly I thinke itt hath pleased God to lead mee to a true and clear stating our agreement, and our difference; and if this bee soe wee are the better prepared to goe [on]. If this bee nott soe, I shall desire that any one that hath heard mee [will] declare [it], if hee doe thinke that the thinge is

<sup>a</sup> *i. e.* "neither King nor Lords."

<sup>b</sup> *i. e.* "argue."



mistated as to our agreement or difference; and I shall goe on, onely in a worde or two to conclude that wee have bin about. As to the dispensations of God itt was more particular in the time of the law [of Moses than in the time of the law] written in our hearts, that worde within us, the minde of Christ;<sup>a</sup> and truly when wee have noe other more particular impression of the power of God going forth with itt I thinke that this law and this [word] speaking [within us]—which truly is in every man who hath the spiritt of God—wee are to have a regard to; and this to mee seemes to bee very cleare what wee are to judge of the apprehensions of men to particular cases, whether itt bee of God or noe. When itt doth nott carry itt evidence of the power of God with itt to convince us clearlie, our best way is to judge the conformity or disformity of [it with] the law written within us, which is the law of the spiritt of God, the minde of God, the minde of Christ. As was well said by Lieut. Col. Jubbs, for my parte I doe nott know any outward evidence of what proceedes from the spiritt of God more cleare then this, the appearance of meeknesse, and gentlenesse, and mercy, and patience, and forbearance, and love, and a desire to doe good to all, and to destroy none that can bee sav'd;<sup>b</sup> and as he said of the spiritt of malice, and envy, and thinges of that nature, I cannot but take that to bee contrary to this law. For my parte I say where I doe see this, where I doe see men speaking according to that law, which I am sure is the law of the spiritt of life.—And I thinke there is this radically in that heart where there is such a law as leads us against all opposition. On the other hand, I thinke that hee that would decline the doing of justice—where there is noe place for mercy—and the exercise of the wayes of force—for the saftie of the Kingedome where there is noe other way to save itt—and would decline these out of the

<sup>a</sup> Hebrews, viii., 10; I. Corinthians, ii., 16. So Cromwell elsewhere observes of certain things that they are “written in better books than those of paper; written, I am persuaded, in the heart of every good man.” Carlyle's *Cromwell*, Speech II.

<sup>b</sup> Compare Speech I. in Carlyle's *Cromwell*.



apprehensions of danger and difficulties in itt, hee that leads that way on the other hand doth truly lead us from that which is the law of the spiritt of Life, the law written in our hearts. And truly having thus declared what wee may apprehend of all that hath bin said, I shall wish that wee may goe on to our businesse ; and I shall onely adde severall cautions on the one hand, and the other.

I could wish that none of those whose apprehensions run on the other hand, that there can bee noe safetie in a consistencie with the person of the Kinge or the Lords, or their having the least interest in the publike affaires of the Kingedome, I doe wish them that they will take heede of that which some men are apt to bee carried away by, [that is] apprehensions that God will destroy these persons or that power ; for that they may mistake in. And though [I] my selfe doe concurre with them, and perhaps concurre with them uppon some ground that God will doe soe, yett lett us, [not] make those thinges to bee our rule which wee cannott soe clearlie know to bee the minde of God. I meane in particular thinges lett us nott make those our rules, "that this is to bee done, [this] is the minde of God, wee muste worke to itt."<sup>a</sup> Att least [let] those to whome this is nott made cleare, though they doe thinke itt probable that God will destroy them, yett lett them make this rule to themselves, though God have a purpose to destroy them, and though I should finde a desire to destroy them—though a Christian spiritt can hardly finde itt for itt self—yett God can doe itt without necessitating us to doe a thinge which is scandalous, or sinne, or which would bringe a dishonour to his name ; and therfore let those that are of that minde waite uppon God for such a way when the thinge may bee done without sin, and without scandall too. Surely what God would have us doe hee does nott desire wee should steppe out of the way for itt. This is the caution, on the one hand that wee doe noe

<sup>a</sup> Cf. Cromwell's speech on p. 185.



wronge to one or other, and that wee abstaine from all appearance of wronge, and for that purpose avoide the bringing of a scandall to the name of God, and to his people uppon whome his name is call'd. On the other hand, I have butt this to say : that those who doe apprehend obligations lying uppon them—either by a generall duty or particularly in relation to the thinges that wee have declar'd, a duty of justice, or a duty in regard of that Engagement—that they would clearlie come to this resolution, that if they found in their judgements and consciences that those Engagements lead to anything which really cannott consist with the libertie and safetie and publique interest of this Nation, they would account the Generall [duty] paramount [to] the other, soe farre as nott to oppose any other that would doe better for the Nation then they will doe. If wee doe act according to that minde and that spirit, and that law which I have before spoken of, and in these particular cases do<sup>a</sup> take these two cautions, God will lead us to what shall bee his way, as many of us as hee shall incline their mindes to, and the rest in their way in a due time.

Capt. Byshopp.

I shall desire to speake one word and that breiflie. What's the reason that wee are distracted in Councill, and that wee cannott as formerly preserve the Kingedome from that dying condition in which itt is? After many inquiries in my spirit I finde this answer, and the answer which is to many Christians besides amongst us. I say [it is] a compliance to preserve that Man of Bloud, and those principles of tyranny which God from Heaven by his many successes hath manifestly declar'd against, and which I am confident may bee our destruction [if they be preserved]. I say nott [this] in respect of any particular persons. I onely speake this [as] what is uppon my spirit, because I see you are uppon inquiry what God hath given in to any one which may tend to the preservation of the Kingedome.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> MS. "to."

<sup>b</sup> The position of several clauses has been altered.







Mr. Wildman.

I observe that the worke hath bin to inquire what hath bin the minde of God, and every one speakes what is given in to his spiritt. I desire as much as is possible to reverence whatsoever hath the spiritt or image of God uppon itt. Whatever another man hath received from the spiritt, that man cannott demonstrate to mee butt by some other way then meerlie relating to mee that which hee conceives to bee the minde of God. Itt is beyond the power of the reason of all the men on earth to demonstrate the Scriptures to bee the Scriptures written by the spiritt of God; butt itt must bee the spiritt of faith that must make him believe whatsoever may bee spoken in spirituall matters; yett in civill matters wee cannott finde anythinge in the worde of God what is fitt to bee done in civill matters. I conceive that onely is of God that does appeare to bee like unto God, justice and mercy, to bee meeke and peaceable. I should desire therfore that wee might proceede onelie in that way. If itt please this honourable Councill to consider what is justice and what is mercy, and what is good, and I cannott butt conclude that that is of God. Otherwise I cannott thinke that any one doth speake from God when hee sayes what hee speakes is of God.

Butt to the matter in hand, I am clearly of opinion with that Gentleman that spake last save one, that itt is nott of God [to decline the doing of justice] where there is noe way left of mercy; and I could much concurre that itt is very questionable whether there bee a way left for mercy uppon that person that wee now insist uppon. Whether itt is demonstrable by reason or justice [that it is right] to punish with death those that according to his command doe make warre, or those that doe butt hold compliance with them, and then [to say] that there is a way left for mercy for him who was the great actor of this, and who was the great contriver of all? Butt I confesse because itt is in civill matters I would much decline that, and rather looke to what is safetie, what the minde doth dictate from safetie, what is the safetie I



know itt cannott bee the minde of God to goe contrary to ; butt for what particulars that Gentleman speakes of the differences betweene us, I thinke they are soe many as nott easily to bee reckoned uppe. That which hee instanc't was that some did desire to preserve the person of the Kinge and person of the Lords, soe farre as itt was [consistent] with the safetie or the good of the Kingedome, and other persons doe conceive, that the preservation of the Kinge or Lords was inconsistent with the people's safetie, and that law to bee paramount all.

Co<sup>m</sup>. Ireton.<sup>a</sup>

Sir, I did not speake of the destroying of the Kinge and Lords—I have nott heard any man charge all the Lords soe as to deserve a punishment—but [of] a reserving to them any interest att all in the publike affaires of the Kingdome.

Mr. Wildman.

Then Sir, as I conceive, you were saying the difference was this: that some persons were of opinion that the preservation of the power of Kinge and Lords was paramount to all considerations, and might keepe them from any giving them what was due and right.

Co<sup>m</sup>. Ireton.

I said, that some men did apprehend, that there might be an interest given to them with safetie to the Kingdome, others doe thinke, that noe parte of their interest could bee given without destruction to the Kingedome.

<sup>a</sup> Wildman spoke in answer to the gentleman "who spoke last save one," referring obviously to the long speech here attributed to Cromwell. The difficulty is that Ireton hereupon answers Wildman as if he were the speaker referred to. On the other hand the MS. distinctly attributes the speech to Cromwell, and in many points it is distinctly Cromwellian in style and ideas. Possibly the two brief speeches on this page should be attributed to Cromwell instead of Ireton.



Mr. Wildman.

For the matter of stating the thinge in difference, I thinke that the person of Kinge and Lords are nott soe joyn'd together by any; for as your self said, none have any exception against the persons of the Lords or name of Lords. The difference is whether wee should alter the old foundations of our Governement soe as to give to Kinge and Lords that which they could never claime before. Whereas itt's said, that those that dissent <sup>a</sup> looke after alteration of Governement, I doe rather thinke that those that doe dissent doe indeavour to alter the foundation of our Governement, and that I shall demonstrate thus. According to the Kinges oath hee is to grant such lawes as the people shall chuse, and therefore I conceive they are called lawes before they come to him. They are called lawes that hee must confirme, and soe they are lawes before they come to him.<sup>b</sup> To give the Kinge a legislative power is contrary to his owne oath att his Coronation, and itt is the like to give a power to the Kinge by his negative voice to deny all lawes. And for the Lords, seeing the foundation of all justice is the election of the people, itt is unjust they should have that power.

Therefore I conceive the difference only is this, whether this power should bee given to the King and Lords or noe?

For the later parte of that noble Gentleman's wordes this may bee said to them, whether this consideration to give them <sup>c</sup> what is their due right may [not] bee paramount to all engagements?

Coñ. Ireton.

The Question is nott whether this should bee given to Kinge and Lords, or noe, but the Question is, whether that interest that they have in this, (if they have any) whether itt should bee now positively insisted uppon to bee clearly taken away.

<sup>a</sup> Apparently means those who subscribe the "Agreement of the People" as opposed to the officers who dissent from it. For the first "dissent," "assent" should probably be substituted.

<sup>b</sup> The position of this clause has been changed.

<sup>c</sup> "Them" i. e. "the people."



Mr. Wildman.

Sir, I suppose that the interest they have if they have any—if (for that supposition is very well put in)—for (as I said before) I conceive that neither Kinge, nor Lords according to the foundation of Governement ever had a right.

Com. Ireton.

I spake itt to you, and those that are of your minde, if you were satisfied nott to have an exception.<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Wildeman.

Then I say the whole tenour of the propositions or proposalls must bee alter'd, if any thinge bee in them [allowing the King a negative voice]. I conceive that not to expresse it because it hath bin usurp't is to confirme his usurpation of itt.<sup>b</sup> For many yeares this hath bin usurp't. Now, if after God hath given us the victory over them wee shall nott declare against them, wee give noe security for the peoples libertie.

Com. Ireton.

You speake parte to the point of justice and parte to the point of safetie. To the point of justice you seeme to speake this; that the fundamentall constitutions of this Kingedome, neither Kinge nor Lords have rightfully a negative voice; and therfore to take itt away or to cleare itt that they have none is butt justice. I thinke that is itt, that [by] the fundamentall constitution, neither of them [have a negative voice].

You seeme to argue onely from the Kinges oath, and then you conclude, if as appears by that they had itt nott before, though wee all bee satisfied wee would say nothing to give them itt, yett if wee doe nott expreslie take itt away, nay if wee doe send itt to any of them—wee doe leave to them a power to assent or dissent, and give them that which wee had before. See you well remember that that which

<sup>a</sup> Ireton says he made the exception to satisfy Wildman and his friends, not because he had any doubts of the fact himself.

<sup>b</sup> As the power has been usurped, not expressly to take it away is to confirm it.





you argue of the King's Oath, and I know for my owne parte noe other [evidence] then an old Statute or two cited in the Declaration<sup>a</sup> wherein the Commons declare—

I remember I spoke itt, and I speake itt againe, and that that is the intent I doe verily beleive: that the originall sence and intention of the Oath of the King's which is published in that Declaration of the Commons was, and is, and ought to bee, that the Kinge ought to confirme those lawes that the Commons chuse. Now whether this Kinge bee soe bound by his Oath, as that hee breakes his Oath if hee doe not confirme every law that they seeke, I conceive that depends uppon what hee did verily at his coronation make his Oath; butt I thinke that in the sence and intention of the people of the Kingedome their intention was that hee should confirme all the lawes that they should chuse. Butt you must take notice, that the Oath doth take them [as] lawes before hee should make them; itt calls them lawes, the lawes in Election, Quas vulgus elegerit. The Kinge promises that hee will by his aucthority confirme those lawes that the people shall chuse, soe that this shoves clearly what use in the constitution of the Kingedome they made of the Kinge in the Commonwealth. The Commons are to chuse the lawes and the Kinge to confirme, they had this trust to the Kinge would confirme what they should chuse, and hee confirming them they were firme lawes. I doe really believe, that this was the Agreement that the people of England made with their Kinges; that is, they would have him give his consent to what lawes they should chuse and soe to have that implicate use. Butt this is most apparent, both by the Oath ittself, and by all the practice since—the sending of lawes to the Kinge—by all that itt is apparent, that they had some relation to the Kinge and to his consent in the making of a law.<sup>b</sup> This I am sure, if itt

<sup>a</sup> Remonstrance of May 26, 1642, and the King's answer: see Clarendon, *Rebellion*, v. 224-229, 292-305. See pp. 351, 399. The first part of this sentence seems to be really an interpolation of Wildman's: "Sir, you very well remember that which you argued of the King's oath," referring to Ireton's speech on p. 351.

<sup>b</sup> Several words omitted.



were never soe cleare in the Constitution that they were good lawes without itt, yett this is cleare—if that were true in the originall Constitution of this Kingedome this is cleare—that they have [been] sent still to him to bee confirm'd; as the word was to bee confirm'd or corroborated, *Leges quas vulgus elegerit corroborandas*.

I thinke if wee doe [take into] account all the sending of lawes heeretofore to bee corroborated by him, and if his denying of some of them—nott absolutely denying butt advising—if these have nott at all prejudie't [the right of] the people against his Negative voice, soe the sending of propositions now for his assent cannott prejudice the right of the people more then all their sending [laws to him] before. If wee should putt itt to the Kinge as his act—The Parliament have declar'd itt and asserted itt, that itt is their right that the Kinge ought nott to deny any [laws they offer to him]; itt is his Oath. They have gone thus much farther, that if hee did not confirme them they were lawes without him. Uppon this there hath bin a warre made. They have gone to make all lawes and ordinances that were needfull for the management of the affaires of the Kingedome without the Kinge. Itt is now come to a period. Soe that *De facto* itt is thus, they have made lawes, and held them forth to the Kingedome [as laws]. Now if the Kinge by his act doe confirme what the Parliament have done, and condemne all that have bin against the Parliament, whether hee doe nott acknowledge to all posteritie, that in case of safety, when the Parliament doth adjudge the safetie of the Kingedome to bee concern'd they are to make a law without him? For my parte I thinke there can bee nothing more cleare then this is. For my owne particular I doe apprehend that there is that generall right [in the Parliament] that the lawes [it shall pass] ought to bee confirm'd [by the King]; it<sup>a</sup> is my thoughts, that without anythinge of the Kinge's Declaration to that purpose, in point of safetie where they cannott dispense with the suspending of the Kinge, they are a law without him. This the Parliament

<sup>a</sup> MS. "that."



hath declar'd, and this is asserted in all the Declarations that have bin sent out, and [this is] the ground that I have proceeded [on] in those proposalls of the Armie. That "in a case of safetie" was provided for in those matters that I have spoke of. I account them materially and essentially provided for in those;<sup>a</sup> and if I had nott, for my parte I should never have rested or bin satisfied in that point, and in other points there might have bin a dispensation with a suspending. Notwithstanding the liberty of the Kingedome hath bin provided for in this, that there should nott bee any thinge done or lawes made without the consent of the people.<sup>b</sup>

Capt. Awdeley.

I thinke if soe bee that this business of the Negative voice bee all the dispute, wee shall all agree in itt; for itt appear'd by what you spake the other night that hee ought to have his Negative voice taken away.

Col. Hewson.

The Scotts have made provision, that hee should have noe Negative voice among them, and why should nott wee make the same provision with them?

Coñ. Ireton.

Those thinges that the Committee did prepare and they proceeded in last night will almost end us this dispute. Wheras itt

<sup>a</sup> Ireton seems to refer to the first thirteen articles of the "Heads of the Proposals," which contained the things "necessary for settling and securing the rights, liberties, peace and safety of the kingdom," the granting of which was to precede the King's restoration to his personal rights. This plan of taking away the King's veto with respect to certain specified subjects seems to have been substituted by Ireton for the scheme of giving him a merely suspensive veto which was suggested in the first draft of the "Proposals." See "*Putney Projects*," p. 15.

<sup>b</sup> See p. 407, resolution 2.



was desired that we should take into consideration the severall Heads to bee insisted uppon as fundamentall lawes that wee must stand [to] for the establishing of the Kingdome—They are still [things held to be necessary] in relation to the security of the Kingdome.

The Proposall read.<sup>a</sup>

Col. Rainborow.

That some thinges in the Agreement were granted there.

To Debate whether or noe when the Commons Representative doe declare a law itt ought nott to passe without the Kinge's consent.<sup>b</sup>

Com. Ireton.

Truly this is all; whether honour, title, estate, liberty, or life, [if] the Commons have a minde to take itt away by a law [they can do so]; soe that to say you are contented to leave them all, this [negative] being taken away, is as much as to say you are to allow them nothing. Consider how much of this dispute is saved, [by] this that is read to you. It gives the negative voice to the people, noe lawes can bee made without their consent. And secondly itt takes away the negative voice of the Lords and of the Kinge too, as to what concernes the people; for itt says that the Commons of England shall bee bound by what judgements and alsoe [by] what orders, ordinances, or lawes shall bee made for that purpose by them; and all that followes for the King or Lords is this, that the Lordz or King are nott bound by that law they passe for their owne persons or estates as the Commons are, unlesse they consent to itt. Therefore what is there wanting for the good or safety of the Commons of England? <sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> See p. 407.

<sup>b</sup> See articles 1 and 2, p. 407.

<sup>c</sup> See article 4, p. 407.





Col. Rainborow.

That if the Negative voice bee taken away, then if the Kinge or Lords were taking courses destructive how should they bee prevented?

Coñ. Generall.

Itt is further provided if they will meddle in any other offices, as Officers of Justice or Ministers of State in this Kingdome, then they likewise are soe farre subject to the Judgement of the House of Commons. If they onely stand as single men, their personall interest and the like [is secured], and the right of being only judged by their peeres, and<sup>a</sup> their individuall persons [are not bound] by any law that they doe nott consent to.

Col. Rainborow.

If the Lords should joyne together by their interest in the Kingdome, and should act against the Commons, then the Commons had noe way to helpe themselves.

Coñ. Ireton.

Iff itt come to a breach of the peace itt will come to breake some law. That a Lord is subject to the common law. The Lords heertofore<sup>b</sup> [as] to the breaches of peace have bin subject to the common law; only for the matter of fact, whether guilty or nott guilty of the breach of such a law, they must bee tryed by their Peeres. Wee have stood very much for ourselves that wee should bee judged by our Peeres, and by our fellow Commoners; I would faine know this, how wee can take away that right of Peeres to bee tryed by their Peeres when that itt is a point of right for the Commons to bee tryed by their Peeres.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> MS. "onely."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "heertofore have bin subject to the breaches of the peace, have bin subject to the common law."

<sup>c</sup> Position of several clauses altered.



Col. Rainborow.

That the lawes that binde the Commons are exclusive to the Lords.

Com. Ireton.

I would faine know this whether the High Sheriff in every County of the Kingedome [may not apprehend a Lord who breake the peace], and I am sure the law hath provided for the keeping of the peace. I know that there is noe law butt the chief justice of the Kinge's Bench, nay the Sheriff of a County, nay the Constable of any towne may seize upon him.

Col. Rainborow.

If a Petty Constable or Sheriff shall apprehend a Peere of the Kingedome, whether hee can answer itt?

Com. Ireton.

That if a Lord shall bee accused, and by a Jury found guilty, hee will expect to bee tryed by his Peeres.

Mr. Wildman.

I would proceede to the thinges in hand. Though I protest I would nott widen a difference, yett I conceive the difference is as wide as ever; for in what's there provided the interest of the Kinge and Lords is given away which the Lord by a Judgement from heaven hath laid aside.<sup>a</sup> I conceive [that in] this [article] concerning the succession of Parliaments [it] is proposed positively that itt shall bee as Trienniall Parliaments were.<sup>b</sup>

Com. Ireton.

You did in your way propose a certainty or nott; if you did nott propose itt how farre—That which you propose is, the people

<sup>a</sup> The position of several words has been altered.

<sup>b</sup> For Wildman's criticisms see *Putney Projects*, p. 26; and the "Heads of Proposals" I. 1.



shall meete; you neither say where nor when. Wee say [with such provision] for the certainty of itt [as in the late Act made for Trienniall Parliaments]. That Act tells you particularly; butt because you must make a new provision for itt, since you must make a New Division and distribution of the Kingedome and a New Circuite, therefore itt sayes, "with such further provision as shall bee made for reducement [of it] to a certainty."<sup>a</sup>

Col. Rainborow.

That hee does take exception att [the provision] that noe man should bee chosen that hath nott 20<sup>li</sup> a yeare.

Com Ireton.

If Mr. Wildman thinke fitt to [let me] goe on without taking an advantage to every particular as itt is read, [he may shew afterwards] what they are that doe render these propositions soe destructive, and give the King and Lords such an interest as they never had before, if hee will take them upon his memory, and by the way. I hope Mr. Wildman will nott offer such an assertion butt hee hath arguments to make itt good.

Mr. Wildman.

I onely affirme that itt doth establish the Kinge's and Lords' interest surer than before.

Com, Ireton.

Wee doe agree that all the Commons of England are bound, [by whatever laws the House of Commons shall pass;] butt the Kinge and Lords as to their persons are nott bound; butt if any of them bee an officer or Minister of State then hee is to bee subject [to the judgment of the House of Commons].

<sup>a</sup> Ireton again refers to the "Agreement of the People," Clause 3, and compares it with the first two clauses of the "Proposals of the Army."



Col. Rainborow.

How does itt reach the Kinge and nott a Lord ?

Com. Ireton.

Every Lord is nott a Minister of Justice, butt if there bee any other difference they are tryed by their Peeres.

Col. Rainborow.

Itt is offer'd to make them capable of being chosen.

Com. Ireton.

Every Baron by the other exception may bee chosen.

Col. Rainborow.

Is itt nott soe in Scotland ?

Com. Ireton.

In Scotland every Lord hath his place as Burgesse.<sup>a</sup>

Col. Rainborow.

Why should nott the Lords have the same priviledge ?<sup>b</sup>

Com. Ireton.

I should thinke that [w]as the directest interest to the Kingedome in the world, for that for soe many persons to bee the permanent interest in the House, every two yeares——

<sup>a</sup> Unfortunately the article concerning the qualifications of persons to be elected Members of Parliament is not given, but it seems from this debate and from p. 394 that a member was to possess a property qualification of £20 a year, and that a peer might sit in the Lower House if elected, as indeed subsequently took place under the Commonwealth.

<sup>b</sup> Rainborow asks why the Lords and Commons should not sit together, in one House; and Ireton replies that it would be dangerous to admit so large a permanent element. See p. 397. The position of this question and answer has been changed. In the MS. they follow Ireton's answer about the trial of Lords by their Peers.





Col. Titchburne.<sup>a</sup>

I was speaking to this of the Negative. I doe remember on Saturday last wee were att this pitch, and there I did leave itt; itt did concurre with my sence, and that was this: that all the power of making lawes should bee in those that the people should chuse, the Kinge and Lords should serve onely to this end, that lawes should bee presented to them, that if they would doe the Commons that right as to confirme those lawes they should doe itt; butt if they should nott thinke fitt to signe them, itt should begett a review of that by the House of Commons; and if after a review the House of Commons did declare that was for the safetie of the people, though neither Kinge nor Lords did subscribe, yett itt was a standing and binding law; and therefore wee shall nott neede to feare to take a shadow when they can doe us little hurt. This was what I did then suppose agreed uppon.

Com. Ireton.

'Tis true, Saturday night wee were thinking of that, butt wee

<sup>a</sup> Robert Titchburne had been appointed by Fairfax, Lieutenant of the Tower, in place of Colonel Francis West (Rushworth, vii. 761). A contemporary thus speaks of Titchburne: "I will not call him Colonel, his commission being illegal, and he fitter for a warm bed then to command a regiment or citadel; one that not above a month before he was chosen Lieutenant of the Tower held an opinion that it was not lawful for men to fight or kill men, [not] thinking that fighting would be in fashion again. And indeed when he was first made Lieutenant-Colonel of the Auxiliaries in London, if he durst have marched down only for a guard of three or four pieces of battery to Basinghouse before it was fortified, he had saved many a thousand men's lives; but he loved then nothing tending to fighting, and therefore he discouraged his soldiers and took a journey himself under a colour to Brainford, and then came home in triumph that he might pray that the walls of Basinghouse might fall down like the walls of Jericho. . . . But Colonel West is faithful, honest and valiant, and one that stood as well to his regiment as he hath done since to his principles: witness Gloucester expedition, where if the Newbery ground could speak, it would say his body was turned into a rock in the face of his enemy." (*The Honest Citizen or Faithful Counsellor to the City of London*, p. 7). Titchburne was one of the Sheriffs in 1650, and Lord Mayor in 1656. Noble gives an account of Titchburne in his "*Lives of the Regicides*," ii. 272. See also Heath's *Chronicle*, ed. 1663, p. 309.



had an eye to that of safetie, that is provided for by the Commons. Noe mony can bee raised, noe warre raised, butt by those that the Commons shall chuse. Butt that which was questioned in the name the safety and securing of safety that thought itt fitt that they should have a liberty to preserve one another, and soe wee thought to putt itt to consideration. That the Commons should make soe much use of the Lords in all affaires, they might occasion a review, butt if the Commons should uppon that review thinke itt fitt, itt should bee look't uppon as a law ; but instead of that the Committee voted last night—That whether the Commons of England should bee bound by all the lawes past in the House of Commons, or whether itt should bee valid in the case of safetie, that which you speake of will follow. If there doe butt continue such a thinge as Lords, and they doe nott sitt joynettie with the house of Commons, then the Lords will agree, or otherwise the Commons will doe itt presently themselves.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The absence of the text of the article discussed, and the defects of the report make it difficult to decide the exact question at issue, but it seems to be this. On Saturday, October 30, the Committee had agreed to give the Lords a suspensive veto. Then, apparently at Ireton's instigation, they decided that the Lords should possess no veto of any kind with respect to laws where the Commons declared the safety of the kingdom to be concerned. Instead of that they should possess, in case of laws affecting their persons and estates merely, a power of exempting themselves from the operation of such laws, and so securing their personal rights, by refusing their consent. Thus, instead of a general suspensive veto they would get a simple power of nullifying certain particular laws so far as they affected themselves. Ireton's speech is very confused, but may be thus paraphrased and re-arranged: " 'Tis true on Saturday night we thought of that, viz., that the Commons should make so much use of the Lords in all affairs that their refusal to pass a law should occasion a review, but that if the Commons should after that review think fit to persist, it should be looked upon as a law without the consent of the Lords: but that resolution was questioned in the name of safety. Instead of that the Committee voted last night, that the Lords should have a liberty to preserve one another, and we thought fit to submit a provision for that to your consideration. We had an eye also to that point of the safety of the kingdom. It is provided for in the clauses respecting the rights of the Commons, etc."



Col. Rainborow.

If they bee injur'd they have nott a remedy.

Coñ. Ireton.

That's all that can bee said. The Question is whether there bee soe much neede of giving them a power to preserve themselves against the injuries of the Commons. They are nott capable of Judgement as to their persons unlesse itt bee as they are Officers of State. Onely the truth of itt is, there is this seemes to bee taken away [by taking away their judicial power]. If a man doe come and violently fall upon them in the Court, or doe any such thinge, they have noe power to preserve themselves, and all their way will bee to complaine to the House of Commons.<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Wildman.

I conceive that whilst wee thus run into such particulars there is very little probability of coming to satisfaction. The case as there itt is stated in the Agreement is generall; and itt will never satisfie the godly people in the Kingedome unlesse that all Governement bee in the Commons, and freely. Truly I conceive that according to what is there propounded the power of the House of Commons is much lessen'd—from what itt is of right, nott [from] what itt is now by usurpation of Kinge and Lords. Whereas itt's said, that noe law shall bee made without the consent of the Commons, itt doth suppose some other law makers besides the Representative of the Commons. Whereas itt is said, that the Lords in some cases should sitt as an House of Parliament to consent to lawes, doth give them that power which they never had before the Warres; for as your self said of the Kinge's Oath, itt sayes, that the King shall consent to such lawes as the people shall chuse, butt the Lords have noe power. If there bee a liberty to the Kinge to

<sup>a</sup> See. 407, resolution 2.



give them a title of honour they ought to bee under all lawes, and soe they ought to concerne them as well as all others; which I conceive is diminished in those particulars. Besides the generall current of the whole offer runs that nothing shall bee declar'd against that usurpation in the Kinge formerly, nor in the Lords formerly, and soe itt remains perpetually dubious. They shall say, though itt does nott concerne mee in my private yett itt does in my politique; and noe law can bee made butt itt must bee sent to the Kinge and Lords, and that must occasion a review; and soe they must have recourse to the unrighteous for righteousness, and soe longe as itt is nott clearly declar'd that hee hath noe power to deny itt, and that they neede nott addresse themselves to him, the Kingedome cannott bee in safetie, butt his owne partie may gett uppe, and doe what hee will.<sup>a</sup>

Com̃. Ireton.

This businesse is much heightned. That I doe nott know by all that hath bin said that the Kinge or Lords are more fastened then before. Wee heere talke of lawes by ancient Constitution, and by usurpation, and yett I doe nott finde that the gentleman that speakes of them doth shew [any evidence] what was the ancient Constitution, nor of [that] usurpation, butt onely [the evidence] of the Kinge's Oath; and that is drawne as taking itt for granted that by ancient Constitution there were lawes without the Kinge's consent. For that [question of the oath] I did before cleare [it] sufficiently by comparing that with other evidence; for if wee could look uppon that as an evidence paramount to all, that needed nott bee soe much insisted uppon. If this Gentleman can finde noe law in being in this Kingedome which hath nott Lords to itt, and Kinge to itt, expreslie, and, "Bee itt ordain'd by the Kinge, Lords, and Commons"—if itt alwayes have gone soe, and

<sup>a</sup> For Wildman's general views on the rights of the Lords as affected by the "Heads of the Proposals" see *Putney Projects*. He now criticises article 2 on p. 407.







noe interruption and noe memory of any kinde of proceeding to the contrarie, but that all lawes past by the Commons have bin sent to the Lords for their concurrence—The Lords have [made amendments and] sent downe [to the Commons] for their concurrence, they have had conferences, and when they could nott agree, the Commons have lett itt rest and nott insisted upon itt. Wee must look upon these together with that testimonie of the Kinge's Oath as evidences of what is Constitution. But, wheras those other thinges that are numerous and cleare evidences doth in expresse termes relate to the Lords, when I doe consider the consequences of that Oath, I doe conclude either that the word 'vulgus' is concluded<sup>a</sup> to comprehend all Lords and Commons; or else itt is thus, that the two great powers of this Kingedome are divided betwixt the Lords and Commons; and itt is most probable to mee that itt was soe. That the judiciall power was in the Lords principally, and the House of Commons yett to have their concurrences, the Legislative power principally in the Commons, and the Lords' concurrences in practice to bee desired. Itt is a cleare and knowne thinge, that by the Constitution of the Kingedome, the House of Commons cannot make<sup>b</sup> an Oath, butt if they will have an Oath given they must resort to the Lords. Besides all the Judges of Common Law in the Kingedome sitt as assistants to the Lords. Upon this the practice hath bin that in any private cause wherein unjust sentence hath bin past in another court a Writt of Errour may bee judg'd there.<sup>c</sup> Itt is beyond all record or memory. Soe that these two powers of the Legislative power and the judicall have bin exercised betweene both Lords and Commons, and none of them to exercise the one or the other without mutuall consent. I desire this Gentleman, or any other that argues upon the other parte [to] that wee are upon—unlesse they

<sup>a</sup> MS. "included."

<sup>b</sup> MS. "take."

<sup>c</sup> MS. "heere." The position of several phrases in this sentence has been altered.



will produce some kinde of evidence of history uppon record by law—that they will forbear arguments of that nature, calling such thinges usurpations from Constitution or from right, and insist uppon thinges of common safetie as supposing noe constitution att all.<sup>a</sup>

Coñ. Cowling.

Contrary to Resolution I must now speake, whether itt bee from the Lord, or noe I know nott. What foundation had the Commons of England to sitting (being 200 yeares in sitting), for in Kinge Henry the third's time when Magna Charta was finished (which by computation was 200 yeares) and this was granted to the Lords Spirituall [and] Temporall, and Edward the sonne was called to bee a witnesse, but when the Lords saw that they were nott stronge enough to sitt in that magnificence the Commons were drawne in, and that in that law the Kinges Oath should come in. Now had itt nott bin a fundamentall law the Commons should nott have bin drawne uppe, butt that they did drive uppe is cleare, and what will become of us if wee drive uppe to noe other purpose butt to support a Norman prerogative? The Lord knoweth, nott I.

Coñ. Ireton.

I thought this Gentleman had had some answer to this matter of History. As to the Norman Conquest, if subjection to a kinge bee a tyranny, [we had a King before the Norman Conquest]; the Question was betweene him and the Conquerour who had the right of the Crowne, soe as wee should nott seeme to derive all our tyranny from the Norman Conquest.<sup>b</sup> I cannott butt wonder att the strange inferences that are made. Hee tells us, that there is noe memory of the Commons having any interest in the Legislative power till Edward the First's time; and then [that] the Lords Spirituall and Temporall they found themselves not strong enough in King Henry the Third's time, and therfore they brought

<sup>a</sup> Order of words in this sentence changed.

<sup>b</sup> Order of clauses in this sentence changed.



them in; and yett would certainly have us to beleive, that the Commons had all the right before [the Conquest].

Coñ. Cowling.

In Alfred's time, the Commons had all the power, and the Kinge hang'd 43 in one yeare.<sup>a</sup>

Col. Rainborow.

That the Commissary Generall is willing to lay that of Constitution aside, and that of Custome aside, and to consider the equality and reasonableness of the thinge, and nott to stand uppon Constitution, which wee have broken againe and againe. I doe nott finde in all the reading that I have done, I doe nott know that ever the Commons made warre with the Kinge, the Barons did.

That besides the Oath hee found, that one of the maine Articles against Richard the Second [was], that hee did nott concurre with and agree uppon those wholesome lawes were offer'd him by the Commons for the safety of the people.<sup>b</sup> If that were soe great a right as did depose him, itt is in the Kingdome [still], and therefore lett us goe to the justice of the thinge. That justice and reason doth nott give to the major parte . . . .

Coñ. Ireton.

You would have us lay aside arguments of Constitution, and yett you have brought the strongest that may bee. I have seene the Articles of Richard the Second, and itt is strange that the Parliament should nott insist uppon that.

Col. Rainborow.

That is nott the thinge that I would consider of.

Coñ. Ireton.

I suppose noe man will make a Question, that that may bee

<sup>a</sup> Cowling probably refers to the story of King Alfred, "who caused 44 Justices in one year to be hanged as murderers for their false judgments." Andrew Horne's *Mirroure of Justice*, translated by W. H., 1646, p. 239.

<sup>b</sup> Rainborow appears to be wrong; see Stubbs, *Constitutional History*, vol. ii. § 269. and *Old Parliamentary History*, ii., pp. 12-29.



justice and equity uppon noe Constitution, which is nott justice and equitie uppon a Constitution. As for instance in the matter of a common &c.

I wish butt this, that wee may have a regard to safetie—safetie to our persons, safetie to our estates, safetie to our libertie. Lett's have that as the law paramount, and then lett us regard positive constitution as farre as itt can stand with safetie to these. Now therefore, thus for my parte I confesse itt, if I should have ever given a consent in my heart to propound any thinge that did nott consist with this, with regard to any Constitution whatsoever—butt for my parte I cannott see that any thinge butt safetie is provided for. Wheras Mr. Wildman sayes, that many godly men would nott bee satisfied with this that wee have read—which amounts to this: that the Commons have power to make lawes for all the Commons of England, that onely the person of the Kinge and persons of the Lords with their estates as persons are freed from them—I doe nott see they<sup>a</sup> are satisfied with anythinge without having a power over other men's liberties.

Mr. Wildman.

Wheras you are pleased to say I produced noe other evidence, Col. Rainborow brought another, because you did confesse the Lords had noe other power in making lawes.

Cofin. Ireton.

I never confest itt in my life, [otherwise] then [by] the recitation of that Oath “which the people shall chuse.”

Mr. Wildman.

I could wish wee should have recourse to principles and maximes of just Governement [instead of arguments of safety] which are as loose as can bee.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> “They,” *i. e.* Mr. Wildman's godly men.

<sup>b</sup> Ireton's previous speech supplies the words given in brackets, and his speech on p. 404 shows that Wildman proceeded to argue that the first maxim of just





Com. Ireton.

The Government of Kinges or of Lords is as just as any in the world, is the justest Government in the world. "Volenti non fit injuria." Men cannott wronge themselves willinglie, and if they will agree to make a Kinge, and his heires, there's noe injustice. They may either make itt hereditary or elective. They may give him an absolute power or a limited power. Heere hath bin Agreements of the people that have agreed with this. There hath bin such an Agreement when the people have fought for their libertie, and have established the Kinge againe.

Mr. Wildman.

'Twas their superstition to have such an opinion of a Great Man.<sup>a</sup>

Com. Ireton.

Any man that makes a bargaine, and does finde afterwards 'tis for the worse, yett is bound to stand to itt.

Mr. Wildman.

They were couzen'd as wee are like to bee.

Com. Ireton.

I would nott have you talke of principles of juste Government when you hold that all Governements that are sett uppe by consent are just. [Argue instead that] such or such a way that can consist with the libertie of the people. Then wee shall goe to cleare reason. That's one maxime, that all Government must bee for the safetie of the people.

Col. Titchborne.

Lett us keepe to that businesse of safetie. 'Tis uppon the matter government was that all governments rested on the consent of the people; but the people never set up King or Lords, therefore the government of King and Lords was unjust.

<sup>a</sup> The order of these two interpolations of Wildman's has been changed.



solelie in the people. [By] what hath bin propos'd in that I give Kinge and Lords [opportunity] to doe mee a curtesie if they will—<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Wildman.

Noe Curtesie.

Col. Titchborne.

Itt is onely an opportunity—and shew themselves as willing as the Commons. Lett us nott fight with shadowes.

Com. Ireton.

Wee doe nott know what opportunity God will give us.<sup>b</sup> If God will destroy Kinge or Lords hee can doe itt without cur or your wronge doing. If you take away all power from them, which this clearlie does, butt [do nott] take away all kinde of destruction of them from other men, then you doe them wronge too. Their having a [security from] destruction from other men cannott doe us wronge. That you can doe to the utmost for the[ir] safetie is this, that a Lord or Kinge may preserve his owne person or estate free from the Commons. Now whether this can bee destructive to the Commons that soc few men should bee distinct from a law made by the Commons, especially when wee have lawes made as to the preserving of the peace of the Kingdome and preserving every man in his right? The King and Lords are suable, impleadable in any Court. The Kinge may bee sued and tryed by a Jury, and a Lord may bee sued and tryed per Pares onely, a Knight by Esquires. What needes more where there are such lawes already that the Kinge and Lords are soc bound?

Mr. Wildman.

I conceive that the difference does not lie heerē, butt whether

<sup>a</sup> Titchborne argues thus: The right of making laws is expressly stated to be solely in the House of Commons. The formality of sending them to the King and Lords for their consent means nothing. Their consent is not necessary.

<sup>b</sup> I take this first sentence to be really another interpolation of Wildman's, and the rest of the speech Ireton's reply to it.



the Kinge shall soe come in, that the Parliament must make their addresses themselves unto him for [the confirmation of] every thinge they passe. Whether itt bee a shadow or noe, I thinke itt is a substance when nothing shall bee made but by addresse to the Kinge. This will bee very shamefull in future Chronicles, that after soe much bloud there should bee noe better an issue for the Commons.

Cofm. Ireton.

Doe you thinke wee have nott lawes good enough for the securing of [the] rights [of the Commons?]

Mr. Wildman.

I thinke [that] according to the letter of the law, if the King will [he may] kill mee by law. Aske any lawiers of itt; by the letter of the present law hee may kill mee, and 40 more, and noe law call him to account for itt.<sup>a</sup>

Cofm. Ireton.

I thinke noe man will thinke itt, that when the Kinge stands thus bound with soe many Laws<sup>b</sup> about him, and all the Commons of England bound to obey what law [the House of Commons] doe make, lett any man guesse whether the Kinge, as hee is a single person, will hazard himself to kill this, or that, or any other man.

Mr. Wildman.

Itt will bee thought boldnesse in mee [not] to agree. If God will open your hearts to provide soe that the Kinge may nott doe mee injury I shall bee glad of itt. If nott, I am butt a single man, I shall venture myself and [my] share in the common bottome.

Resolved, That the Councill bee adjourned till to-morrow and soe from day to day till the proposalls bee all debated, and the same Committee to meete againe.

<sup>a</sup> Compare *Putney Projects*, pp. 19, 34.

<sup>b</sup> MS. "Lords."



November 2, 1647

## Att the Meeting of the Committee.

Resolved,

1. That the power of this and all succeeding Representatives of the Commons in Parliament doth extend on the behalf and as to the whole interest of all the Commons of England to the enacting, altering, and repealing of lawes, to the conclusive exposition and Declaration of law, and to finall<sup>a</sup> judgement without further appeale, and generally to all thinges concerning the Commonwealth whatsoever is nott by the represented reserved to themselves as is heerafter expressed.

Nemine contradicente.

2. That noe law shall bee repealed, nor any new law or ordinance made to bind the Commons of England, nor any Parliamentary Judgement, triall, order, or other proceeding valid against any Commoner, without the particular concurrence and consent of the

Agreed.

Major Corbett;<sup>b</sup> noe.<sup>a</sup> MS. "small."

<sup>b</sup> Major John Cobbett of Skippon's regiment, probably opposed the vote on the grounds stated by Wildman on p. 398. A pamphlet quotes "the saying of Icton to honest Major Cobbett of Snowhill, who, for joyning with the agents of the Army, asked him if he were not deluded in his understanding, in joyning with the giddy-headed souldiers, and advised him not to run against the interest of himselfe and the officers" (*The Hunting of the Foxes, etc., Somers Tracts*, ed. Scott vi., 52). Cobbett seems to have been concerned in the mutiny at Ware; was tried by court martial at Windsor in January, 1648, and sentenced to be cashiered (Rushworth, vii., 937, 940). Like others then sentenced he was forgiven and sent back to his regiment, then at Newcastle, and distinguished himself by his gallantry at the re-capture of Tynemouth Castle, August 11, 1648 (Rushworth, vii., 1226; *The Second Part of England's New Chains Discovered*, 1649, pp. 7, 11). He was made Adjutant-General of the Foot to the Army which invaded Scotland in July, 1650 (*Cromwelliana*, p. 84). After the battle of Worcester he was selected to bear Cromwell's despatch to the Parliament, with the commendation "that the person who is the bearer hereof was equal in the performance of his duty to most that served you that day" (Carlyle's *Cromwell*, Letter clxxxiii). Cobbett made a relation, and produced "a collar of SS., which was the King of Scots', and his garter, which the said Major Cobbett took in his quarters at Worcester." He was voted a





House of Commons, except in case of actuall violence or affront done by a Commoner to the House of Peeres as a Court; and in that case noe further proceeding to bee valid, butt by the House of Commons, saving to the securing or imprisoning of the offender's person till hee can bee tryed.

3. That noe Commoner of England shall be exempt from butt shall bee subject to and concluded by the power and judgement of the House of Commons without further appeale, as alsoe to and by all such orders, ordinances, and lawes, or expositions and Declarations of law, as shall bee made, past, and insisted on by that House, except in such fundamentall thinges as are by the people electing generally reserved to themselves, as is heerafter expressed.

Agreed.

Nemine con-  
tradicante.

4. That noe person whatsoever being an officer of Justice or Minister of State shall bee exempt from, butt shall bee accountable and subject to the same power and judgement of the House of Commons for any mal-administration of his place to the hurt or damage of the Commonwealth; butt the persons of peeres, otherwise then in such capacity as aforesaid, shall bee tryed and judged onely by their Peeres.

Agreed.

Nemine con-  
tradicante.

5. That noe person whatsoever soe adjudged by Parliament as before shall bee capable of protection or pardon from the Kinge, or to have their fines remitted, without the advice or consent of Parliament, nor such fines to bee disposed of otherwise then by the same judgement, advice, or consent shall bee directed.

Agreed.

Nemine con-  
tradicante.

gratuity of £100, and an annuity of £100 from forfeited lands in Scotland (*Commons' Journals*, vii., 13, 191). He seems to have died a Lieutenant-Colonel in 1656 (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1656-7, pp. 249, 301). He should be distinguished from Major Robert Cobbett, another leveller, who ended by becoming a contractor for army-clothing (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.* 1657-8, p. 118; Lilburne's *Legal Fundamental Liberties*, 1649, p. 40), and from the better known Colonel Ralph Cobbett.



6. That in all Elections of Representatives for the people these things following are by the people electing reserved to themselves, and soe generally to bee understood, to witt:

Agreed.

Nemine contradicente.

1. Matters of Religion and the wayes of God's worshippe, as to any positive compulsion there, are nott intrusted to any humane power.

2. That the matter of impresting or constraining any free commoner of England to serve in the warres, any further or otherwise then for the immediate defence of this Kingdome and keeping the peace within itt, is likewise reserved.

3. That noe Commoner bee henceforth questioned for any thinge said or done in reference to or prosecution of the late warre or publique contests within this Kingdome, otherwise then by the judgement or with the concurrence of the present House of Commons, or in execution or prosecution of such judgement.

4. That the matter and effect of the preceding Articles, To witt, First, Concerning the certaine succession of Bienniall Parliaments.<sup>a</sup> Then the 2<sup>d</sup> Concerning the certainty of their sitting. Likewise the matter of the 6<sup>th</sup>, and the particulars under itt concerning the clearing of the power of Parliaments in future as to the interest of the people therin, and soe much of the intent of the 5<sup>th</sup> as concernes the equall distributing-of future Representatives, are reserved by the people represented as their fundamentall rights nott to bee given away or abrogated by their Representatives.

Added to the Committee.

Lt. Col. Salmon.

Coñ. Cowling.

Cornett Wallis.

<sup>a</sup> The propositions referred to are summarised by Rushworth, vii., 861.



That the said Committee shall prepare such other particulars to bee presented to the Parliament as they shall finde necessary in relation to our former Declarations, and likewise to prepare a Declaration to bee sent with them to the Parliament and Kingedome, to bee tendred to this generall Councill for their consideration att the next Meeting.

And if there appeare any likelihood, that the Parliaments propositions for peace may bee sent to the Kinge before the said Declaration and particulars can bee sent from the Army to the Parliament, then the said Committee are to move the Generall that the Parliament in the name of this Councill may bee desired to suspend the sending of their propositions to the King untill some thinges that wee have to offer shall bee tendred to them, which wee hold essentiall to the liberty and peace of this Kingedome.

Putney, 3<sup>o</sup> Novemb. 1647.

Att the Committee of Officers appointed by the Generall Councill.

A story about the Generall wearing the Kinge's Colours.

The souldiers saying, Lett my Collonell bee for the Devill an hee will, I will bee for the Kinge.\*

400 of Col. Lilburne's Regiment declar'd for the Kinge, uppon their coming back to Dunstable offer'd the Countrymen their armes, and they would take clubs, and bringe the Kinge to

\* A newsletter in the *Clarendon Papers* (vol. ii., Appendix, xlix.) says under Nov. 15: "On Thursday last Sir Thomas Fairfax's regiment of foot were drawn to a rendezvous; and one White, the Major of the regiment, told the soldiers that the kingdom must be under another government (which he said, to see how they would like it). Whereupon the whole regiment threw up their hats and cried, 'A King, a King.' And thereupon White got to his horse and made some haste out of the field."



Whitehall. They would see what their Officers would doe, and then they would carry the Kinge away.

### Debate concerning the Militia.<sup>a</sup>

That the Terme bee ten yeares, and the Declaratorie lawes to take place from thence.

Tythes nott to bee paid, but either a Land-rate to bee made in lieu of them, or sold att 14 yeares purchase for the use of the State, and they to make provision for the Ministers.<sup>b</sup>

Putney, 8 November,<sup>c</sup> 1647.

### The Lieut. Generall

Spoke much to expresse the danger of their principles who had sought to devide the Army. That the first particular of that which they call'd The Agreement of the People did tend very much to Anarchy, that all those who are in the Kingedome should have a voice in electing Representatives.

### Capt. Bray

Made a longe speech to take off what the Lieut. General said, and that what hee call'd Anarchy was for propriety.<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Rushworth gives the result of the debate concerning the Militia.

<sup>b</sup> Compare Rushworth, vii., 862.

<sup>c</sup> On the proceedings of the Council of the Army between Nov. 3 and Monday, Nov. 8, see Appendix E.

<sup>d</sup> William Bray, Capt.-Lieutenant in Col. Robert Lilburne's regiment of foot, was a personage of some importance amongst the Levellers. In the mutiny of that regiment at Ware on Nov. 15, 1647, Bray was the only officer above the rank of a lieutenant who stayed with the soldiers. He was arrested on the charge of having led the regiment to rendezvous contrary to orders (Rushworth, vii., 875; *Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 434). Bray's own account of his conduct, as delivered to the council of war which tried him, is printed in a pamphlet called *The Discoverer*, pt. 2, p. 52, 1649. He was tried by court martial at Windsor,





Lieut. Generall

Moved to putt itt to the Question,

Whether that the Officers and Agitators bee sent to their  
Quarters, yea, or noe.

Resolved uppon the Question,

That the Generall Council doth humbly advise his Excellency, that in regard the Generall shortly intends a Randezvous of the Army, and forasmuch as many distempers are reported to bee in the severall Regiments whereby much dissatisfaccion is given both to the Parliament and Kingdome through some misrepresentacions; to the end a right understanding may bee had, and the souldiers quieted, in order to their obedience to his Excellency for the service of the Parliament and Kingedome, itt is thought fitt to desire his Excellency that for a time the said Officers and Agitators

Dec. 1647, and finally on submitting and acknowledging his error dismissed, and sent back to his regiment (Rushworth, vii., 922, 937, 940, 943). Owing, as he states, to the hostility of his lieutenant-col., Henry Lilburne, he was again suspended from his command. In the summer of 1648 he raised a troop of volunteers in Kent to serve against the royalists, and attached it to the regiment of Col. John Reynolds. In March, 1649, he was expelled from the General Council of the Army and deprived of his command. On March 19 he presented to the House of Commons a printed statement of his grievances, entitled, "An Appeal in the humble claim of justice against Thomas Lord Fairfax," etc., which was voted scandalous and seditious, and Bray committed to Windsor Castle, during the pleasure of the House (*Commons' Journals*, vi., 167; "Appeal," pp. 11-15). He remained a prisoner at Windsor and Wallingford till Oct. 9, 1651 (*Commons' Journals*, vii., 31; *Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1651, p. 353). Two letters from Bray to Lenthall, petitioning for his release, are amongst the *Tanner MSS.*, lvi., 62; liii., 82; see also Cary's *Memorials of the Civil War*, ii., 141, and *The Englishman's Fundamental Appeal; or the Third humble petition and address of Capt. William Bray*, 1659. The first use Bray made of his freedom was to interrupt the proceedings of the Commissioners of Berkshire for underletting the estates of delinquents (*Tanner MSS.*, lv., 110). In 1659 he published a pamphlet entitled, "A plea for the people's Good Old Cause," and was recommended for employment as a sufferer for the true interest of the Commonwealth (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, p. 249).



resort to their severall commands and Regiments, to the ends aforesaid, there to reside untill the said Rendezvouz bee over, and untill his Excellency shall see cause to call them together againe according to the Engagement.<sup>a</sup>

## Committee.

Licut. Gencrall.	Mr. Allen.
Coñ. Gen. Ireton.	Capt. Clarke.
Sir Hardresse Waller.	Mr. Lockyer.
Col. Okcy.	Capt. Deane.
Col. Tichborne.	Col. Thomlinson.
Col. Hewson.	Lt. Col. Goffe.
Commissary Stane.	Major Rainborow.
Scoutmaster General [Watson].	Lt. Col. Cowell.
Col. Rich.	Coñ. Cowling.

This Committee to drawe uppe instructions for what shall bee offer'd to the Regiments att the Rendezvouz, to consider of the late lettre sent to the Parliament, and what shall bee thought fitt further to bee propos'd to them.<sup>b</sup>

[*Desires of the Army.*]

1. Itt is desired, That six weekes pay if possibly itt may bee, if nott a monthes pay, bee presently sent downe to the Army.

2. That the arreares may bee voted to bec paid out of the remainder of Byshopps lands, Deanes and Chapters lands, to bec sold in the same manner as the Byshopps lands, reserving a competencie for those that have a legall interest therin, and have nott forfeited the same by delinquencie, and two thirds out of

<sup>a</sup> This resolution is given in Rushworth, vi., 866.

<sup>b</sup> See "A remonstrance from his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and his Council of War concerning the late discontent and distraction in the Army, etc., November 14, 1647" (*Old Parliamentary History*, xvi., 340.) The engagement given at the end was evidently drawn up by this Committee.



delinquents compositions who have nott yett compounded and out of Forrest lands.

3. Wee desire, that the House will bee pleased either to make provision, that when this monthes pay is out there shall bee constant pay to inable the souldiers to avoide the oppressing of the people by free quarter (then which nothing is more greivous unto us), or if the Parliament does finde the Countries will nott soe readily bringe in their monies wee shall undertake, if inabled therunto, soe to dispose of the Army and of the severall counties as that the monies shall be raised and the people punctually satisfied for their quarters, provided that there may be an increase of the said tax to an hundred thousand pounds a month for the payment of this Army, and the other forces concern'd in the Kingedome, and those that are to goe for Ireland, and the disbanding of those that bee supernumerary, untill the Parliament shall otherwise provide by excise or otherwise for easing the said taxes.

4. Lastly, wee declare that if this course bee taken, that as wee have engaged that none shall uppon paine of death take any thinge from any inhabitant in this Kingedome against his will, wherein wee shall bee punctuall and positive, soe alsoe wee shall give assurance that noe man shall bee forc't to bee quarter'd uppon against his consent, provided there may bee an allowance for lodging, firing, and candle, or the owners uppon whose houses quarters are assigned to bee had in other places to bee allowed to those that shall quarte r.

Putney, 9 November, 1647.

Generall Councill.

The Generall present.

This Committee is to take into consideration, the Engagement,

These requests were accompanied by a letter from Sir Thomas Fairfax to the Speaker dated November 8, the original of which is in the *Tanner MSS.*, vol. lviii., f. 570. It is printed by Cary (*Memorials of the Civil War*, i., 356), and also by Rushworth, vii., 867, and was read in the House of Commons on November 9 (*Commons' Journals*, v., 353). The last lines of the 4th desire should probably run "to be allowed to those that shall quarter in other places, or the owners upon whose houses quarters are assigned to be had."



Declarations, and papers of the Armie, and uppon them to collect a summarie of those thinges that concerne the good of the Kingedome, the liberties of the people, and interests of the army, and further to consider the Case of the Army stated, and a paper commonly call'd The Agreement of the People, and to consider how farre any thinge contain'd in the same are consistent with the said Engagements and Declarations and Interests aforesaid.

This summarie soe concluded by the major parte of the Committee to bee represented to the Generall.<sup>a</sup>

CORNETT WALLIS.

CAPT. LEIGH.

LT. GENERALL.

COM. GENERALL.

LT. CHILLENDEEN.

SIR HARDRESSE WALLER.

CAPT. CARTER.

CORNETT TRACY.

COL. RICH.

LT. COL. GOFFE.

COL. THOMLINSON.

CAPT. DEANE.

„ DISNEY.

LT. COL. COBBRETT.

CAPT. ALLEN.

COL. OVERTON.

MR. COLBRON.

MAJOR BETHELL.

CAPT. WATSON.

MR. UNDERWOOD.

COL. TITCHBORNE.

MR. WILDMAN.

COM. COWLING.

Added since.

MAJOR SAUNDERS.

COL. HARRISON.

CAPT. SPENCER.

MAJOR RAINBOROW.

„ BERRY.

COL. RAINBOROW.

CAPT. PALMER.

LT. COL. ASHFIELD.

The place.

Quartermaster Generall's  
Quarters.

Adjoined till Thursday  
come fortnight att the  
Headquarters.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> See Rushworth, vi., 868, where this sentence continues "to the Generall for his order to communicate the same to the several regiments at their respective rendezvous."

<sup>b</sup> Met November 25th, at Windsor.





If any by that letter bearing date 5th of November doe make any construction as if wee intended that wee were against the Parliaments sending propositions to the Kinge, Wee doe heerby declare, That itt was noe part of our intentions in the said letter, but that the same is utterly a mistake of our intention and meaning therin, our intentions being only to assert the freedome of Parliament.<sup>a</sup>

LIEUT. GENERALL.	COL. BARKESTEAD.
SCOUTMASTER GENERALL.	CAPT. CARTER.
COL. RICH.	„ PRICE.
COL. HEWSON.	„ BYSHOPP.
COL. THOMLINSON.	MR. ALLEN.
SIR HARDRESSE WALLER.	MAJOR BETHELL.
COL. TITCHBORNE.	LT. COL. BOWEN.
„ OKEY.	MR. WHITING.
DR. STANE.	„ LOCKYER.
MAJOR ANTELL.	ADJ. GEN. BURY.
LT. SCOTTEN.	COR. WALLIS.
COM. COWLING.	LT. COL. ASHFEILD.
LT. COL. COBBETT.	LT. CHILLENDEEN.
MAJOR COBBETT.	MR. EYTON.
„ BERRY.	LT. COL. JUBBS.
QUARTERMASTER GENERALL	CAPT. COX.
GROSVENOR.	MAJOR ABBOTT.
COL. TWISLETON.	MR. CLARKE.
„ OVERTON.	CAPT. DISNEY. <sup>b</sup>
CAPT. MICHILL.	„ ALLEN.
„ YOUNGE.	

<sup>a</sup> The letter referred to is printed in Appendix E.

<sup>b</sup> The letter of the Agitators to their regiments, quoted in Appendix E., continues as follows, referring apparently to the meeting of November 9:

<sup>c</sup> The next day they still waved and refused the free debate of the aforesaid Question, and dissolved this Council for above a fortnight ; and for a time resolved



Putney, 11 November, 1647

Att the 2<sup>d</sup> Meeting of the Committee of Officers appointed by the Generall Councill.

Col. Harrison

Made a narration concerning some thinges that lay uppon his spirit in relation to the Kinge, Lords, and the Reserve. That the Kinge was a Man of Bloud, and therefore the Engagement taken off, and that they were to prosecute him. That if the Lords had right to have a Negative voice hee would nott goe against itt, butt if nott, if they had usurp't [it] an 100, 200, or 1000 yeares, the greater was the wronge, and they to bee debarr'd of that power.

Lt. Generall

Answer'd him by putting severall cases in which merther was nott to bee punished. As in the case if a man that had kill'd his sonne should gett into a garrison, whether hee might raise warre, or nott give conditions to that place. Stated the case of David uppon Joab's killing of Abner, that hee spar'd him uppon two prudentiall grounds: one that hee would nott hazard the spilling of more bloud in regard the sons of Zeroiah were too hard for him.

Com. Generall

Answer'd in the same case, and further urg'd this that wee are nott to sin, or to goe in any unlawfull way to doe that which is for bringing a delinquent to Judgement.

they would only prepare some faire Propositions to the Army, and about Arrears and pay, and sent to the Parliament for a moneths pay against a Rendezvonz; But they declared they would divide the Army into three parts, to Rendezvouz severally: and all this appears to be only to draw off the Army from joyning together to settle those cleere foundations of Freedome propounded to you, and to procure your rights as you are Souldiers effectually, without any more delusions."



Lieut. Generall.

That wee doe the worke when itt is disputable, and the worke of others to doe itt, if itt bee as an absolute and indisputable duty for us to doe itt.

The Generall.

That wee doe butt secure the Kinge in the right of another, and that itt became them for to order thinges concerninge him.<sup>a</sup>

Com̃. Cowling.

Itt was his usurping power in the law that would have ruin'd us, and doe butt destroy that and lett his person alone, wee care nott for itt.

[*Letter to a Commander in the North of England.*]

Sir,

I just now receiv'd information, that his Majesty is gone from Hampton Court, hee went about nine of the clock this night, and was mist within half an hower after his departure. Whither hee should bee gone I cannott as yett understand, butt supposing itt nott improbable that hee may intend towards the North, I thought good to give you this advertisement, and shall desire you to use all possible care and diligence by setting guards uppon all passages, and by making what inquiry you can that if possible you may discover and stay his Majesty. If itt shall see happen I desire you with all speede to advertise the Parliament and myself therof, and remayne,

[T. FAIRFAX.]

I shall desire your utmost care and diligence imediately to send to all the Port Townes in England.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> MS. "them."

<sup>b</sup> November 11, 1617, probably addressed to Lambert, who was in command at York.



Nov. 28, 1647.

To the right honourable his Excellencie Sir Thomas Fairfax, knt. Captaine Generall of all the forces raised in the Kingdome of England.

The humble petition of some of your Excellencies officers and souldieres under the custodie of the Marshall General,

Humble sheweth,

That whereas there are many misrepresentationes of things in the world by men of corrupte minds, who would make the end of all your noble and your armie's valiante atcheivements (under the power of God) fruitlesse, and would destroye iustice and righteousness from amongst men, and make a common good and equall distribucion of iustice to become a particuler personall selfish interest; and for to accomplish this unholy, this unwarrantable selfish end, they have blazed abroad that one should say itt was lawfull to murder the Kinge, and the person that reported itt was one Lieutenant Collonell Henry Lilburne; therefore seing itt is a derogateinge from the power of a true established representative of Commons, and seinge allsoe itt is most abominable in our eys and contrarie to our principles, Wee therefore desire that the said Leiut. Coll. Lilburne may bee speedily sent for to testifie upon oath (as in the presence of God,) whoe used those words, where these words were used, and when, and what in particuler the words were; that soe such a person may come under a publique cognizance, and your Excellencye's faithfull servants and souldiers may free themselves and others from such aspersions, and your petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

JOHN WOOD.

WILL: BRAY.

WILL: THOMSON.

JOHN CROSMAN.

WILL: PRYOR.

WILL: EYRE.

GEORGE HASSALL.

THO: BEVERLEY.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> A copy of this petition printed in *England's Freedom Soldiers Rights*, 1647, p. 10, adds the name of Will Everard.





*Letter from Col. Robert Hammond.*

Carisbrooke Castle, 19 Dec., 1647.

The Kinge stands engaged in his worde nott to stirr, and doth protest this is the place hee first designed when hee apprehended it not safe to continue longer at Hampton Court, and that if hee were to chuse anie place within his three Kingdoms hee would not remove hence except to London upon a personall treaty. I have often asked that if hee bee not thought safe here hee may be removed, which is the thing most desirable to mee.

[RO. HAMOND.<sup>a</sup>]

<sup>a</sup> This was probably addressed to Lord Fairfax.

---



## APPENDIX.

---

### APPENDIX A.

#### COLONEL WOGAN'S NARRATIVE.

The following narrative is a continuation of a paper printed by Carte under the heading, "*The Proceedings of the new-moulded Army from the time they were brought together in 1645 till the King's going to the Isle of Wight in 1647.*" Written by Col. Edward Wogan, till then an officer of that Army."<sup>1</sup> Carte unfortunately printed only half of Wogan's narrative, stopping short at the battle of Torrington in February, 1646; the remainder, beginning where Carte leaves off, is printed from the original in the Clarendon State Papers (No. 2607). A sketch of Wogan's life will help to determine the value of his statements. Of his early career little is known, but it may be safely assumed that he is the Captain Wogan of Okey's dragoons mentioned in the list of the New Model. In March, 1648, he deserted, and succeeded in marching to Scotland with the whole of his troop (Rushworth, vii., 1021-4, 1031). His surrender was vainly demanded by the Parliament (*ibid.* 1046, 1064-6). Clarendon, who devotes some pages to an account of Wogan, mistakenly places his desertion after the King's execution (*Rebellion*, xiv., 59-61). Later he joined Ormonde in Ireland, was appointed governor of Duncannon and successfully repulsed an attack by Ireton (Carte, *Ormonde*, ii., 97).

In December, 1649, when Col. Sankey defeated Lieut.-Gen. Ferrall, Wogan was taken prisoner, but escaped by corrupting his gaoler (Carlyle's *Cromwell*, Letter cxvii.; Whitelocke, *Memorials*, f. 426). Had he not escaped Cromwell intended to execute him as a renegade and traitor, "who did not only betray his trust in England but

<sup>1</sup> Carte, *Collection of Original Letters and Papers concerning the Affairs of England from 1641 to 1660*, 2 vols., 1739; vol. i., pp. 142.



counterfeited the General's hand (thereby to carry his men, whom he had seduced, into a foreign nation to invade England), under whom he had taken pay and from whose service he was not discharged; and with the same nation did invade England and hath since, contrary to the said trust, taken up arms here" (Carlyle's *Cromwell*, Appendix 16). In 1653 Wogan boldly landed in England from France, enlisted fifty or sixty men for the King's service, marched from London to Scotland pretending they were soldiers of the Commonwealth, and joined Middleton and the royalists who were holding out in the Highlands (*Cal. Clarendon Papers*, ii., 286, 288; *History of the Rebellion*, xiv., 59). Soon after joining Middleton he was severely wounded in an obscure skirmish, died for want of a good surgeon, and was buried at the Kirk of Kenmore in February, 1654 (*Military Memoirs of John Gwynne*, 1822, pp. 220, 224, 237, 239, 243, 248, 253).

"We were soone enformed of that from Ireland by a small frigott that came into Padstow that was sent by my Lord of Woster, with letters to the Prince. The frigate came in w<sup>th</sup> that confidence being assured the place was within the King's quarters, theire men came on shore without asking anything of the Inhabytantes who was quartered theire by chance; some of o<sup>r</sup> horsemen being in that towne examined the men and found them to be Irish, w<sup>ch</sup> presently confessed they came from Waterford in Ireland, they seized upon the seamen and got aboard, the frigott being run aground there, the[y] tooke one Captain Allen w<sup>ch</sup> had the command of the vessell, him with a packett was brought to Bodman to o<sup>r</sup> Generall. By those letters we understood that there was noe danger of any Foote coming out of Ireland, for in those letters was mencioned the want of Shipping and moneys before any Foote could be had from thence, then there was noe other feare then that of France and to prevent that danger there was order sent to Admirall Batten to hover from the Land's End to the Coast of Brittany; then o<sup>r</sup> Generall resolved to advance towards Trurowe; in o<sup>r</sup> march the first day from Bodman o<sup>r</sup> forlorne of Horse encountered w<sup>th</sup> a partie of the Enimies w<sup>ch</sup> were commanded by Major Generall Web, both parties mett and fought nobly. At last the King's partie being over numbred was forst to give ground and leave the field in some disorder; only the Major Generall himselfe charged w<sup>th</sup> an undaunted curage through all our partie and in charging back agayne his horse was killed and himself wounded in severall places w<sup>th</sup> all those that stuck to him either slayne or taken, he being at last after a long fight on foote forst to submit. The second day we mett with theire Commissioners that came to treat which was very strange to us all, yet o<sup>r</sup> Generall would not heare of a Treaty till he came to Trewrowe where the King's Army then lay. First it was agreed that the King's Army should draw back



westward from Trnrow and that o<sup>rs</sup> should quarter there. Allsoe it was agreed that there should be a seasasion of armes for six days, dureing w<sup>ch</sup> tyme the Commissioners of both Armies were to sitt att Trnrow to agree upon the Articles; for all this o<sup>r</sup> Generall had noe greate confidence in this treaty fearing least the King's Army should slip by them as they might easily doe, but to prevent that daunger he sent some horse and Dragoones back agayne to Bodman w<sup>th</sup> an order that all the trees should be cut downe behind Bodman bridge and in all the Cuntry thereabouts to stopp the King's horse if they came that way, in two or three dayes. That doubt was cleared, for o<sup>r</sup> Commissioners and theires agreed thus: First that the King's Army should disband and theire Souldiers leaveing their horse should retourne to their severall homes, and the Officers to march to their severall homes w<sup>th</sup> their horses and armes. The King's Army were to lay downe their armes by Brigade on severall dayes till there was a Regiment of o<sup>r</sup> horse that convoyed them away to their severall cuntries. When all the King's Army was disbanded there was nothing more for o<sup>r</sup> Army to doe in those partes; a Councell of Warr was called and it was thought fitt that the Army should march towards Exeter and that Collonel Fortesque should stay in that Cuntry with two Regements of Foore and 3 Troopes of horse for the takeing in of Pendenis and the Mount. O<sup>r</sup> Generall with the rest of the Army came before Exetter, the Governor thereof, which was Sir John Berkley, seeing o<sup>r</sup> Army come before it and knowing that the King's Army was disbanded with all the nessecity he was reduced unto for want of provisions and with all that they had noe hopes of releefe, hee was forst to surrender the City upon honorable condicions; soe was Bastable deliver'd upon the same condicions; all o<sup>r</sup> horse were sent towards Oxford under the command of Commissary Generall Ireton, our Generall with the Lieutenant Generall stay with all the foote at Exeter to refresh them awhile. The Commissary lay w<sup>th</sup> all the horse round Oxford and continually on duty, for the Kinge was then in the Cytty with Prince Rupert w<sup>th</sup> a considerable party of horse as we heard, who were resolved to fall out upon some of our quarters, w<sup>ch</sup> made us all every night to expect their coming.

After the generall had settled the businesse of the west he marched w<sup>th</sup> all the foote towards Oxford. Before he came within three or fower dayes march of the April 27th, Cytty the Kinge gott out privately in the night only w<sup>th</sup> two or three 1646. persons w<sup>th</sup> him. It was told the Comissary generall that the Kinge was gone for London, and was invited thither by the Presbiterian party of the House and Cytty, and was encouraged to it by the Scotts army that lay then before Newarke. I knowe not whether that report was true or noe, but I am sure that was the first pretended cause of jelousey that was betwene the Independant and Presbyterian party, and to make the army the more assured of this report it was credibly said that the King came first to London and was conveyed from thence to the Scotts army. This bred noe small division betwixt the Presbiterian and Independant officers of the army. The generall came up with the foote before Oxford, and placed them as conveniently as hee could, as above the horse and Major Generall Massey's Brigade was to lye about Farington. We continued soe for the





space of a moneth and the foote entreneht Themselves a good distance from the Towne. Collonell Whaley w<sup>th</sup> his regim<sup>t</sup> of horse and 2 regm<sup>ts</sup> of foote was sente to block up Woster w<sup>th</sup> the assistance of Collonell Morgan the govern<sup>r</sup> of Glossester. It was just at that tyme the black lyst was presented to the Leut<sup>t</sup> Generall, w<sup>ch</sup> was the names of all those officers in the army that were Presbiterians. It was brought privately aul presented by Lieuten<sup>t</sup> generall Wattson, w<sup>ch</sup> was a most pernicious factious fellow. He was backed by many of the cheefest of the Army and partly<sup>1</sup> by the Comissary generall. The Generall was ignorant of it, and knew not what it meant when one Major Fincher Quarter M<sup>r</sup> Generall of the Horse discovered it unto him, and told him of what daungerous consequence (*sic*) would be if this liste came to the knowledg of those officers whose names were written in it. The generall made answer that for his par<sup>te</sup> he made noe differance of theire opinions but was confident that all his offic<sup>rs</sup> were faythfull to the Parliam<sup>t</sup>, and that the Lieu<sup>t</sup> Generall as he conceived would not doe any thing to the prejudice of any man that wisht well to the Parliam<sup>t</sup> or Army. The Q<sup>r</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Generall was noe way satisfied w<sup>th</sup> this answer but was resolved to acquaint his frends in the Parliam<sup>t</sup> House, w<sup>th</sup> this liste and of the new order that was given out by the Leut<sup>t</sup> Generall, w<sup>ch</sup> was Liberty of Conscience as they caled it to all that pretend to have the guift of the spiritt in preaching or expounding. Both houses tooke this soe haynously that their was an order sente to o<sup>r</sup> generall that none should preach or teach in the Army but those that are lawfully called to it by the Assembly of Divines. This order was no sooner come but executed, but to the greate greefe of the Leut. Generall and his faction; yet they desembled the matter soe well that they seemed to take noe notice of it at present. In the meane while the seige went on, and the towne being streightned for provisions yet obstinate would not surrender. There were not those wanting in o<sup>r</sup> Army that spred abroade that the king w<sup>th</sup> the Scots army would releve that Cytty, and that the Presbiterian party of the Houses of Lords and Commons would invite him to it. Many papers to this purpose were spred abroade amongst the soldyers, but to noe effect, for the Presbiterians had much the stronger parte in the army; beside Major General Massie's brigade would back them upon any occasion to that purpose. Collonell Raynsburrow was sent w<sup>th</sup> two regm<sup>ts</sup> of horse and two of foote to strengthen the seige of Woster that was but slightly blockt up before by Collonell Whaley. Whaly was called back to the seige of Oxford, he being then accounted a Presbiterian. At last necessity compelled the Cytty to treate. Comisson<sup>rs</sup> were ordered on both sides: after long debate they agreed and the Cytty was surrendred upon honorable condicions, soe was Woster, Farington and Wallingford, and allsoe Ragland that was beseiged by foote of ours sente from the seige of Oxford: our army having then noethinge to doe were sent to quarters, some to Wales, some to the Associate Conntyes, another p<sup>te</sup> were quartered about Wostershere, Oxfordshere, and Herifordshere. Major General Massie's brigade were sente to Dorsetshere, Som<sup>r</sup>s'shere and Wiltshere to quarter. The first of

---

<sup>1</sup> Contracted for "particularly."



Cromwell's stratagems was to get the Major Generall's brigade to disband under pretence to ease the Kingdom, though they offered their service to Ireland and would willingly have gone w<sup>th</sup> that money they had at their disbanding, but Cromwell prevented their desires and spoke openly in the House that he would carry as many of the new modelled army to that Kingdom as the Parliam<sup>t</sup> thought fitt and that he would disband the rest if they pleased. This motion of his tooke off all jealousy from Cromwell and the rest of the army: presently order was given for Massie's men to disband. w<sup>ch</sup> was presently done. Presently after happened the suddayne death of the Earle of Essex, w<sup>ch</sup> Cromwell tooke soe much to heart in his outward apperance that he was scene by some to cry and tear his hayre, though it was judged by many that hee contrived his death; at this tyme the King was at Newcastle w<sup>th</sup> the Scotts, his friends daily resorting thither, w<sup>ch</sup> gave greate cause of suspicion of the Scotts and credibly confirmed in ou<sup>r</sup> army that the Scotts would declare for the Kinge. To prevent further danger there were two reg<sup>ts</sup> of horse and Oakey's dragoons sent to quarter all along upon the River Trent; and to examin all that came that way Northwards. At last we're freed from that feare, for the Scotts were resolved to deliver up the King as soone as they had received an hundred thousand pounds, and soe leave the kingdome. Their money was conveyed downe to them by Colonell Graves; there went alsoe w<sup>th</sup> him Commission<sup>rs</sup> from both houses that went to receive the Kinge, and to pay the money to the Scotts. The King was delivered to the custody of Collonell Graves: the Scotts marched for their owne cuntry, and the Kinge was brought to Holmeby, there kept w<sup>th</sup> a strong garde about him and none of his old friends suffered to come unto him except those that had leave from o<sup>r</sup> Commission<sup>rs</sup>. The Commission<sup>rs</sup> made divers propositions to the King, but not pleasing to him. Cromwell all this while sate in the House, and both Houses ordered that the most parte of the army should disband or goe for Ireland except those that were to stay in the kingdome as a standing armie, w<sup>ch</sup> was to be all Presbyterians. Cromwell seemed to be as forward for this as any in the House; o<sup>r</sup> head Quarters was then at Nottingham. Commissary Ireton all this while was not ignorant what the Parliam<sup>t</sup> was resolved to doe, and at councill of warr tooke ocaasion to speake of this; how the Parliam<sup>t</sup> had noe good intentions towards the army, and that it was a sad reward for we many yeares service to be cast of w<sup>thout</sup> any reward for their service or security for their persons after they were disbanded: likewise that the Parliam<sup>t</sup> was resolved to set upp the King agayne, that there would be noe liveing for any in that kingdome that had served in our army. All the offi<sup>rs</sup> that were present were much moved at this and besought the Commissary to advise them what they were to doe. He answered there was noe way but one to prevent this, w<sup>ch</sup> was that every officer should repayre to his respective command, and to send a trooper of each troope w<sup>th</sup> the grievances of the severall troopes to Saffron Walden, where the Generall was then going to receive the Commission<sup>rs</sup> of both Houses that were coming downe to disband the Army. The Parliam<sup>t</sup> thought none soe fitt as Cromwell to be one of those Commission<sup>rs</sup>. The Com-



mission<sup>rs</sup> came to Saffron Walden; all the offic<sup>rs</sup> of the army were to meete there w<sup>th</sup> the names of all those that will engage for the service of Ireland: there likewise came a trooper of each troope w<sup>th</sup> their severall greivances. When they were all come to towne, they were called privately together by Cap<sup>t</sup> John Reynolds of Cromwell's Regiment and one his greatest favorite: when the troope mett together the Cap<sup>t</sup> made them a long and plesant speech, told them how they were like to be cast of whont any man<sup>r</sup> of reward for their greate services, and that they had noe courage nor hon<sup>r</sup> that would be soe, and that for his p<sup>te</sup> he and all his troope would sooner dye then disband w<sup>thout</sup> the utmost farthing of their arreares. This speech tooke soe well w<sup>th</sup> these troopers that they highly comended his brave resolution and were all of his opinion. When the Cap<sup>t</sup>. perceived that his speech found such good successe, desired them all to sitt downe and consider what they had to doe, and for his parte if they pleased he would sitt w<sup>th</sup> them and doe nothing w<sup>thout</sup> their consent, w<sup>ch</sup> they gladly accepted of, and gave their Cap<sup>t</sup>. the title of Chayreman. The first thing they did was to dispatch messengers to every regim<sup>t</sup> and troope in the army to let them know what the Parliament was resolved to doe and what they for their p<sup>te</sup> were resolved to propose to the Comission<sup>rs</sup> and further desired that every troope should owne what their deptyes should propose to the Comission<sup>rs</sup> to be their sense and desire, w<sup>ch</sup> was accordingly granted by almost every troope in the army. Our generall comanded that all our offic<sup>rs</sup> should meete in the greate Church at Saffron Walden to heare what the Comission<sup>rs</sup> had to say unto us. The Generall w<sup>th</sup> the Comission<sup>rs</sup> came to the Church, w<sup>ch</sup> was almost full; the General made a shorte speech, told us how much the Parliam<sup>t</sup> and Kingdom were obliged to us for our faythfull services, and desired them that would goe for Ireland to give in their names: and that they first should have security for their arreares. Then Cromwell stode up and made a long grave speech in the beha<sup>f</sup> of the Parliam<sup>t</sup>, first to give the army thanks for their never to be forgotten services, as allsoe what a greate care the Parliament had to please each particuler man according to his particuler meritt, and that the Parliam<sup>t</sup> would in tyme pay the arreares of those that were to stay in the Kingdom. and give security for the payment of those that were to goe for Ireland. and protested for his parte that if the Parliam<sup>t</sup> would command him he would gladly trayle a picke in that war of Ireland, therefore desired us all to consider what a holy war that was, and that it were a noble thing for all us that were young men to engage for that kingdom. Just whilst he was thus speaking he was interrupted by one of the troopers that was of Reynolds his Connecell, w<sup>ch</sup> had newly called themselves Agitator<sup>rs</sup>; the fellow spoake boldly to the Leu<sup>t</sup> Generall and told him that he was employed thither by the Army to acquaynt the Generall and the Comission<sup>rs</sup> of their agreivance, and to that pnrpose p<sup>rsent</sup>ed a remonstrance in the behalfe of the Army, w<sup>ch</sup> startled the Comission<sup>rs</sup> and the Generall himselfe, and Cromwell tooke on like a madman, and declared openly in the Church that all those that had a hand in that remonstrance were enimies to the Parliam<sup>t</sup>. Many of o<sup>r</sup> Officer<sup>s</sup> were surpris<sup>d</sup> at his saying, but not the Chayreman of the Agitators, w<sup>ch</sup> was Cap<sup>t</sup> Reynolds. He





seemed to be the more confident in his request. The remonstrance was soe unreasonable that the Comission<sup>rs</sup> would not grant anything that was desired in it: the offic<sup>rs</sup> were all dismiss<sup>d</sup> to their severall commands. Crumwell and the rest of the Comission<sup>rs</sup> returned to London to give the Parliam<sup>t</sup> an account. Crumwell in his pretended fury protested the ruen of all those that had a hand in that remonstrance. Ireton seemd to be a nenter and would not openly owne the remonstrance, nor seeme to contest w<sup>th</sup> the Parliam<sup>t</sup>. The Chayreman of the Agitators was not idle, but sent allwayes to the Troop[c]s to let them know what a sad condicion they were if they did not owne that remonstrance, and the proceedings of the Agitators. The Generall was ignorant of these contrivances and certaynly perswaded by Ireton that these that were called Agitators intended nothing to his prejudice nor to the dishon<sup>r</sup> of the army, yet the General, the Comissary Generall, and all the Offic<sup>rs</sup> of the Army disavowed the proceedings of the Agitators. Ireton designed the matter, what he would have the army to doe, and privately would send it to London to Crumwell. Crumwell would with as much privacie send it back agayne to his Capt. Reynolds, the Chayreman Reynolds would present it to the Agitat<sup>rs</sup> as the greivance of the Army, they would declare it to the Parliament as the desire of the Army, soe that all things were done and acted in that Councell of what concerned the Army w<sup>th</sup>out the Generalls order or any other Offic<sup>rs</sup> of the army. The Parliament was much offended at this and writt to the generall to appease that mutinie as they called it, and to apprehend such offic<sup>rs</sup> as had a hand in that mutinie, that the Generall would be pleased to send up Cap<sup>t</sup> Reynolds to them, he being, as they conceived, the cheefe instrument of what was past. The Generall tooke this letter with consideration and advised w<sup>th</sup> Ireton about it. Whilst the matter was in debate whether Reynolds should be sent or noe, the Kinge was taken away from Holmebey by a partie of five hundred horse under the comand of Cornet Joyce. Those that had the garde of the Kinge concended to his takinge away, I meane all the comon sould<sup>rs</sup>. Collonell Graves that had the comand of the Kinge at that tyme was first to fly away privately, for all his whole regm<sup>t</sup> mutined ag<sup>t</sup> him. He and S<sup>r</sup> Robert Pye came post to London to advertise the Parliam<sup>t</sup> of what was happened, then o<sup>r</sup> Generall sent to the Parlem<sup>t</sup> to let them know how parte of the army tooke away the Kinge he then knew not where, and that the rest of the army would mutinie, and protested his innocency in the proceedings of the army and taking away the king. This put both Houses into a strange feare soe that they knew not what to doe or say in the matter. Now Crumwell foamed and stormed, vowed that if the Parliament would comand him he doubted not but in a shorte tyme he would destroy all the mutiners there. He protested before God openly before the Houses that he would never leave them nor forsake them whilst he lived. The House seemd much satisfied w<sup>th</sup> Crumwell's solemne protestation and began to consider how he might appease this mutiny. Crumwell, that very afternoone stole out of Towne and posted downe to the army. As soone as he came, the first thing he did was to owne what the Agitat<sup>rs</sup> had done and the taking away of the king to be his design. Our Generall was amased at





his sayings, but Crumwell and Ireton perswaded him that there was a nessesity for it, and that it was for their owne safety. First they made it app<sup>r</sup> to him that the Parliam<sup>t</sup> had a designe to ruen the army, and that they would close with the King and leave the army in the lurch to their greate dishon<sup>r</sup> and utter ruen: by much adoe they perswaded the Generall to be of their opinion and moreover perswaded him to send his declaration to that purpose to the Parliam<sup>t</sup>, which accordingly he did. The Parliament was astonished at it, and had they not been encouraged by the Cytty of London that assured them they would live and dye with them.<sup>1</sup> The Parliam<sup>t</sup> set forth their declaracion against the army and declared all those to be traitors that had a hand in takeing away of the Kinge. They further declared that all those offic<sup>rs</sup> and sold<sup>rs</sup> that would come of from the army to London should have six moneths' pay in hand and security for their arrers, and that they should continue in the standing army that should be in the Kingdom. This declaracion wrought soe much in the army that it brought of many both offic<sup>rs</sup> and sould<sup>rs</sup>, first Coll. Graves, Coll. Herbert, Coll. Fortescue; S<sup>r</sup> Rob<sup>t</sup> Pye, Coll. Sheffield, Coll. Battler, Quarter M<sup>r</sup> Generall Fincher, the Generall's Lea<sup>t</sup> Collonell of foot and many Cap<sup>ts</sup> and other Offic<sup>rs</sup> and sould<sup>rs</sup> came away upon this declaration to London; without doubt all the rest would have followed, had it not bene for Crumwells subtilty, w<sup>ch</sup> was his outward good carriage to the King w<sup>ch</sup> was then in the army. It was given out in the army by Crumwell's permission that as the Parliam<sup>t</sup> would reinthrowne the King w<sup>thout</sup> making condicions for the sould<sup>rs</sup> soe would the army reinthrowne the King w<sup>thout</sup> making condicions for the Parliam<sup>t</sup>. It was at that very tyme the Presbiterians lost all their interest in the army, by reason all those offic<sup>rs</sup> they had most confidence in had now deserted the army and were gone to London, w<sup>ch</sup> had they not done, Crumwell and Ireton could never have brought their desigue to passe, nor ever have gayned soe much interest in the army as presently after they had, by reason that all those that deserted the army their comands were voyd and given to the most factious that could be found. The Parliam<sup>t</sup> were preparing of an army, the cavalier party in London were joyneing w<sup>th</sup> them. On the other side Crumwell endevored to oblige all the Kings frends and thought i<sup>n</sup> the nearest way first to make the King his frende, w<sup>ch</sup> he did by his great protestacions and oathes upon his knees privately before the Kinge that he and the whole army would declare for him; and to give the greater assurance of his faithfulness he gave order that all those that were the King's old frends might freely com to him without any kinde of examining, that his old servants might attend him, that there should be noe distinctive mark betwene the army and those that were formerly of the King's and comanded all the offic<sup>rs</sup> to entertayne as many of them as came to o<sup>r</sup> army: the King was likewise without any guard of the army, and suffered to goe for his pleasure wheresoever he desired. The King's frends at London could not well tell w<sup>ch</sup> side to take; for the Parliam<sup>t</sup> profest as much for the King as the Army could doe, but they havinge not much confidence in the Parliam<sup>t</sup> sent downe a gent<sup>l</sup> of qualitty to the King to

---

<sup>1</sup> Something omitted.



receive his comands. The gen<sup>t</sup> that came to the Kinge, as I take it, was Sr Marmiduke Langdon, who was sent back to London, w<sup>th</sup> command to those of the King's frends not to medle nor engage w<sup>th</sup> the Parliam<sup>t</sup> in London. The Presbiterians in London were quite dishartened when they saw the Kings' party leave them. The Cyty would not advance any money for the levying of a new army. The Parliament at that tyme had noe money in their treasury; our army came towards London and sent their propositions to the Parliament, first to demaund eleven of their members to put into the hands of the army; next that the Parliam<sup>t</sup> should own all the proceedings of the army. The Parliament thought themselves soe much undervalued in these unreasonable demaunds that they would by noe meanes condescend to anything that the army desired. Still the army came on, and the Parliam<sup>t</sup> not being provided to defend themselves, the Cyty not willing to engage in a new warr, as they conceived that to be, being much discouraged at the Speaker's stealing away w<sup>th</sup> thirty Lords and Commons; presently after the Speaker of the House of Lords went away allsoe to the army, with divers of the principall cyttezens of London. Those of the Parliam<sup>t</sup> that stayd behind were all in a confusion, and knew not well what to doe by reason the Cyty gave them quite over, and would have nothing to doe w<sup>th</sup> them, nor would not doe soe much as maynetayne their lyne to make condicions for themselves, but suffered the army to march through the Cyty without any maner of opposition. When we came on the other side of the Cyty o<sup>r</sup> Generall demaunded the Tower w<sup>ch</sup> was presently given him. O<sup>r</sup> army marched to Croyden, the King was sent to Hampton Court w<sup>th</sup> a small garde. When Crumwell was possest of the Tower, Guildehall and Whitehall, the first thinge he did was to command the Cytyzens to pull downe all the lyne and fortifications about the Cyty, w<sup>ch</sup> was accordingly done w<sup>th</sup> greate humillity and reverence. Then the Parliam<sup>t</sup> sate agayne, I meane those members that came downe to the Army. The first thing they did after they sate was to owne all that the Parliam<sup>t</sup> did this tyme past, and ordered that the Army should have six moneths' pay payd them out of hand, w<sup>ch</sup> was borrowed of the Cyty, and presently payd to the sold<sup>rs</sup>. The army was then sent to quarters w<sup>th</sup> an order to disband all those amongst us that were of the King's party. Coll. Whaley was sent w<sup>th</sup> his Regim<sup>t</sup> to garde the Kinge at Hampton Court. The Generall removed his quarters to Putney where he stayed till the Kinge was cunningly jugled away to the Isle of Wight, and soe presently after I marcht away into Scotland w<sup>th</sup> my troope.

---



## APPENDIX B.

THE EXAMINATION OF THE THREE TROOPERS WHO DELIVERED  
THE LETTER OF THE SOLDIERS TO MAJOR GENERAL  
SKIPPON, April 30, 1647.

[Tanner MSS. Bodleian Library, vol. lviii., f. 84.]

The Gentlemen that delivered the letter were call'd in, vizt.

Mr. Edw. Sexby.

Mr. Wm. Allin.

Mr. Tho. Shepherd.

They brought and delivered a letter to Major Generall Skippon, the like to the Lieutenant Generall, and the like to His Excellencie.

By what authoritie

The joynt and unanimous consent of the Eight Regiments of Horse, they having attested it by two of every Regiment. They mett at severall places.

They had noe Rendezvous but what wee had by our Officers.

Brought by our Officers [sic] each Regiment to a Rendezvous.

The Proposicions for the service of Ireland read.

They did know the contents of the letter else they would not have subscribed it. It was read in each Regiment and each Troope and subscribed. The originall is with the Regiments. This but a faire copie. There was an originall with each Troupe.

Ordered,

That the Sergeant doe keepe these persons asunder upon their Examinacions and after they are examined.

Mr. Allen.

How long hee had been in the Armie, a twelve moneth. Bore noe Office. Warwickshire man, served in Lieutenant Generall Cromwell's Troupe. Hee heard it read and subscribed it. Severall t[imes?] read, cannot recollect the names of these persons that read it.

Demanded his opinion touching a Clause in the letter concerninge some that had tasted of soveraigne ie and had degenerated into Tyrants.

Answered that

As it was the joynt Act of the Eight Regiments to contrive it, they will joyntly answer it.



That hee shall give in his answer with the rest as it was the joynt act of the rest with him.

Hee did not saye, that it was read in any of the Regiments or Troupes when they were brought to a Rendezvous, but that it was read in many places which hee cannot recollect.

Mr. Allen againe.

Necre a twelve moneth since hee came to this Army.

In the Lord General Essex's Army served under Collonel Holles in his Regiment till hee was a prisoner at Brentford and served afterwards in Gen. Major Skippon's Regiment.

A prisoner in the Kinges Armie seaven dayes, condemned among seaventeene others to be hanged, by judgment of a Councell of Warre, then every tenth man drawen out to be hanged, at last an oath putt to them and dismissed. Wounded at first Newberry fight. Tooke the oath at Oatlands.

After hee had taken the Oath hee listed himselfe in Major Generall Skippon's Regiment, served under Captain Beton.

A felt maker by trade in Southw. Wounded againe at Henly, where hee received five shillings of Major Generall Skippon.

Mr. Sixby.

Suffolk man, trouper in the Generall's owne troupe, serv'd fower yeares, before hee serv'd the Generall hee serv'd the Lieutenant Generall in that troupe which is now the Generall's.

Ask't what hee mean[t] thaire?

Being the generall act of all hee can give noe answer being but one particular man.

Mr. Tho. Shepherd. Shropshire.

Served first under the Earl of Essex in the Earl of Bedford's Troupe of Chirasseers.

Taken prisoner at Oxington coming from the relief of Gloucester. Prisoner 5 weekes, tooke noe oath, not exchanged, made his escape. Hee did heare it read, did subscribe it. Cannot remember whether hee read itt himselfe, about a weeke since hee heard it first read. Where? One of the Eight Regiments.

At what place. Hee does not remember. Demanded clause.

If it pleased this Honourable House to putt the Queries in writing the Eight Regiments whereof I am a Member whose joynt act it was will give an answer to them.

*Endorsed :—*

Answers.

Sexby.

Allen.

Shepherd.

30 April, 1647.





[The question whether William Allen, the agitator, mentioned here was the William Allen who subsequently became Adjutant-General of the Horse in the Irish Army is a question of some interest. Ludlow, describing the presentation of the letter by the three troopers, affirms that Allen "was afterwards known by the addition of Adjutant-general" (ed. 1751, p. 73). Carlyle asserts that this is a blunder of Ludlow's. (1.) On the other hand this question of identity is a point on which Ludlow was likely to be right. He knew Allen personally, and they served together in Ireland (*Memoirs*, p. 145). Allen belonged to the political party which regarded Ludlow as their leader, and is described as specially commending him (Thurloe, iii. 140, 143). (2.) Allen, the agitator, states that he had served in the Parliamentary army since 1642. Allen, the adjutant-general, writing in 1655 talks of his thirteen years faithful service (Thurloe, iii., 140). (3.) Adjutant-General Allen in his tract published in 1659 (entitled, "*A faithful Memorial of that remarkable meeting of many officers of the Army in England at Windsor Castle in the year 1648,*" *Somers Tracts*, vi., 499), speaks as if he had been present at the army councils in 1647, and directly affirms his presence at those in the spring of 1648. At the meetings described in this volume there seem to have been only two Allens present, viz. Captain Allen and Mr. Allen. Captain Allen was Francis Allen of Ingoldsby's regiment, Mr. Allen, William Allen, the trooper of Cromwell's own regiment. I believe the agitators were present at the meetings at Windsor in the spring of 1648, and if so William Allen was pretty certainly there. It may be objected that a man who was an ordinary trooper in 1647, would hardly have become adjutant-general in 1651. But the office of adjutant-general did not imply high regimental rank, and when Allen was first mentioned as adjutant-general of horse he was merely a captain. In 1647 and 1648 several privates, who had been agitators, obtained commissions, including Allen's companion Sexby. Allen's rise was not as rapid as that of Sexby, who was a lieutenant-colonel in 1651, but there is no improbability in the supposition that the former obtained a commission in 1648.

Of Adjutant-General Allen's later career more can be stated with certainty. He is spoken of as "Captain Allen, adjutant-general of the Horse" in Ireland in September, 1651, and was later one of the



commissioners for the settlement of Ulster (*Mercurius Politicus*, p. 2523). He disapproved of Cromwell's assumption of the Protectorate, but wrote of the Protector himself: "As to the person in chief place, I confess I love and honour him, for the honour God hath put upon him, and I trust will yet continue, I mean that of uprightheartedness to the Lord, though this last change with his atendeneys hath more stumbled me than ever any did" (Thurloe, ii., 214, 215). Allen was arrested in Devonshire in January, 1655, for "multiplying dissatisfaction in the minds of men to the present government" (Carlyle's *Cromwell*, Letter excvii.). Thurloe's papers contain an interesting account of the charges against Allen, and a letter from Allen to the Protector vindicating himself. "I can say truly," he wrote, "if I have erred it hath been, I fear, in esteeming too highly of you." He denied any intention of acting against the Protector: "I durst not lift a hand against you nor join with or advise the doing of it" (Thurloe, iii., 141). Allen was allowed to return to his post in Ireland, where he gave Henry Cromwell some trouble, and at length, in November, 1647, resigned his commission (Thurloe, iv., 323, 433; v. 670). In 1659 the Rump nominated him to be colonel of a regiment of horse in Ireland. In addition to the "Faithful Memorial" published in 1659 he printed "A word to the Army touching their sin and duty, 1660." On April 13, 1660, Allen was arrested "for endeavouring to debauch some of the soldiers from their duty" (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1657-1660, p. 573). On June 19, 1661, he was ordered to be released from the Gatehouse on giving security for £1,000 that he would leave the kingdom within fifteen days (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1661-1662, p. 12). I can find no later mention of him.]

---



## APPENDIX C.

A LETTER OF COL. RICHARD GREVIS TO SIR PHILIP  
STAPLETON.

[Though the name of Richard Graves, Greaves, or Grevis does not appear in the original list of the army under Essex, he served as colonel in his army from the winter after Edgehill (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1644-5, p. 464). He distinguished himself at the second battle of Newbury. In May, 1645, he commanded the cavalry in the detachment of the New Model sent by Fairfax to relieve Taunton (*ibid.* pp. 76, 488). On April 8, 1647, the House of Commons voted that his regiment should be one of those to be kept up (Rushworth, vi. 452). He belonged later to the Presbyterian section of the royalist party, and when Charles II. was in Scotland was one of the gentlemen of his bedchamber (*Clarendon State Papers*, ii., 491; Carte, *Original Letters*, ii., 29). Taken prisoner at the battle of Worcester he was for sometime a prisoner in the Tower, but released on bail during 1652 (*Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1651, pp. 422, 430; 1651-2, pp. 32, 114, 229).

The following letter written from Holmby a day or two before Joyce seized the King shows the state of feeling amongst the soldiers under the command of Greaves, who formed the King's guard.]

## COLONEL GREAVES TO SIR PHILIP STAPLETON.

Most honoured Sir,

I thought it necessarye to give you notice of the removal of mine and Sir Robert Pye's regiments by a late order, of which I have sent you a copy in the margent, by which it appeareth it is thought they have been too long under my command here-about and that by quartering them the nearer to the armye they may the better be wrought up to the now humour of it. I cannot indeed commend the greater number of them as they are at this present, but that they have been too readily infected with the taynt of disorder, meerly by that powerful persuasion that they shall obtayne the more money for it. Some there are I am certayne and not a few who will not forsake or disobey the Parliament upon any conditions. I pray God direct and counsell the Parliament to such a speedy course that they and all honest men may be drawne from such as have other villainous and destructive designs: in this I should account it my meat and drink to be instrumentall, and to be further



actually serviceable in these commands; and particularly as I am abundantly obliged to appeare more and more

Your constantly faithfull & obedient servant,

RICH. GREVIS.

I beseech you present me in my real honouring of Mr. Hollis and Sir Will Lewes.<sup>1</sup>

The order enclosed runs as follows :—

Sir,

By order for the Generall upon the advice of a Generall Councell of Warre you are forthwith to march with the regiment (saving that part of it which is assigned for the guardes about Holdenbye) to quarter in Papworth hundred in the Countye of Cambrige and immediately upon receipt hereof you are to send two men of the regiment to the head quarters at Bury in Suffolke for further orders by whome you are to give mee notice what time the regiment is like to come to the said quarters.

Your humble servant,

H. IRETON.

For Major Scroope or the chief officer present with Coll. Grevis his regiment of horse.

[This order, or rather, this copy of the order, is undated. A similar order of Quartermaster-General Gravener for moving a foot regiment is dated 30 May, and this must be of the same date (*Tanner MSS.*, lviii., p. 121). This fixes the date of the first letter, which is also undated.]

## APPENDIX D.

### A LIST OF THE AGITATORS ELECTED IN 1647.

[The following list is based on a loose paper amongst the Clarke MSS. The paper has unfortunately suffered greatly from damp, and is in some parts very difficult to read. I have supplemented it from the list of names appended to the printed declarations of

<sup>1</sup> *Tanner MSS.*, Bodleian Library, vol. lviii., f. 141





the agitators, and added where possible the Christian names of the persons mentioned. These additions are marked by brackets. This paper is headed: "A list of the Names of the [two] Commission Officers and two Soldiers of every regiment in the army intrusted for the several regiments according to the Engagement of the Army." It is dated October, 1647.

Of the Foot Regiments.

	The two Officers.	The two Soldiers.
Of the Generall's regiment.	Major [Francis] White. Capt. Lewis Audley.	[Edmund] Vaughan. ——— Wilkinson.
Major Generall's regiment. <sup>1</sup>		
Col. Rainborowe.	Capt. Flower. Lieut Shipley. <sup>2</sup>	Joseph Adams. Robert Gladman.
Sir H. Waller.	Capt. [John] Clarke. <sup>3</sup> Capt. [Richard] Hodden.	Robert Mason. Henry Anderton.
Col. Lambert.	Capt. [Matthew] Cadwell. Capt. Blewin. <sup>4</sup>	Rich. Colborue. John Miller.
Col. Hammond.	Capt. [Edmund] Rolfe. Capt. Wheeler.	Nath. Foxgill. Morgan Clarke.
Col. Lilburne.	Capt. [Abraham] Holmes. <sup>5</sup> Capt. [Richard] Deane. <sup>6</sup>	Jacob Somers. Robert Linsey.

<sup>1</sup> Skippon's regiment was quartered at Newcastle, and seems to have been represented solely by Major John Cobbet, v., p. 407.

<sup>2</sup> Should be Stephen Shipman.

<sup>3</sup> See pp. 32, 173, 180, 187, 280, 330, 339. In 1659 John Clarke was Colonel of a foot regiment in Ireland.

<sup>4</sup> "Blewin" should perhaps be "Blethen," as the name stands in another list.

<sup>5</sup> Captain, afterwards Major Holmes, was implicated in the Rye House plot, and executed in 1685 for his share in Monmouth's rising.

<sup>6</sup> Cousin of Richard Deane, the admiral.



	The two Officers.	The two Soldiers.
Col. Hughson.	Capt. [John] Carter.	Edmund Garne. <sup>1</sup>
	Capt. [Alexander] Brayfield. <sup>2</sup>	Richard Nixon.
Col. Barkstead. <sup>3</sup>	Capt. Young.	
Col. Pride.	Capt. [Waldine] Lagoe. <sup>4</sup>	Nic. Andrewes ?
	Capt. [John] Mason. <sup>5</sup>	Ralph Prentice. <sup>6</sup>
Col. Overton.	Capt. [William] Knolles.	Rich. Flower.
	Capt. [Edward] Orpin.	Stephen Combe.
The Trainee.	Commissary Cowling. <sup>7</sup>	
	[Commissary Thomas] Robinson. Tho. Mills.	
Col. Ingoldesby.	Capt. [Francis] Allen.	Rich. Johnson.
	Lt [Consolation] Fox.	John Radman. <sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Edmund Garner appears as a Lieutenant in Hewson's regiment in November, 1647.

<sup>2</sup> Lieutenant-Colonel Brayfield was cashiered by Henry Cromwell in Ireland in 1657 for sedition. Thurloe, vi., 505, 527, 549, 552, 563, 599; Ludlow, *Memoirs*, ed. 1751, p. 193.

<sup>3</sup> This was originally Colonel Fortescue's regiment; the greater part of it had volunteered for Ireland, hence, probably, its imperfect representation.

<sup>4</sup> Lieutenant-Colonel Lagoe was appointed Adjutant-General of the Irish Army in 1659.

<sup>5</sup> Lieutenant-Colonel John Mason presented the protest of the officers against kingship in 1657, (Ludlow, p. 224). Governor of Jersey in 1659. *Cal. State Papers, Dom.* 1658-9, p. 375.

<sup>6</sup> Prentice became an ensign in this regiment in November, 1647.

<sup>7</sup> Nicholas Cowley, or Cowling, see the book of *Army Declarations*, p. 71. Cowling is officially described as "Commissary-General of Victuals," and Robinson as "Commissary of the Draught-Horse. Peacock, *Army Lists*, pp. 101, 106.

<sup>8</sup> The principal instigator of the mutiny of Ingoldesby's regiment at Oxford in September, 1649. See *The Moderate*, September 11-18, 1649; and a paper in *Proceedings of the Oxford Architectural and Historical Society*, 1884.



## Regiments of Horse.

	The two Officers.	The two Soldiers.
The Generall's Regiment.	Lt. Empson. <sup>1</sup> Cornet [Peter] Wallis. <sup>2</sup>	Edw. Sexby. John Taylor.
Lt. General.	Capt. [Joseph] Wallington. Lt. [Edward] Scotton.	Will. Alleyne. Sam. Whiting. Rich. Kingdon.
Comm. General.	Capt. [Henry] Pretty. <sup>3</sup> Capt. [Robert] Kirkby.	John Wood. Tho. Shepheard.
Col. Fleetwood.	Capt. Lloyd. Capt.	Will. Somes. Edw. Twigge.
Col. Harrison.	Major [William] Rainborowe. Capt. Pecke.	Hen. Gittings. <sup>4</sup> Rich. Graunte.
Col. Whalley.	Capt. [Henry] Cannon. Lieut. [Edmund] Chillenden.	Timothy Thornborough. Will. Younge.
Col. Horton. <sup>5</sup>	Lieut. [Thomas] Ellis. Cornet [John] Phelpes.	Tobiah Box. John Willoughby.

<sup>1</sup> In letter clxii. in Carlyle's *Cromwell*, Oliver rebukes Colonel Hacker for styling Empson a better preacher than fighter. "He is a good man and a good officer," says Cromwell, "I would we had no worse." Earlier in the campaign in Scotland Empson had distinguished himself by rescuing Lambert when the latter was taken prisoner. *Ibid.*, letter cxxxv.

<sup>2</sup> Recommended as Colonel of the regiment late Henry Cromwell's in 1659. *Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1659-60, p. 13.

<sup>3</sup> Recommended as Colonel of a regiment of horse in Ireland. *Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1659-60, p. 13.

<sup>4</sup> Sometimes spelt Gethings. He was sentenced to death in February, 1648, for causing a mutiny in this regiment, but the sentence appears to have been remitted.

<sup>5</sup> Horton died in Ireland, in October, 1649. "He was a person of great integrity and courage," writes Cromwell, Letter cxii. On his services in 1648, see Phillips *Civil War in Wales*.



	The two Officers.	The two Soldiers.
Col. Scroope. <sup>1</sup>	Capt. Wolfe. Capt. Watson.	Rich [Salter]. George [Stenson].
Col. Thomlinson. <sup>2</sup>	Capt. Johnson. Capt. [Thomas] Rawlins. <sup>3</sup>	Barth. Willocke. Rich. Clarke.
Col. Rich.	Capt. [John] Merriman. <sup>4</sup> Capt. [William] Wear.	Nich. Lockier. Tho. Buttery.
Col. Okey.	Major [Daniel] Abbott. Capt. [Tobias] Bridge. <sup>5</sup>	Will. Hall. Will. Underwood.
The Life Guard	Capt. Michell.	
Col. Twistleton. <sup>6</sup>	Lt. Izod. <sup>7</sup> Lt. Sheirman.	John Wilson. John Wells.
Col. Thornhaugh. <sup>8</sup>	Capt. [George] Palmer. Capt. [Richard] Creed.	John Harte. Richard Farre.

<sup>1</sup> A life of Scroope is in Noble's *Lives of the Regicides*, 1798. He was executed October 17, 1660.

<sup>2</sup> Matthew Thomlinson, knighted by Henry Cromwell, sat as one of the king's judges, but did not sign the warrant, escaped at the restoration. See his petition 7th Report of *Hist. MSS. Comm.*, p. 123.

<sup>3</sup> Probably the Captain Rawlins recommended in Cromwell's letter of 4 June, 1645. See *Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1659-60, 12, 183, 189, 189, 198; also 1644-5, p. 53.

<sup>4</sup> On Merriman, see Rushworth, vii., 1051, 1361.

<sup>5</sup> Bridge was knighted at the Restoration, having adhered to Monck and taken part in the seizure of Dublin Castle (Ludlow, *Memoirs*, ed. 1751, pp. 298, 307). He had succeeded to the command of Okey's regiment in January, 1655, when Okey was cashiered.

<sup>6</sup> Late Colonel Rossiter's regiment, *Lords' Journals*, ix., 217.

<sup>7</sup> See *Cal. State Papers, Dom.*, 1659-60, pp. 299, 591.

<sup>8</sup> On Colonel Francis Thornhaugh, see the *Life of Colonel Hutchinson*. Thornhaugh was killed at Preston in 1648. This was a Nottingham regiment, and not one of the new-model regiments. Rushworth, vi., 623.





## APPENDIX E.

PROCEEDINGS IN THE COUNCIL OF THE ARMY BETWEEN NOV.  
3 AND NOV. 8, 1647.

Of the meetings which took place between Wednesday, Nov. 3, and Monday, Nov. 8, the Clarke papers unfortunately contain no record. Of Nov. 4 Rushworth says, "This day the council of the Army again sat at Putney and they considered of some alterations to be desired in the propositions of peace to be sent to his Majesty." The special work of the day seems to have been considering the propositions dealing with delinquents in relation to the late war (Rushworth, vii., 863). Of the debates of Friday, Nov. 5, and Saturday, Nov. 6, he simply observes, "The general council of the Army sat this day at Putney, and the general with them, and had much debate of the Heads of the Proposals before mentioned. They sat also again about the same on Saturday, but have not yet finished them" (*ibid.*, 864). Fairfax, who had been ill and was mentioned as absent on October 28, seems to have first returned to his place on Nov. 5. It is probable that Cromwell was absent attending to his duties in parliament. On Nov. 5 the Commons discussed the propositions to be sent to the King, which were that day reported to it from a committee of the two Houses appointed to give them their final form. A circular letter from the Agitators to their regiments says, "Our friends obtained a generall Rendezvous, and a Letter from the Councell to clear the Armie from any desire or intent of constraining the Parliament to send Propositions to the King."

"A Copy of a Letter sent by the Agents of severall Regiments of his Excellencie's Army (that are resolved to the last drop of their blood to stand for the Liberties and Freedoms of the people of England) to all the Souldiers in the said Armie."

The letter is referred to in the *Commons' Journals*, Nov. 6, 1647, but not given there or in the *Lords' Journals*. It ran thus :

Mr. Speaker,

Whereas it is generally reported that the House was enduced to make another address to the King, by Propositions, by reason it was represented to the House a-



the desire of the Army, From a tendernesse to the priviledges of parliamentary actings, this night the Generall Councell of the Army declared, that any such representation of their desires was together groundlesse ; and that they earnestly desire no such consideration may be admitted into the House's resolutions in that particular.

Signed by the appointment of the Generall  
Councell of the Army,

WILLIAM CLERKE,  
Secretary.

Putney, Novem. 5, 1647.

A newsletter in the Clarendon Papers, dated Nov.  $\frac{8}{15}$ , says : " Colonel Rainborough, at a council of war held at the headquarters, intimated that the army was not disposed to make any more addresses to the King, which produced the letter to the Speaker, now in print, to that effect, signed by William Clarke, dated the 5th of November from Putney. Ireton opposed the same all he could, and in testimony of his dissent left the council, protesting he could come no more there to be partaker of the high neglect and violation of reason and justice which he observed to reign amongst them. He hath been moved since to returr, but continues resolute." (*Clarendon State Papers II.*, Appendix xli.)

The letter of the Agitators does not expressly mention Ireton's presence at the debate of Nov. 5 and seems to place his withdrawal on Nov. 6. Speaking of the meeting on Monday, Nov. 8, they say " the day before Commissary Generall Ireton withdrew and protested he would act no more with them unless they recalled the letter."

Of the debates of Saturday, November 6, and Monday, November 8, the Agitators say :—

At the next meeting a *Declaration* was offered to the Councell, wherein the Kings corrupt interest was so intermixed, that in a short time, if he should so come in, he would be in a capacitie to destroy you, and the people. *Upon this wee desired onely a free debate of this Question ; Whether it were safe, either for the Armie, or the people, to suffer any power to be given to the King : and Lieutenant Generall Cromwell, and the rest, professed as before God, they would freely debate it ; and munday last, a Generall Councell was appointed for that purpose ; but when they met they wholly refused, and in stead of that spake very reproachfully*



of us and our Actions, and declared against that which was past the Councell before *Concerning the voyces of those in Election, which have not fortie shillings by the yeare free-hold, and against the Letter sent by the Councell to the Parliament.* and to prevent any further *debate, they would have dissolved the Councell for above a fortnight*; and thus our hopes of agreeing together to settle your and the peoples freedoms were then frustated, and though the chiefe of them had desired some of our friends, not above three dayes before, to goe on in their actings, *for they might come in when they should doe us more service then at that time*, yet then they made great outcries against us, and complaints of distempers in the Armie, which were nothing *but endeavours after their rights and freedoms.*

END OF VOL. I.



REPORT OF THE COUNCIL  
OF  
THE CAMDEN SOCIETY,

READ AT THE GENERAL MEETING

ON THE 2ND MAY, 1891.

---

The Council of the Camden Society elected on May 2, 1890, regret the loss by death of the following members:—

WILLIAM ALDAM, Esq.  
JOHN BIRKBECK, Esq.  
SIR WILLIAM R. DRAKE, Bart.  
CYRIL D. FORTESCUE, Esq.  
W. B. GLASSE, Esq., Q.C.  
O. de BEAUVOIR PRIAULX, Esq.  
JAMES RAE, Esq.  
J. ANDERSON ROSE, Esq.  
HENRY ROSS, Esq.

They also have to report the following accessions to the Society:—

THE DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND, K.G.  
JOHN BIRKBECK, Esq.  
J. HYDE, Esq.  
LESLIE KNIGHTS SMITH, Esq.  
SYDNEY UNIVERSITY LIBRARY.





## REPORT OF THE COUNCIL, 1891.

The books for the year 1890-91 have been—

1. Visitations and Memorials of Southwell Minster. Edited by A. F. LEACH, Esq., late Fellow of All Souls College, Oxford ; Assistant Charity Commissioner.

2. The Clarke Papers. Vol. I. Edited by C. H. FIRTH, Esq., M.A.

In the coming year the Council propose to issue—

1. The Nicholas Papers. Vol. II. To be edited by G. F. WARNER, Esq., M.A.

2. The Accounts of the Offices of the Monastery of Abingdon. To be edited by R. E. G. KIRK, Esq.

The first of these will throw light on the efforts of the Royalists to regain power during the Commonwealth and Protectorate. The second will add to our knowledge of Medieval economy.

The volume of the Accounts of Henry, Earl of Derby, which was to have been issued this year, has been unavoidably postponed, but the Council hope to be able to include it in the issue for 1892-3.

The Council wish specially to call the attention of Secretaries and other Officers of Libraries and Institutions which are members of the Camden Society to the proposed new law which authorises such Institutions to name a representative who shall be capable of being elected to sit in the Council. The members of the present Council are most anxious to strengthen their position in the manner thus indicated.

SAMUEL RAWSON GARDINER, *Director.*

JAMES GAIRDNER, *Secretary*



## BALANCE SHEET 1890-91.

WE, the Auditors appointed to audit the Accounts of the Camden Society, report to the Society, that the Treasurer has exhibited to us an Account of the Receipts and Expenditure from the 1st of April 1890 to the 31st of March 1891, and that we have examined the said accounts, with the vouchers relating thereto, and find the same to be correct and satisfactory.

And we further report that the following is an Abstract of the Receipts and Expenditure during the period we have mentioned :—

[illegible]

April 16, 1891.

GUY PYM.

JOHN W. HALES.



## Laws of the Camden Society,

As amended at the General Meeting, 2nd May, 1891.

---

I. That the Society shall be entitled "THE CAMDEN SOCIETY, for the Publication of Early Historical and Literary Remains."

II. That the objects of the Society shall be, First, the publication of inedited Manuscripts ; Second, the reprinting of Works of sufficient rarity and importance to make Reprints desirable ; and Third, the publication of Translations of Historical Works not previously rendered into English.

III. That the Society shall consist of Subscribers of One Pound annually, who shall have been elected by the Council ; such Subscription to be paid in advance, on or before the first day of May in every year.

IV. That the management of the affairs of the Society shall be vested in a President and a Council consisting of fifteen Members, which President and Council shall be elected annually by the Society at large, at a General Meeting to be held on the 2nd day of May, being the Anniversary of Camden's birth ; or on the Monday following when the 2nd day of May shall happen to fall upon a Sunday.

V. That the President and Council shall, from amongst their own body, elect a Director, who shall act as Chairman of the Council in the absence of the President, and also a Treasurer and a Secretary.



VI. That the Accounts of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Society shall be audited annually by at least two out of three Auditors to be elected at the General Meetings, and that the Report of the Auditors, with an Abstract of the Accounts, shall be published.

VII. That the names of Members proposed to be elected as President, Council, and Auditors shall be transmitted by the proposers to the Secretary one fortnight before the General Meeting, and that notice of the persons so proposed shall be forwarded by the Secretary, one week before the General Meeting, to all the Members residing in the United Kingdom.

VIII. That any Library or Society subscribing One Pound annually to the Funds of this Society may appoint a Representative who shall be entitled to take part in the Proceedings at Annual Meetings and be eligible for the Council.

IX. That no Member shall be entitled to vote at any General Meeting whose subscription is in arrear.

X. That in every year one-fifth in number of the Council of the year preceding shall be ineligible for re-election ; and that the retiring Members shall be selected from those who have attended fewest Meetings of the Council during the year.

XI. That in the absence of the President and Director, the Council at their Meetings shall elect a Chairman, who shall have a casting vote in case of equality of numbers, and shall also retain his right to vote upon all questions submitted to the Council.

XII. That the Funds of the Society shall be disbursed in payment of necessary expenses incident to the production of the Works of the Society, and that all other expenses shall be avoided as much as possible.

XIII. That every Member not in arrear of his Annual Subscription shall be entitled to One Copy of every Work published by the Society during that year.





XIV. That the Members shall be invited to contribute or recommend Works for publication.

XV. That Editors of Works printed by the Society shall be entitled to Twenty Copies of the Works they edit.

XVI. That the Council shall determine what number of copies of each work shall be printed, and that the copies over and above those required by the Members shall be sold, in such manner and at such prices as shall be fixed by the Council, the proceeds being carried to the account of the Society.

XVII. That the Publications of the Society shall all form separate and distinct Works, without any other connection than that which must necessarily exist between the volumes of such Works as consist of several volumes.

XVIII. That any Member of the Society may at any time compound for his future Annual Subscriptions by payment of £10 over and above his Subscription for the current year.

XIX. That every Member of the Society who shall intimate to the Council his desire to withdraw from the same, or who shall not pay his Subscription for the current year within Three Months after his Election, or after such Subscription shall have become due, shall thereupon cease to be a Member of the Society.

XX. That no alteration shall be made in these Laws, except at a General Meeting, nor then unless One Month's notice of any alteration intended to be proposed at such Meeting shall have been given in writing to the Secretary.

4681







